



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2007 with funding from  
Microsoft Corporation









†  
1

The Two Noble Kinsmen.

BY

WILLIAM SHAKSPERE AND JOHN FLETCHER.



New Shakspere Society  
[Publications]  
Series 2. Plays  
No. 15

THE  
TWO NOBLE KINSMEN.

BY  
WILLIAM SHAKSPERE AND JOHN FLETCHER.

---

Edited from the Quarto of 1634

BY  
HAROLD LITTLEDALE, B.A.

---

PART II.

GENERAL INTRODUCTION AND LIST OF WORDS.

---

PUBLISHT FOR  
The New Shakspere Society  
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57, 59, LUDGATE HILL,  
LONDON, E.C., 1885.

35208  
12/9/94

PR  
2888  
L6  
ser. 2  
no. 15

Series II. No. 15.

---

CLAY AND TAYLOR, THE CHAUCER PRESS, BUNGAY.

5

DEDICATED  
TO MY WIFE.

H. L.






# CONTENTS.

*Parts one and two of this Revised Edition, and the Quarto Reprint, may be arranged in the following A B C order for binding in one volume :—*

## A. PART II.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION ... ..	9*—82*
CONCORDANCE ... ..	83*— *

## B. QUARTO REPRINT.

BIBLIOGRAPHY ... ..	i—xiii
 (Table of Abbreviations, p. xiii.)	
1634 QUARTO REPRINT ... ..	1—89
1679 FOLIO COLLATION ... ..	91—107

## C. PART I.

REVISED TEXT ... ..	1—106
(With various readings at foot.)	
NOTES ... ..	107—170
INDEX TO NOTES ... ..	171—173

*But, inasmuch as the Revised Edition may have to be frequently compared with the Quarto Reprint, Members are strongly advised to bind that by itself, apart from the Introduction and Revised Text. To bind them together, is to quarter the usefulness of each.*



## INTRODUCTION.

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <p>§ 1. <i>Sources of the Play</i>, p. 9*.<br/>         § 9. <i>Authorship</i>, p. 12*.<br/>         § 14. <i>External Evidence</i>, p. 14*.<br/>         § 18. <i>Internal Evidence</i>, p. 18*.<br/>         § 19. <i>Metrical Tests</i>, p. 18*.<br/>         § 27. <i>Characterization</i>, p. 23*.<br/>         § 37. <i>Style of thought and imagery</i>,<br/>               p. 27*.</p> | <p>§§ 42—67. <i>Analysis, scene by scene</i>,<br/>               p. 30*—68*.<br/>         § 68. <i>Date of Composition</i>, p. 68*.<br/>         §§ 69—113. <i>History of Opinion</i>, p. 69*<br/>               —81*.<br/>         § 114. <i>Thanks</i>, p. 81*.<br/>         § 115. <i>Retrospect</i>, p. 81*.</p> |
|--|--|

§ 1. THE source of this play is the *Knights Tale*, in Chaucer's Sources of the play. *Canterbury Tales*; and a comparison of play and poem will show how closely the original story has been adhered to in the structure of the main plot. Unlike many of the plays which Shakspeare Chaucer. produced, we have no evidence, beyond the vaguest conjecture, to suggest that this play has been based on an earlier drama on the same subject.

§ 2. We know that in 1566 a play called *Palæmon and Arcyte*, Edwardes's Palæmon and Arcyte. by Richard Edwardes, was performed before Queen Elizabeth at Oxford; but certain indications make it quite clear, though this play has perished, that it can have had little likeness to the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, and may rather have resembled the *Damon and Pythias* (see Hazlitt's *Dodsley*, vol. iv.) of the same author.

§ 3. Wood's account in the *Athenæ Oxonienses* has mention of the play several times, but the following passages,<sup>1</sup> Wood mentions Edwardes's play several times. communicated to Nicholls, the historian of Elizabeth's Progresses, by Mr. Gutch, from Wood's MSS., are more detailed, and clearly show that Edwardes's play and the play before us must have differed so materially as to make it almost certain that the authors of the latter

<sup>1</sup> Previously pointed out by me in Introduction, *Leopold Shakspeare*, p. xcix.

Wood's chief  
account of play  
of 1566 quoted.

can have known nothing of the former. "Sept. 2, 1566. At night the Queen heard the first part of an English play, named *Palæmon*, or *Palamon Arcyte*, made by Mr. Richard Edwards, a gentleman of her chapel, acted with very great applause in Christ Church Hall/ At the beginning of which play, there was, by part of the stage which fell, three persons slain; namely, Walker, a scholar of St. Mary Hall; one Penrice, a Brewer, and John Gilbert, Cook of Corpus Christi College, beside five that were hurt: which disaster coming to the Queen's knowledge, she sent forthwith the Vice-chancellor and her Chirurgeons to help them, and to have a care that they want nothing for their recovery. Afterwards the actors performed their parts so well, that the Queen laughed heartily thereat, and gave the author of the play great thanks for his pains. (p. 210—11.) . . . Sept. 4, 1566. At night the Queen was present at the other part of the play of *Palæmon and Arcyte*, which should have been acted the night before, but deferred because it was late when the Queen came from disputations at St. Mary's. When the play was ended, she called for Mr. Edwards, the author, and gave him very great thanks, with promises of reward, for his pains; then, making a pause, said to him and her retinue standing about her, this relating to part of the play: 'By Palæmon, I warrant he dallieth not in love when he was in love indeed; by Arcyte, he was a right martial knight, having a swart countenance<sup>1</sup> and a manly face; by Trecatio, God's pity, what a knave it is; by Perithous, throwing St. Edward's rich cloak into the funeral fire, which a stander-by would have stayed by the arm with an oath, Go fool, he knoweth his part, I warrant.' In the said play was acted a cry of hounds in the Quadrant, upon the train of a fox in the hunting of Theseus, with which the young scholars, who stood in the windows, were so much taken (supposing it was real), that they cried out, 'Now, now!—there, there!—he's caught, he's caught!' All which the Queen merrily beholding, said, 'O excellent! these boys, in very troth, are ready to leap out of the windows, to follow the hounds!' This part it seems, being repeated before certain courtiers, in the lodgings of Mr. Robert Marbeck, one of the Canons of Christ Church, by the

Elizabeth's  
criticisms.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Two Noble Kinsmen*, IV. ii. 44: Arcite is "a mere gipsy."

players in their gowns (for they were all Scholars that acted), before the Queen came to Oxford, was by them so well liked, that they said it far surpassed *Damon and Pythias*, than which, they thought, nothing could be better. Likewise some said, that if the author did any more before his death, he would run mad: but this comedy was the last he made, for he died within a few months after. In the acting of the said play, there was a good part performed by the Lady Amelia, who, for gathering her flowers prettily in a garden then represented, and singing sweetly in the time of March [? May], received eight angels for a gracious reward by her Majesty's command. By whom that part was acted I know not, unless by Peter Carew, the pretty boy before mentioned." (pp. 212—13.)<sup>1</sup>

§ 4. I have given this curious extract in full. Surely it eliminates the Oxford play of 1566 from the possible sources of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*? Play of 1566 not a 'source.'

§ 5. And the evidence seems equally explicit on the remaining hypothetical source of this play: a piece called *Palamon and Arsett*, which, we learn from Henslowe's *Diary* (pp. 41, 43, 44, ed. Shakespeare Soc.), was "acted several times at the Newington theatre in 1594. Mr. Collier conjectures that the last-mentioned piece may have been a rifacimento of Edwards's play, and that in 1594 Shakespeare may have introduced into *Palamon and Arsett* those alterations and additions which afterwards 'were employed by Fletcher in the play as it was printed in 1634.' But I suspect," continues Mr. Dyce,<sup>2</sup> "that the *Palamon and Arsett* of 1594 was a distinct piece from the academical drama of 1566; and I cannot persuade myself that the 'Shakespearian' portions of the *Two Noble Kinsmen* were composed so early as 1594—stamped as they everywhere are with the manner of Shakespeare's later years." Collier's theory answered by Dyce.

<sup>1</sup> Nicholls, *Progr. of Eliz.*, new edit., 1823, pp. 210—13; old edit., vol. iii. pp. 110—112; see Furnivall's *Harrison*, p. liv.

<sup>2</sup> Shakespeare, vol. viii. p. 118, ed. 1876. These are strong words from Mr. Dyce, who previously, in the preface to Aldine edition of Shakspeare's poems (p. xliii, note 65), said: "The title-page of the first edition of Fletcher's *Two Noble Kinsmen* attributes the play partly to Shakespeare; I do not think our poet had any share in its composition: but I must add, that Mr. C. Lamb (a great authority in such matters) inclines to a different opinion."



1594 play lost:  
probably not a  
'source.'

No hint of  
underplot in  
Chaucer.

§ 6. As this play of 1594 has perished, I am unable to say how far our play resembles it, or to conjecture that from it the authors derived the underplot; they have certainly no hint of it in Chaucer, who (*Knights Tale*, ll. 609—616) says:—

“soone aftur the mydnyght, Palamoun  
By helpyng of a freend brak his prisoun,  
And fleeth the cite fast as he may goo,  
For he hade yive drink his gayler soo  
Of a clarre, maad of a certeyn wyn,  
With nercotykes and opye of Thebes fyn,  
That al that night though that men wolde him schake,  
The gayler sleep, he mighte nought awake.”

But we have the strongest grounds for supposing that our play was a new play, based directly on the *Knights Tale*.

Prologue tells us  
plainly that this  
is a new play,

based on  
Chaucer.

§ 7. In the Prologue (l. 1) it is called a new play; the writer (Fletcher, who takes the responsibility for the whole play) confesses his inability to do justice to the story (l. 24); he distinctly ascribes the piece to Chaucer's Tale (ll. 10—14); he is in dread for having presumed to dramatize Chaucer (ll. 15, 16, 19, 20); and he emphatically repeats his declaration of the source in the Epilogue (ll. 12, 13): “*the tale we have told—for 't is no other.*”

This also Mr.  
Skeat's view.

§ 8. Mr. Skeat has taken the same view of the source. He says: “We may feel sure that the authors of the *Two Noble Kinsmen* followed Chaucer, as they professed to do, without troubling themselves with examining these earlier plays.”

Therefore the  
underplot not  
derived from  
preceding play  
or poem.

The very simplicity of the underplot is an argument for its origination by Shakspeare, for he never invented a complex plot, while its poverty and dullness must be ascribed to the fact that he only gave the merest fragmentary outline of it, which Fletcher took up and perverted and spoiled. How different it would have been had Shakspeare worked out the underplot he had designed, I cannot say, but I can well imagine.

Authorship of  
the *Two Noble  
Kinsmen*.

§ 9. A strong case of presumptive proof has been made out in favour of the opinion that Shakspeare commenced the play, wrote some scenes, outlined others, and left the imperfect draft for Fletcher to complete.

Assumptions.

§ 10. Two preliminary considerations may be taken for granted:

(a) that two authors are discernible in the play; (b) that Fletcher is one of them. The problem is therefore to ascertain who was the other author, and what was his share in the production. The problem to be solved.

This involves an examination of the whole play, since to assume that certain scenes are by Fletcher, and therefore not in dispute, would obscure an important question, namely, How far has Shakspeare *outlined* the Fletcherian portions? For from showing that Fletcher's work is to be seen overlaying Shakspeare's (as in Act V.), I hope to be able to leave the inference clear that it was Shakspeare who sketched the play; and this being so, it will be necessary to suppose him to have drafted some slight narrative outline of the whole piece (thus indicating the main tenor of the underplot, though without necessarily descending to particulars), unless we prefer to imagine that he produced the last scenes of the play "before he had worked out the characterization which would essentially determine the details of the event."<sup>1</sup> Shakspeare the sketcher, Fletcher the padder, of the piece.

§ 11. From an examination of each scene I shall conclude that Shakspeare, having decided on dramatizing Chaucer's story, wrote Act I. (except perhaps parts of sc. i. ll. 1—37, parts of sc. ii., and all sc. v.); wrote Act II. sc. i. (*i. e.* the prose scene); perhaps supplied a few additional notes for this act, including some indications for the underplot which Fletcher expanded into sc. iv. and sc. vi.; wrote most of Act III. sc. i.; wrote sc. ii.;<sup>2</sup> wrote nearly all of Act IV. sc. iii.; wrote all except ll. 1—17 of Act V. sc. i.; wrote part of sc. iii., and all except ll. 86—98 of sc. iv. Results of the following inquiry stated.

Fletcher, who was thus left the main events of the *Knights Tale* for dramatization, devised the "trash" of the underplot, and filled in the remaining portions of the play.

§ 12. It is by no means improbable that Beaumont has lent Fletcher a hand in some scenes; parts of Act I. sc. ii., and Act V. sc. iii. (ll. 41—66) may have been touched by him, but this is too uncertain and conjectural to merit more than passing suggestion. We know that Beaumont's "judgment" was popularly supposed Had Beaumont any share?

<sup>1</sup> C. Knight, *Studies of Shakspeare*, p. 441.

<sup>2</sup> This scene has probably been touched here and there by Fletcher.

14\* § 13. TABLE OF SH.'S AND FLETCHER'S SHARES IN THE PLAY.

to temper and restrain Fletcher's "wit;" certainly it has done so, if at all, with very little effect here.<sup>1</sup>

Fletcher wrote the Prologue and Epilogue.

My division  
compared with  
those of other  
critics.

§ 13. To enable the reader to compare my division with those of other critics of the play, I subjoin a table, based on that given in the *Leopold Shakspeare*, Introd., p. xcvi.

Act	Scene	SHAKSPERE.	FLETCHER.
I.	i.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson (Bridal Song not SH.'s, Dowden, Nicholson, L. ?, Hargrove, Furnivall).	
"	ii.	Weber, Spalding (SH. revised by FL., Dyce, Skeat, Swinburne, L.).	(SH. and FL., or FL. revised by SH., Hickson.)
"	iii, iv.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson, Lamb, L.	
"	v.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce (? SH., Hickson).	L.
II.	i. <sup>2</sup> (prose)	Hickson, Coleridge, L.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce.
"	ii, iii, iv, } v, vi. }		{ Weber, Spalding, Dyce, { Hickson, L.
III.	i.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson (mostly SH., L.).	
"	ii.	Hickson (not FL., Furnivall; SH. touched by FL., L.).	Weber, Spalding, Dyce.
"	iii, iv, } v, vi. }		{ Weber, Spalding, Dyce, { Hickson, L.
IV.	i, ii.		Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson, L.
"	iii.	Weber, Hickson (partly SH. interpolated by FL., L.).	Spalding, Dyce.
V.	i. <sup>2</sup>	Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson, De Quincey (SH. except ll. 1—17, Skeat, L.).	
"	ii.		Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson, L., &c.
"	iii, iv.	Weber, Spalding, Dyce, Hickson (SH. with FL. interpolations, L.; sc. iv., FL. interpolations, Swinburne).	

The external  
evidence.

§ 14. The external evidence of Shakspeare's part-authorship has been stated at length by Spalding, and need therefore only be given in a condensed form here.

<sup>1</sup> See William Cartwright's two sets of verses, prefixed to *Works of B. & F.*, and cf. *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. i. p. 83.

<sup>2</sup> Weber's division is different: see my notes. He makes Act II. sc. i. and sc. ii. into one scene, and Act V. sc. i. into three scenes.



The title-page of the Quarto, 1634, is the earliest notice that we have of this play and of its authorship:—

THE  
TWO  
NOBLE  
KINSMEN:

Presented at the Blackfriars  
by the Kings Maiesties servants,  
with great applause:

Written by the memorable Worthies  
of their time;

{ Mr. *John Fletcher*, and  
{ Mr. *William Shakspeare*. } Gent.

[ — Device — ]

Printed at *London* by *Tho. Cotes*, for *John Waterson*:  
and are to be sold at the signe of the *Crowne*  
in *Pauls Church-yard*. 1634.

§ 15. This statement is perfectly explicit, and the chief external arguments against its acceptance are four in number. They are as follows:—

Four cardinal  
objections to  
title-page.

I. Shakspeare's name helped to sell a book, and was prefixed to other Quarto plays known to be certainly not his.

II. The editors of the First Folio (1623) have omitted this play from their list and edition, and they profess to have given every one of his plays.

III. We have no evidence that Shakspeare collaborated with any one; he certainly did not with Fletcher.

IV. The statement on the title-page is unsupported by other evidence.

That is putting, as strongly as I am able, the case on external grounds *against* the Quarto title-page.

Replies to these  
objections.

§ 16. Replying *seriatim* to these objections:—

1. Shakspeare's  
popularity had  
declined.

I. Though the *Centurie of Prayse* has shown that Shakspeare was not quite so "forgotten" in 1634 as Spalding considered, still Fletcher's popularity was fully as great as, if not greater than, his. For a small instance of this we may note that Fletcher's name is placed before Shakspeare's on the title-page in question; and certainly there was not in 1634 that motive of the popularity of Shakspeare's name which was a true and sufficient explanation of the false ascription of plays to him during his lifetime.

Fletcher's plays were not published till 1647, when there were no longer theatres for their representation; Shakspeare's, on the contrary, were printed in 1623, a fact which tells, if anything, against the opinion that his "old-fashioned wit" held the stage for long after his death; as the other fact tells in favour of Fletcher's continued popularity.<sup>1</sup>

2. Omission from  
Folio not  
decisive.

II. This is the strongest objection of an external kind, but Spalding has completely refuted it by showing that the main object of the editors of the Folio (1623) was a commercial one—to discredit some fifteen pirated quarto editions; and that, so far from being the conscientious and disinterested collectors of their friend's plays which they professed to be, they really printed from such copies as first came to hand; in some cases even from those very quartos they were striving to discredit.

Spalding's  
exposure of the  
editors of F<sup>1</sup>.

Despite their protest in the preface, every page of the Folio (1623) is a testimony that no editorial care was given to the work. The editors have admitted into the collection two plays of which Shakspeare hardly wrote a dozen lines, viz., the *first* part of *King Henry VI.* and *Titus Andronicus*, and have omitted one of which he certainly wrote a good deal, *Pericles*.

After all their protestations, *Troilus and Cressida* is not in their table of contents, and is only inserted in some copies of the Folio, with separate paging like an independent work.<sup>2</sup> Hence, Spalding

<sup>1</sup> See *The Centurie of Prayse*, 2nd ed., pp. 270, 271, N. S. S., 1879; and Spalding's *Letter*, ed. F. J. Furnivall (N. S. S.), p. 113.

<sup>2</sup> See Stokes, *Chronological Order of Shakspeare's Plays*, pp. 132, 134, on this subject.

In the Folio (1623) *Troilus* is inserted after *Henry VIII.*, between the

argues, the editors either did not take the trouble, or were unable, to procure copies of these plays; but they made no acknowledgment of the omissions in their preface; on the contrary, took credit for the great care they professed to have exerted, which, with this *Troilus* episode, is more than enough to establish their untrustworthiness.

As Pavier the publisher may have had some right or property in *Pericles* which kept it out of the Folio, so Fletcher (*v. Prol.*, l. 19) may have had some claim on the *Two Noble Kinsmen* (though his share in *Henry VIII.* suggests a slight difficulty here) which prevented its publication until after his death (in 1625).

Had Fletcher the copyright?

The second Folio (1632) being merely a revised reprint of the first (with commendatory verses only additional), its omission of our play is not evidence against Shakspeare's authorship. On the contrary (I think), the appearance of the *Two Noble Kinsmen* in quarto, within two years of the publication of the second Folio, rather suggests that it was so published because it had once more been improperly omitted from the collection of Shakspeare's plays; a view which gathers strength from the fact that the same publisher, T. Cotes (whose firm had been "concerned in the bringing out of F2, 1632"<sup>1</sup>), brought out a (sixth) quarto of *Pericles*, another excluded play, in the following year (1635).

Second Folio no evidence, being only a reprint of F1.

III. This third objection may have had some force in the last century, but it has none now. For, not to mention *Pericles*, *Timon*, and other plays, and the fact that Fletcher wrote oftener with another than by himself, Mr. Spedding has shown, so as to satisfy the best English judges of Fletcher's style,<sup>2</sup> that Shakspeare left

3. Shakspeare has collaborated with others, as witness *Pericles*, *Timon*,

Histories and the Tragedies. The last page of *Henry VIII.* is No. 232, and *Troilus* is paged, blank (prologue), blank, 79, 80, and then blanks to end. Then follows p. 1 of *Coriolanus*.

Mr. Fleay is mistaken in saying (Stokes, p. 132) that *Troilus* is "paged 79 and 80 in its second and third pages;" counting the prologue, it is paged 79 and 80 on its third and fourth pages, and therefore does not follow *Romeo* so exactly as Mr. Fleay concluded. See Booth's reprint, p. 569.

<sup>1</sup> See Stokes, *Chronol. Ord.*, p. 194.

<sup>2</sup> Except Mr. Swinburne, than whom "few can have studied [Fletcher] more thoroughly."—(p. 83 of) *A Study of Shakspeare*, pp. 82—102; *Fortnightly Review*,

18\* § 17-19. INTERNAL EVIDENCE OF SH.'S PART-AUTHORSHIP.

and (with  
Fletcher)  
*Henry VIII.*

*History of  
Cardenio* (lost).

4. No early  
denial of  
Shakspeare's  
claim.

Langbaine.

*Henry VIII.* unfinished, and that Fletcher completed the drama, retouching the Shaksperian portions; and, furthermore, there is a tradition that a lost play, the *History of Cardenio* (? from Don Quixote), was written by Shakspeare and Fletcher (v. Darley, *Introd.*, B. & F., p. xxii).

IV. That the authority of the title-page is unsupported by other evidence. If there is no external confirmation, at least there is no contradiction of the statement. The next known indication of the authorship does not appear till 1691, when Langbaine (*English Dramatick Poets*, p. 215) gave the authorship as he found it on the quarto title-page, which so well-informed a writer would not have done had he known any reason for doubting the accuracy of his statement.

Played by  
Shakspeare's  
company.

§ 17. And some little presumptive support of Shakspeare's claim may be found in the fact that the play was acted at the Blackfriars by his Majesty's servants: at Shakspeare's theatre by Shakspeare's company of actors.

This leads to a further consideration: the internal evidence.

Internal evidence  
threefold.

§ 18. The internal evidence of Shakspeare's part-authorship is threefold:—metrical similarities, artistic handling (regardful of character and motives rather than situations and scenic effects), and style of thought and imagery.

Metrical  
evidence proves  
Fletcher's claim  
to a share.

§ 19. The metrical evidence is conclusive of two things already assumed. It clearly divides the verse-scenes between two distinct and dissimilar styles of versification, and shows that one part agrees absolutely with the known metrical peculiarities of Fletcher.

With regard to the remaining portion of the play, the metrical

Jan. 1st, 1876. Mr. Swinburne seems to approve of F.-V. Hugo's theory of *Henry VIII.*, which regarded "the main part of the fifth act as the work of a mere court laureate" (p. 96); but names no one as the probable author, though he thinks that "the style of the last scene savours now and then, and for some time together [italicised words not in *Fortnightly* article], more strongly than ever of Fletcher's most especial and distinctive qualities," and that "the whole structure of the play, if judged by any strict rule of pure art, is incomposite and incongruous, wanting in unity, consistency, and coherency of interest."

A reviewer of Mr. Swinburne's *Study* in the *Spectator*, p. 852, July 3rd, 1880, says that Mr. S.'s "remarks strike us as conclusive" against Prof. Dowden's opinion that the death-scene of Katherine is by Fletcher.



characteristics coincide *in all respects*<sup>1</sup> with those of Shakspeare's fourth-period plays—a family likeness which cannot be found to exist between this portion and the extant works of any other known dramatist of the period.<sup>2</sup>

Metre of non-Fletcher part coincides with the metrical peculiarities of Shakspeare only.

§ 20. This elimination of all the known Elizabethan dramatists except Shakspeare on the ground of marked metrical idiosyncrasies gives no slight presumption in favour of the statement on the Quarto title-page. It would be carrying conjecture too far to suppose not only that the author of the finest scenes of this play was some anonymous genius, but also that he alone of all the writers of the time could catch the trick of Shakspeare's style so deftly as it has here been caught. If we have to choose between two improbabilities, surely the inference that Shakspeare wrote these lines is far more rational than Professor Delius's hypothesis of "Der Anonymus" who could write blank verse as well as the author of the *Winter's Tale*?

If not Shakspeare, who wrote it?

No anonymous writer could write such verse.

If the author be anonymous, no other remnants of his work exist.

§ 21. Four metrical tests admitting of tabulation have been applied to this play. One, the rhyme test, though very useful in determining the relative lateness or earliness of plays in the whole series of Shakspeare's works, is not one which throws any light upon the question of authorship, except in so far as the neglect of rhyme may be regarded as specially characteristic of Shakspeare. Rhymes only occur in those parts of the play which are here assigned to Fletcher. There is not one rhyming couplet in the certainly non-Fletcherian portion.

Four chief metrical tests.

1. Rhyme-test; only gives negative evidence here.

Absence of rhyme is a characteristic of Shakspeare's latest plays.

§ 22. Next comes the 'light- and weak-ending' test, a most trustworthy witness of lateness of composition, and an index of a truly Shaksperian peculiarity.

2. 'Light- and weak-ending' test;

It has been worked out with great precision by Dr. J. K. Ingram in his paper printed in the *Transactions* of this Society for 1874, part ii. p. 422.

At the time when this test was first applied (1874) there was no line-numbered text of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, so Dr. Ingram

<sup>1</sup> Numerically the variation can only be defined by decimals.

<sup>2</sup> *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. ii. p. 454.

had to use a literal transcript of the Qo 1634 which I had made for working purposes.

worked by Dr.  
Ingram,

According to the Qo text, Dr. Ingram found in the Shakspeare part (Act I. scs. i., ii., iii., iv. ; Act III. scs. i., ii. ; Act V. scs. i., iii., iv.) 50 light and 34 weak endings, and in the Fletcher part (Act II. sc. iv. ; Act III. scs. iii., v., vi.) 3 light endings and 1 weak ending.

verified by me.

I have applied this test with a better text ('Leopold' Sh.), and, subdividing the play in the same way, have found Dr. Ingram's figures to be without error of any kind.

This confirmation is not weakened by the fact that I have added three examples to the Shaksperian table ; I have done so only tentatively, and I am quite ready to admit that these are not true examples if Dr. Ingram questions them.

Act III. sc. ii.

With regard to Act III. sc. ii., a word of explanation is necessary. I believe it to have been written by Shakspeare, but slightly retouched by Fletcher. I have therefore given it in the Shakspeare tables, although its ratio of 'stopt-lines' would assign it to Fletcher.

Position assigned  
by this test to  
*Two Noble  
Kinsmen*

By the 'light-and weak-ending' test the Shakspeare part of this play is placed between *Winter's Tale* and *Henry VIII.*, and therefore next that other play which Shakspeare on his retirement left for Fletcher to complete.

confirms other  
indications of  
style and metre.

This position corresponds with that assigned by the other indications of metre and style, the Shaksperian scenes being everywhere stamped "with the manner of Shakspeare's later years" (Dyce).

Summary of test.

#### SUMMARY OF 'LIGHT- AND WEAK-ENDING' TEST.

SHAKSPEARE PART.		
Total	DR. J. K. INGRAM.	H. LITLEDALE.
'Light Endings'	50	52
'Weak Endings'	34	35
FLETCHER PART.		
'Light Endings'	3	3
'Weak Endings'	1	1 (?)

List of 'light  
and weak  
endings' in *Two  
Noble Kinsmen*.

§ 23. Particulars follow. 'Weak endings' *italicised*. Asterisked words (\*) not in Dr. Ingram's list.

## SHAKSPERE PART.

I. i. 83 into	I. iii. 39 have	V. i. 118 am*
89 <i>for</i>	79 <i>in</i> *	123 <i>in</i>
106 was	81 be	127 which
121 were	91 you	133 unto
132 <i>than</i>	I. iv. 2 may	152 should
176 shall	19 <i>with</i>	153 I
177 when	23 thou	156 should
183 will	24 <i>that</i>	161 may
184 <i>and</i>	25 be	V. iii. 5 like
185 what	27 <i>if</i>	8 is
202 which	28 <i>that</i>	22 was
212 <i>with</i>	40 art	47 <i>to</i>
228 <i>for</i>	44 such	53 <i>that</i>
I. ii. 2 <i>in</i>	45 <i>in</i>	58 <i>to</i>
21 would	47 <i>to</i>	62 might
27 <i>in</i>	54 <i>that</i>	69 is*
41 <i>and</i>	70 <i>to</i>	82 <i>and</i>
43 <i>to</i>	85 <i>and</i>	83 are
46 upon	93 <i>for</i>	97 could
57 am	122 till	110 <i>with</i>
85 when	III. ii. 7 so	119 was
87 <i>to</i>	16 can	129 did
108 which	V. i. 29 where	V. iv. 22 shall
112 will	39 <i>and</i>	44 when
I. iii. 8 they	69 be	75 <i>that</i>
13 <i>and</i>	90 thou	83 <i>for</i>
22 <i>if</i>	97 I	103 <i>and</i>
23 we	108 who	117 <i>and</i>
30 <i>but</i>	116 I	125 unto

## FLETCHER PART.

II. v. 54 what	III. v. 44 would
III. iii. 32 <i>and</i> (? H. L.)	III. vi. 98 be

§ 24. I next give tables of those two most important tests, the 'stopt-line' test and the 'double-ending' test. And I have to ask particular attention to the fact that, the division of the scenes between the two authors having been made originally before any systematic application of tests had taken place, these tests are now found to confirm that apportionment made primarily upon æsthetic grounds.

3. 'Stopt-line and  
4. 'Double-ending' tests

similarly confirm  
critical division  
of the play.

My figures do not always coincide with Mr. Furnivall's; however, the divergences are not in any case productive of contradiction.<sup>1</sup>

I have already noted the 'stopt-line' peculiarities of Act III. sc. ii.

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Ingram (*N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. ii. p. 455) having pointed out Mr. Furnivall's error (caused by using Weber's text) in counting II. ii. as Shakspeare's, and in thinking that the test must be at fault, I need not further refer to it. Dyce makes the same mistake, *Sh.*, vol. viii. p. 117, ed. 1876.

22\* § 25-6. TABLE OF STOPT-LINE AND WEAK-ENDING TESTS.

'Stopt-line' ratios.

Leaving this scene out of consideration, the Shaksperian proportion of 'unstopt' to 'stopt' lines is never above 1 : 2; the Fletcherian never below that. Any line with a point or pause marked by type in the text ('Leopold') has been considered a 'stopt-line.'

Minor tests.

§ 25. There are minor tests, as the 'four-measure line' test, which Mr. Fleay has worked out, but their results are too indefinite and variable to be trusted.<sup>1</sup>

Tabulation of 'stopt-line' and 'double-ending' tests.

§ 26. For greater convenience of comparison, I have tabulated the 'stopt-line' and 'double-ending' tests together.

SHAKSPEARE PART.

Act.	Scene.	Number of Lines.	Double endings.	Ratio of double-ended to normal lines.	Unstopt lines.	Ratio of unstopt to stopt lines.	Remarks.
I.	i.	210	49	1 to 4'28	106	1 to 1'98	touches by F.
	ii.	116	35	1,, 3'31	75	1,, 1'54	touches by F?
	iii.	97	39	1,, 2'48	60	1,, 1'61	
	iv.	49	13	1,, 3'76	26	1,, 1'88	
II.	i.	...	...	...	...	...	prose.
III.	i.	123	33	1,, 3'72	74	1,, 1'66	
	ii.	38	10	1,, 3'80	11	1,, 3'45	touches by F.
IV.	iii.	...	...	...	...	...	prose.
V.	i.	173	49	1,, 3'51	105	1,, 1'64	ll. 1—17 by F.
	iii.	146	39	1,, 3'74	79	1,, 1'84	touches by F.
	iv.	137	45	1,, 3'04	74	1,, 1'85	touches by F.
		1089	312	1,, 3'49	610	1,, 1'78	

FLETCHER PART.

I.	v.	6	0	1 to infin.	1	1 to 6'00	song 10 ll.
II.	ii.	281	159	1,, 1'76	72	1,, 3'90	
	iii.	83	39	1,, 2'12	21	1,, 3'95	
	iv.	33	19	1,, 1'73	10	1,, 3'30	
	v.	64	47	1,, 1'36	13	1,, 4'92	
III.	vi.	39	22	1,, 1'77	15	1,, 2'60	
	iii.	53	29	1,, 1'82	9	1,, 5'88	
	iv.	20	11	1,, 1'81	4	1,, 5'00	
	v.	150	59	1,, 2'54	24	1,, 6'25	
IV.	vi.	310	184	1,, 1'68	79	1,, 3'79	
	i.	151	58	1,, 2'60	49	1,, 3'08	
	ii.	156	79	1,, 1'97	48	1,, 3'25	
V.	ii.	112	63	1,, 1'77	14	1,, 8'00	
		1458	769	1,, 1'89	359	1,, 4'06	

<sup>1</sup> Note the metre of the following lines :—I. ii. 38, 39, 40, 42, 74; I. iii. 66, 67; I. iv. 44; II. iv. 13; V. i. 64, 157; V. iv. 10, 18, 35, 69. The 'speech-ending' test has yet to be applied to this play.



Thus it is shown that while Shakspeare has only 1 'double ending' in every 3'49 lines, Fletcher has 1 'double ending' in every 1'89 lines, or nearly twice as many; and that while Shakspeare has 1 'unstopt' line in every 1'78 lines, Fletcher has only 1 in every 4'06 lines.

Such divergences, consistently preserved throughout, cannot be lightly scorned as the frenzied fancies of maniacal metre-mongers, *pace* Mr. Swinburne.

§ 27. "The choice of the story, in which the passion is, after all, of an artificial kind, the toleration of the 'trash' which abounds in the underplot, the faintness (as I must persist in regarding it) of the characterization, and, in general, the absence, except in occasional flashes, of the splendid genius which shows itself all through the last period of Shakspeare, I have always found very perplexing."<sup>1</sup>

Shakspeare cannot be accused of tolerating the trash in this play, any more than in the concluding scenes of *Henry VIII.*, for the simple reason that he never saw either play completed.

And even admitting the charge of faintness of characterization (a charge which Hickson has to a great extent disposed of in a different way), may we not partly find its explanation in that very "choice of the story, in which the passion is, after all, of an artificial kind," and partly in the fact that, while we are accustomed to estimate Shakspeare's powers of characterization by his complete works, we have here only a mutilated fragment wherein to trace his master-hand?

§ 28. How came Shakspeare to choose such a subject? He must have been early familiar with the *Knights Tale*, as he showed his acquaintance with Arcite's sophism (l. 298)—

"thou wost not yit now  
Whether sche be a womman or goddesse.  
Thyn is affecciuon of holynesse,  
And myn is love, as of a creature,"—

in his early play, *Love's Labour's Lost*, IV. iii. 64 :—

<sup>1</sup> Dr. J. K. Ingram, in *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. ii. p. 454. I have taken Dr. Ingram's objections as being the weightiest among the array of opinions unfavourable to Shakspeare's claim. See below, § 104, for the rest of Dr. Ingram's opinion.

"A woman I forswore ; but I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee ;  
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love," &c.<sup>1</sup>

Renewed study  
later.

He had delineated Theseus in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, taking some hints from the *Knights Tale*;<sup>2</sup> and his attention had most probably been called to the story afresh when referring to Chaucer during the composition of *Troilus and Cressida*, which was a "new play" in 1609, "never staled with the stage, never clapper-clawed with the palms of the vulgar," and which must therefore have been composed only a short time before the *Two Noble Kinsmen* was begun.

Hence attracted  
by Chaucer's  
masterpiece, *The  
Knights Tale*.

This may account for the choice of the story, although that choice may have been as injudicious as was the similarly abandoned attempt to dramatize the history of Henry VIII.

But the *Tale*  
unsuitable for  
dramatization.

§ 29. Not even Shakspeare could have created a great play, full of high and passionate thoughts, and possessing firm dramatic unity, from the tale of Palamon and Arcite, any more than he could have constructed a coherent drama (though Mr. Spedding thinks differently) from a series of historical tableaux so unconnected with one central figure or group as were the salient events of Henry the Eighth's reign.<sup>3</sup>

Its spirit of  
fantastic chivalry  
had become  
unreal.

The romance of the two kinsmen, the springs and motives of their actions, their guiding principles and ways of thought, belonged to a state of society which it would have been necessary for the poet to create again in order to give them a reality and a justification.

Actions whose motives lie in the ephemeral laws of a capricious fashion, in the

"pleasant old conventions  
Of our false humanity,"

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Pass. Pilgr.*, iii.; Stokes, *Chronol. Ord.*, pp. 98, 103.

<sup>2</sup> *M. N. D.*, I. i. 167; IV. i. 129, 130. *Knights Tale*, l. 642.

<sup>3</sup> Mr. Samuel Pepys has anticipated my argument! "1663-4, January 1.—Went to the Duke's house, the first play I had been at these six months, according to my last vowe, and here saw the so much cried-up play of 'Henry the Eighth;' which, though I went with resolution to like it, is so simple a thing made up of a great many patches, that, besides the shows and processions in it, there is nothing in the world good or well done."—*Centurie of Prayse*, 1st ed., p. 243; 2nd ed., p. 318, and note, p. 324.

lose their rational probability when those laws no longer regulate the relations of life, or dwell in the memories of men.

The *motif* of the *Knights Tale* had reality and consistency in Chaucer's day, when courts of love with fantastic codes of chivalrous honour justified Arcite's quibble that he was false but never treacherous, and gave Palamon a legal claim to the lady, because he first saw her and first bequeathed his soul to her; but these conventionalities were dead long before the age of Elizabeth, and not even Shakspeare's Promethean touch could impart the warmth of life to their remains.<sup>1</sup>

This was one great difficulty; another, even greater, will be mentioned below.

§ 30. We have only two acts to base our judgment on, two-fifths of the complete play.

Still, the charge of faintness of characterization has to a certain extent been successfully rebutted by Hickson; it is undeniable that the Shaksperian two-fifths give us all the positive ideas we possess of Theseus, Hippolyta, Emilia, Palamon, Arcite, and Perithous; and the rest of the play is only a confusion and perversion and obscuration of the traits indicated by Shakspeare.

The charge of faintness of characterization.

Fletcher has perverted the original design.

§ 31. Besides, several of the situations are unfavourable to the rapid development of the finer shades of character. In the first scene Theseus is in a passive attitude, assailed by the pleading queens.<sup>2</sup> The recitals of their griefs throw the other characters into the shade for some time, leaving a sense of indefiniteness at first which we should not experience were the scene acted before our eyes; but this sense soon passes away when Hippolyta and Emilia add their entreaties to those of the widowed ladies, and we become quickly impressed with the queenliness of Hippolyta's pity—

Situations unsuited for rapid development of character. Act I. sc. i.

Hippolyta.

<sup>1</sup> And at the present day, with all our loving study of the past, it is even harder than it was 270 years ago to reverently realize the fantastic aspects of chivalric love.

<sup>2</sup> The delineation of the three suppliants was inevitable, and they are strikingly individualized; but, as the dramatist has to dispense with them after the first act, their prominent introduction rather detracts from the artistic unity of the play viewed as a whole. Ulrici has some noteworthy remarks on this subject, *Sh. Dram. Art.*, ii. 407 (Bohn's ed.).

ll. 101—105.

“Poor lady, say no more;  
I had as lief trace this good action with you  
As that whereto I’m going, and nev’r yet  
Went I so willing, way;”

and her wife-like defence of her husband’s irresolution—

“My lord is taken  
Heart-deep with your distress; let him consider;”

Emilia.

and not less by Emilia’s tender compassion, the woman’s heart unmasking the rigid composure of the Amazon.

Act V.

The kinsmen.

In the fifth act also the main scenes are unsuited for the development of character by action, but on the whole the superiority of Palamon’s nature to Arcite’s is indicated. In this act (sc. i.)

Emilia, the  
Amazon  
priestess,

Emilia appears as one of a certain type,—the female knight of the goddess Diana,—and hence, like her mistress, has inevitably something “sacred, shadowy, cold,” and (as her love for Flavina shows) “constant” in her character. It could not have been otherwise.

inevitably  
neutral,

Imagine Emilia as any other than as she is drawn, say, a warm, affectionate, passionately sympathetic woman, and we render the climax impossible. She has to be as neutral as Britomart;<sup>1</sup> she must love neither of the combatants, in order to justify the ultimate transference of rights in her from her winner to his death-bed assignee.

the main  
difficulty of the  
playwright.

§ 32. This fatal defect—the necessity of this sudden transfer as a climax—was the other main difficulty (referred to above) which Shakspeare had to contend against in dramatizing the story. He could not have drawn a strongly-marked picture of character, or even of passion and pity; the essential conditions of the story limited him to producing a tragedy of episode, a spectacular romance.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> There are several reminiscences of the *Faery Queene*, Bk. III., in this play: e.g. cf. V. iii. 20—28 with *F. Q.*, III. iv. 55—59.

<sup>2</sup> The only really strong criticism—so far as I can judge—in Mr. Stack’s paper, appended to Mr. Furnivall’s edition of Spalding’s *Letter*, p. 113, is in the passage in which he calls attention to Chaucer’s conclusion, “where the poem dedicates some beautiful lines to the funeral of Arcite and the grief of all, and only makes Emilia yield after years to the silent pleading of the woful Palamon and the urgency of her brother.”

But as I have shown, Emilia, instead of being (as Mr. Stack says) “equally in love with two men at the same time,” is really in love with neither, and is therefore not overwhelmed by bereavement at all.



§ 33. Nor should we leave out of account the benumbing effect of the Fletcher scenes upon the Shaksperian portion; it must be admitted (as Mr. Spedding has shown to be the case with *Henry VIII.* also) that the characterization of one portion flatly contradicts that of the other; our sympathies, which were beginning to flow towards Palamon, the proper hero of the piece, are by Fletcher turned aside from Palamon and steadily directed towards the adventurous Arcite.

Fletcher's  
characterization  
contradicts  
Shakspeare's.

§ 34. Fletcher could admirably delineate the light, fashionable characters of the reign of James I.,<sup>1</sup> but it was manifestly impossible for such a writer to appreciate the ideality of conventional chivalry as we find it described by Chaucer and shadowed forth in the few scenes which Shakspeare has left us.

Fletcher's  
limitations.

§ 35. Thus Dr. Ingram's first three objections may be shown to have less force than at first sight seemed to be in them. The choice of the story need alone be admitted to have been injudicious; but this admission cannot be held to prove anything, as *Henry VIII.* is equally liable to the accusation.<sup>2</sup>

Conclusion.

§ 36. Why Shakspeare left these two late plays unfinished seems hopeless to inquire. He may have himself regretted his choice of subjects, or may, at the close of his career, have thrown aside various fragments and sketches (these two being the chief), leaving them for subsequent completion by Fletcher, or other playwrights of the company.

Why did  
Shakspeare not  
finish this and  
other plays?

I have not given a particular analysis of the various characters, as Spalding and Hickson have both done this at some length, and I have nothing worth adding to their remarks.

§ 37. The last count of Dr. Ingram's indictment remains:—"the absence, except in occasional flashes, of the splendid genius which shows itself all through the last period of Shakspeare."

Style of thought  
and imagery.  
Dr. Ingram.

On the other hand, we have De Quincey declaring that "the De Quincey.

<sup>1</sup> In this respect his only rival was Shirley. The plays of each of these men might be called *Society Plays*, in the sense that certain journals which reflect the vulgar, vicious, scandalous, and ludicrous aspects of self-styled "good society" are called *Society Journals*.

<sup>2</sup> These remarks apply somewhat to *Pericles* also.

supplications of the widowed Queens to Theseus, the invocations of their tutelar divinities by Palamon and Arcite, the death of Arcite, &c., are finished in a more elaborate style of excellence than any other element of Shakspeare's most elaborate scenes."

Whom are we to follow?

"Who shall decide, when doctors disagree,  
And soundest casuists doubt, like you and me?"

To read Dr. Ingram's words, one would imagine the Shaksperian touches to be as rare, and, when they do occur, as conspicuous, as were those ambrosial raisins in the dull dumplings of our school-days. From De Quincey's panegyric the contrary inference seems plain, that the Shaksperian scenes are as "rich" as the most double extra superfine wedding cake of our maturer years.

The style homogeneous, not patchy,

the rhythm uniformly fine, "like perfect music unto noble words."

§ 38. De Quincey seems right in this, that the purely Shaksperian scenes are homogeneous, woven in one piece, not made up of shreds and patches. The gorgeously flowing rhythm forbids us absolutely to suppose that any mere botcher of another's thoughts could have joined such verses together; like the hands of Esau and the voice of Jacob, the incongruity would have been manifest at once; Shakspeare's words not harmonizing well with the metrical accompaniment of any Herr *Anonymus*.

Nature of the following inquiry.

§ 39. I cannot undertake a survey of the "finger-post" kind, in order to ascertain the actual number and intensity of the flashes of genius which are to be found in the Shaksperian scenes; but perhaps such a survey will be unnecessary when I shall have shown by comparisons that the thoughts in general are Shakspeare's thoughts, and the phrases peculiarly his phrases, for the conclusion will then be apparent that certain parts of the play are from his pen.<sup>1</sup>

Plagiarisms

§ 40. And it is easy to distinguish between plagiarisms and self-reproductions. A plagiarism is betrayed by its environment, 't will

<sup>1</sup> I have to undergo a cross fire in such an attempt. On one side are those who deny that there are Shaksperisms, except a few scattered reminiscences; on the other, those who believe the Shaksperisms to abound, but to have been set in the text "wilfully and maliciously, by some person or persons unknown." Such opinions, being, like the famous Kilkenny cats, mutually destructive, may be left to demolish one another.

out, be the plagiarist never so skilful. Like Arcite's nobleness of spirit, it can no more be hid

"Than fire in flax;  
Than humble banks can go to law with waters  
That drift winds force to raging" (V. iii. 98).

But with a self-reproduction the case is different. The resembling passage occurs naturally, incidentally; some familiar word associates an old train of ideas, or some fresh idea finds its easiest embodiment in some old familiar phrase.

Shakspeare repeats himself regularly and frequently;<sup>1</sup> he is like the ocean, "ce vaste prodige de la monotonie inépuisablement variée,"<sup>2</sup> never quite the same, yet never wholly different. He has even noted this himself, when he asks—

"Why is my verse so barren of new pride,  
So far from variation or quick change?  
Why with the time do I not glance aside  
To new-found methods and to compounds strange?  
Why write I still all one, ever the same,  
And keep invention in a notèd weed,  
That every word doth almost tell my name,  
Showing their birth and where they did proceed?"  
Sonnet lxxvi.

§ 41. In entering upon an inquiry of the kind which follows, I am at some disadvantage; for the *systematic* comparison of this play with passages from Shakspeare's other works has never before been carried out;<sup>3</sup> therefore, as the pioneer of this branch of the investigation, I am inevitably doomed to overlook many valuable illustrations which might greatly increase the strength of my argument.

It must never be forgotten too that only a first rough, fragmentary sketch is being compared with finished and carefully-elaborated productions.

<sup>1</sup> See Bellamy's *Dict. of Sh. Quotations*.

<sup>2</sup> Victor Hugo, in his magnificent rhapsody, *W. Shakespeare*, p. 6. Compare Mr. Palgrave's note in the *Golden Treasury*, p. 323:—"Proteus represented the everlasting changes, united with ever-recurrent sameness, of the Sea."

<sup>3</sup> Steevens has attempted it. In a few cases he has anticipated me, but as a whole his list is of small value. Weber has sufficiently exposed his arguments.

Prologue,  
by Fletcher,

§ 42. A comparison with Fletcher's prologues and epilogues places beyond a doubt that this prologue is from his pen.<sup>1</sup>

Knight has argued that "the expression 'such a writer' is almost evidence against the double authorship;"<sup>2</sup> he might with equal cogency have asserted that the phrase "this child" (l. 16) was "almost evidence" in favour of it!

affords no  
evidence of  
authorship.

The singular, "writer," may be used for rhyme's sake merely, if it be not rather an indication that Fletcher finished the play after Shakspeare's retirement, and quietly took to himself the credit of the whole composition. But, in fact, the prologue gives no clue to the authorship, single or double, of the play.

Act I. sc. i.

Song,

§ 43. This scene bears many marks of Shakspeare's hand. It is doubtful, however, whether it is all his. I have already commented on the song in the Notes (p. 109), and pointed out its shortcomings. When writing my notes I refrained from expressing any definite opinion as to its authorship, but I inclined to the view which gave it to Fletcher. While still remaining unconvinced, I am now conscious that some indications favour its being ascribed to Shakspeare. Besides the fact that not a single line or even epithet can be paralleled from Beaumont and Fletcher's works, it may be urged against Fletcher's claim that he has written nothing else in the metre of these stanzas; whereas Shakspeare, in the *Tempest* (II. i. 300), has an equally indifferent song in precisely the same unusual metre:—

perhaps by  
Shakspeare.

"While you here do snoring lie,  
Open-ey'd conspiracy  
His time doth take;  
If of life you have a care,  
Shake off slumber and beware:  
Awake! Awake!"

Shakspeare's marriage songs are none of them striking or unconventional; they are not above the level of the greater part of this one (v. *Tempest*, IV. i.; *As You Like It*, V. iv.).

<sup>1</sup> Note the likeness between this and that to *Henry VIII.* Boswell (*q. Singer, Sh.*, vii. 4) says, "That the Prologue and Epilogue [of *H.* 8] were not written by Shakespeare is, I think, clear from internal evidence." Singer (p. 7) says, "Indeed they more nearly resemble the style of Fletcher."

<sup>2</sup> *Studies of Shakspeare*, p. 428.



As to my objection to "chough hoar," that "hoar" is an epithet with no appositiveness,<sup>1</sup> it might be replied perhaps that the "chough hoar" (*i. e.* jackdaw), a thievish bird, was unlucky, while the russet-patted (red-legged, Cornish) chough was not.

The whole introduction of this scene (ll. 1—37) has probably been (like Act V. sc. i. ll. 1—17) recast by Fletcher: assuredly Shakspeare never wrote l. 27:—

"And as you wish your womb may thrive with fair ones."<sup>2</sup>

But excepting these introductory lines as containing interpolations, the scene is thoroughly Shaksperian.

The writer (ll. 40—70) gives the audience the necessary preliminary information about the personages of the play in a most natural and business-like manner: far more artistically, in fact, than he has done in those opening speeches of *Hamlet* which Sheridan has ridiculed in the *Critic*.

The speech of the First Queen ("We are three queens") contains a most characteristically Shaksperian notion—that the wind carries infection from the unburied dead of the battle-field: <sup>3</sup>—

"He will not suffer us to burn their bones,  
To urn their ashes, nor to take th' offence  
Of mortal loathsomeness from the blest eye  
Of holy Phœbus, but *infects the winds*  
*With stench of our slain lords.*"

So in *Henry V.*, IV. iii. 98:—

"And those that leave their valiant bones in France,  
Dying like men, though buried in your dunghills,  
They shall be famed; for there the sun shall greet them,  
And draw their honours reeking up to heaven;  
Leaving their earthly parts to choke your clime,  
The smell whereof shall breed a plague in France."

Similarly in *Coriol.*, III. iii. 121:—

"Whose loves I prize  
As the dead carcasses of unburied men  
That do corrupt my air."

<sup>1</sup> Notes, p. 114.

<sup>2</sup> I find that Mr. Simpson has anticipated me here; we have both noted this line quite independently. Indeed, who that knows Fletcher's style could help doing so? See *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. i. p. 83, and *infra*, § 52.

<sup>3</sup> See Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 169, ed. 1860.

And even more closely, *Coriol.*, I. iv. 33 :—

“And one infect another  
Against the wind a mile.”

Lastly, *Julius Cæsar*, III. i. 273 :—

“Cry ‘Havoc!’ and let slip the dogs of war;  
That this foul deed shall smell above the earth  
With carrion men, groaning for burial.”

l. 41 The mention of the birds of prey—

“The beaks of ravens, tallents of the kites,  
And pecks of crows, in the foul fields of Thebes”—

is of course a commonplace of the battle-field; but this reference is in Shakspeare's manner, as seen in *Julius Cæsar*, V. i. 85 :—

“And in their steads do ravens, crows, and kites,  
Fly o'er our heads, and downward look on us,  
As we were sickly prey.”

l. 45 The “blest eye of holy Phœbus” is a fanciful description of the sun, but we have it again in *Henry V.*, IV. i. 290 :—

“Sweats in the eye of Phœbus.”

Spalding (*Letter*, p. 30) has called attention to Shakspeare's peculiar use of verbal nouns expressing the agent, exemplified here by “thou *purger* of the earth.” For the word and the idea (one of Shakspeare's commonest medical metaphors) compare *Julius Cæsar*, II. i. 180, and for the idea, *Macbeth*, III. iv. 76 and the remarks *infra* on sc. ii.

II. 66—69.

“Hercules our kinsman,—  
“Then weaker than your eyes,—laid by his club;  
He tumbled down upon his Nemean hide,  
And swore his sinews thawed.”<sup>1</sup>

There is a very delicate piece of characterization in these lines. Hercules, we are told,<sup>2</sup> was ever in the mind of Theseus, and the

<sup>1</sup> The hyperbole may be easily matched from Sh., e. g. Florizel's speeches to Perdita in *Winter's Tale*. It is “in a bolder and more masculine vein than Fletcher usually aimed at.”—Hazlitt, *Eliz. Lit.*, lect. iv. p. 120, ed. 1870.

<sup>2</sup> *Shakspeare's Plutarch*, ed. Skeat, p. 278, ‘Life of Theseus,’ c. i. “The wonderful admiration which Theseus had of Hercules' courage made him in the night that he never dreamed but of his noble acts and doings; and in the daytime, pricked forwards with emulation and envy of his glory, he determined with him-

little touch of vanity in the mention of "our kinsman" is admirably introduced. But the passage has great significance from another point of view.

Fletcher probably never opened North's *Plutarch*. Jonson, Massinger, Chapman, and the earlier writers drew from the ancient sources direct. Hence this reference points very plainly to the only dramatist who ever studied North's translation: Shakspeare. We know that he made frequent and free use of the book in his other plays. The bold treatment of classical legend is quite in his style: natural and devoid of the least taint of pedantry. The "Nemean hide" recalls "the Nemean lion's nerve" of *Hamlet*, I. iv. 83. Plutarch has given a hint here, and Shakspeare alone borrowed from him.

The succeeding speeches "need no bush;" they speak for themselves. Take the climax of the Second Queen's speech:—

"Lend us a knee;  
But touch the ground for us no longer time  
Than a dove's motion when the head's pluckt off;  
Tell him, if he i' th' blood-siz'd field lay swoln,  
Showing the sun his teeth, grinning at the moon,  
What you would do!"

ll. 96—101.

It is worth noticing that the comparison in the first three lines, ll. 96—98. strange and far-fetched as it appears to us now, must have been from Shakspeare's own observation of medical treatment. His son-in-law, Dr. John Hall, in his *Select Observations on English Bodies*, thus treated himself for "*Convulsion of the mouth and eyes*:—Then was a Pigeon cut open alive, and applied to my feet, to draw down the Vapours; for I was often afflicted with a slight Delirium."<sup>1</sup>

The quivering of a freshly-killed bird had early been noticed by the poet:—

"Like to a new-killed bird she trembling lies."  
*Lucrece*, l. 457.

In *Hamlet* (II. ii. 484) we have "o'er-sized with coagulate gore;" an exact equivalent of the more contracted phrase "blood-sized." l. 99.

self one day to do the like, and *the rather, because they were near kinsmen*, being cousins removed by the mother's side."

<sup>1</sup> *Obs.*, lx. 2nd Cent.; q. Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 39.

I. 100.

That "horrible symptom of a painful death, which physicians call the 'sardonic grin,'" <sup>1</sup> is described in the fifth line just as Shakspeare has noted it in *John*, III. iv. 34; *Richard II.*, III. ii. 163; 1 *Henry IV.*, V. iii. 62; 2 *Henry VI.*, III. iii. 24; IV. i. 77; *Hamlet*, V. i. 212; *Cymb.*, V. iii. 38 (Schmidt).

I. 107.

In l. 107 the "hot grief" of the queen is like that of Hermione, "which burns worse than tears drown" (*Winter's Tale*, II. i. 111; cf. *Lear*, IV. vii. 47). *Uncandied* (= dissolved) is not used by Shakspeare elsewhere; but he has *candy* (= congeal) and *discandy* (= uncandy) in very similar passages.<sup>2</sup>

Note that in the fine anti-climax of the Third Queen's speech—

II. 117—119.

"O, pardon me!  
Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits,  
Makes me a fool"—<sup>3</sup>

we have "extremity," that is to say, "the utmost of human suffering,"<sup>4</sup> personified in precisely the same sense as in *Pericles*, V. i. 139:—

"Yet thou dost look  
Like Patience, gazing on kings' graves, and smiling  
Extremity out of act."

In a passage from Plutarch, quoted *infra* on I. ii., we have "extremity" similarly spoken of.

II. 126—129.

It may be objected to the following lines that light, not heat, is reflected:—

"Your sorrow beats so ardently upon me,  
That it shall make a counter-reflect 'gainst  
My brother's heart, and warm it to some pity;"

<sup>1</sup> Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 178.

<sup>2</sup> "Twenty consciences, that stand 'twixt me and Milan, candied be they and melt ere they molest," *Tempest*, II. i. 279; "the cold brook, candied with ice," *Timon*, IV. iii. 226; "by the discandying of this pelleted storm," *Antony*, III. xiii. 165 (O. Edd. *discandering*); "the hearts that spanielled me at heels . . . do discandy, melt their sweets on blossoming Cæsar," *Antony*, IV. xii. 22 (Schmidt).

<sup>3</sup> I shall point out below (§ 68) an extraordinary imitation of this passage by Beaumont: very important as establishing B.'s acquaintance with the play, and as helping us to conjecture the date.

<sup>4</sup> Singer, notes, *l. c.*, *Sh.*, iv. 232. The self-reproduction from *Twelfth Night* is obvious.



but Shakspeare says just the same thing again (*Troilus*, III. iii. 96):—

“Man, how dearly ever parted,  
How much in having, or without or in,  
Cannot make boast to have that which he hath,  
Nor feels not what he owes, but by reflection;  
As when his virtues, shining upon others,  
Heat them, and they retort that heat again  
To the first giver.”

The idea that as ospreys subdue before they touch their prey, ll. 137—139, so Theseus's deeds anticipate their own effects by virtue of their inherent kingliness,<sup>1</sup> is implied in the closely-similar description of another great warrior—Coriolanus:—

“I think he'll be to Rome  
As is the osprey to the fish, who takes it  
*By sovereignty of nature.*”—*Coriol.*, IV. vii. 36.

The passage in which the list of suicidal agencies is given, l. 142, “cords, knives, drams, precipitance,” will be referred to in my remarks on Act III. sc. ii.

The Second Queen urges Theseus to march instantly against Creon:—

“Now you may take him  
Drunk with his victory.” l. 157.

To which the Third Queen adds the consideration—

“And his army full  
Of bread and sloth.” l. 158.

I have often wondered, Would Shakspeare have described a sudden attack as *taking* them *full of bread*? But happening on the following passage, I found that I had here one more link in the chain of internal evidence of Shakspeare's authorship:—

“He *took* my father grossly, *full of bread*;  
With all his crimes broad blown, as flush as May.”  
*Hamlet*, III. iii. 80.

<sup>1</sup> l. 137:—“But, O Jove! your actions,  
Soon as they move, as asprays do the fish,  
Subdue before they touch.”

And we know that this fulness of bread produced sloth : the "secure<sup>1</sup> hour" of afternoon sleep (I. v. 61).

In the days before standing armies, stage captains had to "forth and levy" their troops when necessary. But Shakspeare occasionally needs a body of troops to be in readiness for a sudden expedition ; and in such a case he accounts for the advanced preparations by saying either that they have been made for some other campaign, as here—

II. 213—215.

"We shall find  
The moiety of a number, for a business  
More bigger look'd,"—

or that they have been made in anticipation, as in *Cymbeline*, III. v. 28 :—

"Our expectation that it would be thus  
Hath made us forward" [*sc.* in collecting troops].

With the closing words of the scene may be compared *Winter's Tale*, IV. iv. 25 :—

"The gods themselves,  
Humbling their deities to love," &c.

The speech contains the general idea of honour (as here) controlling desire :—

"Since my desires  
Run not before my honour."

I might note the use of peculiar words, such as *transported* (II. 55, 187), *pluck* (I. 191), *vigour* (I. 195), *theme* (I. 215) ; but this will be possible for any student to do for himself by comparing the *Concordance* with Schmidt's *Lexicon*.

Act I. sc. ii.

Hickson's first  
opinion  
discussed.

§ 44. Hickson (p. 36\*) thinks "that either Shakspeare and Fletcher wrote the scene in conjunction, or that it was originally written by Fletcher, and afterwards revised and partially re-written by Shakspeare. From the entrance of Valerius, however, it appears to be entirely by the latter."

(Fletcher may  
have touched the  
scene, perhaps  
with Beaumont's  
help.)

If Fletcher has retouched a few of the opening speeches,—as (with Beaumont at his elbow) he may have altered a word here and there,—he has certainly not designed the scene.

<sup>1</sup> Here in its Latin sense : *sine cura*.

On this one point of collaboration I dissent totally from Mr. Hickson, and he seems to give it up himself in the end of his essay (p. 60\*):—"To sum up the result of our inquiry:—It is, that the play of *The Two Noble Kinsmen* is one to which Shakspeare possesses a better title than can be *proved* for him to *Pericles*;—that to him belong its entire plan and general arrangement: but that, perhaps for want of time to complete it by a day named, and probably by way of encouragement to a young [*born 1576 or 1579*] author of some promise, he availed himself of the assistance of Fletcher to fill up a portion of the outline."

Hickson's second opinion

I cannot reconcile the conclusions in these two quotations; they are, I think, antagonistic. Neither can face Dr. Ingram's objection as to the toleration of the trash in the underplot; indeed, that objection seems to me unanswerable, except on the hypothesis that Shakspeare, when he retired from the stage, left this play and *Henry VIII.* incomplete, and that they were worked up by Fletcher afterwards.

inconsistent with the first.  
Neither satisfactory.

The only valid hypothesis.

But to my parallels.

The introductory speeches of this scene contain a discourse upon the function of war as a purifier of the corruptions of peace.

This application of "the doctrines of physiology to the theory of government and statesmanship" is very characteristic of Shakspeare, as Dr. Bucknill has abundantly shown.<sup>1</sup> "Hamlet makes peace the time of health,<sup>2</sup> though of plethoric health which ripens into war" (p. 210). "War has been stated by cynical statists to be man's natural condition, and peace but the period of exhaustion and recruitment. Shakspeare does not go quite so far as this, but he looks upon war as a disease produced by that state of the body in which health becomes rank and plethoric" (p. 264).

This idea naturally occupies a large portion of Arcite's prayer in Act V. sc. i. War is there the "great corrector of enormous times, Shaker of o'er-rank states." He cures the world "o' th' plurisy of

<sup>1</sup> *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, pp. 201, 210, 264.

<sup>2</sup> *Hamlet*, IV. vii. 118:—

"For goodness, growing to a *plurisy*,  
Dies in his own too-much."

See my note on V. i. 66, p. 159.

people." And as the treatment of plethoric (= "enormous") individuals was purging and bleeding, so war purges the commonwealth and heals

V. i. 64.

"with blood  
The world when it is sick."<sup>1</sup>

We may compare 2 *Henry IV.*, IV. i. (54—57) 63—66 :—

"Show awhile like fearful war,  
To diet rank minds, sick of happiness,  
And purge the obstructions which begin to stop  
Our very veins of life."

And *Macbeth*, V. ii. 25 :—

"Well, march we on,  
To give obedience where 'tis truly ow'd :  
Meet we *the medicine of the sickly weal*,  
And with him pour we, in our country's purge,  
Each drop of us."

I. i. 48.

The italicized words recall the epithet of Theseus : "thou purger of the earth."

Can we compare such passages with these in our play (V. i.), and not feel sure that they are both the expression of the same mind?

Take now the passages in sc. ii. :—

II. 19—26.

"Who, then, shall offer  
To Mars's so-scorn'd altar? I do bleed  
When such I meet, and wish great Juno would  
Resume her ancient fit of jealousy,  
To get the soldier work, *that peace might purge*  
*For her repletion*, and retain anew  
Her charitable heart, now hard, and harsher  
Than strife or war could be."

This intransitive use of *purge* is worth remarking, and comparing with *Antony*, I. iii. 53 :—

"The condemn'd Pompey,  
Rich in his father's honour, creeps apace  
Into the hearts of such as have not thrived  
Upon the present state, whose numbers threaten ;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. III. i. 113 :—

"This question, sick between 's,  
By bleeding must be cured."



*And quietness, grown sick of rest, would purge  
By any desperate change."*

Hamlet carries the metaphor somewhat further in his speech on the Polish expedition of young Fortinbras (IV. iv. 27):—

"This is the imposthume of much wealth and peace,  
That inward breaks, and shows no cause without  
Why the man dies."

It must be mentioned that three words in this speech of Palamon's do not occur elsewhere in Shakspeare—*martialist*, *flurled*, ll. 16—24. and *repletion*. They are all of them common enough in other writers: the first two being found in Beaumont and Fletcher. However, the very fact of their proximity diminishes the force of any objection which might be founded on them; if, indeed, any can be founded on the absence of words in general circulation (see *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, p. 114). It is more conclusive to notice the similarity of the trains of thought to those in Shakspeare's unquestioned writings. For instance, read the first hundred lines of this scene with *Cymbeline*, III. iii., and note the resemblances of thought, the associating circumstances being not dissimilar. Compare especially

*Cymbeline*, III. iii.

ll. 16, 17: "This service is not service, so being done, But being so allowed."

ll. 24—26: "Prouder than rustling in unpaid-for silk; Such gain the cap of him that makes 'em fine, Yet keeps his book uncrossed."

ll. 45—49: "Did you but know the city's usuries And felt them knowingly; the art o' the court, As hard to leave as keep; whose top to climb Is certain falling, or so slippery that The fear's as bad as falling."

*Two Noble Kinsmen*, I. ii.

ll. 67—70: "who only attributes The faculties of other instruments To his own nerves and act: commands men ['s] service, and what they win in't."

ll. 49—52: "Why am I bound By any generous bond to follow him Follows his tailor, haply so long until The followed make pursuit?"

ll. 4—12: "Thebes, and the temptings in't, before we further Sully our gloss of youth; And here to keep in abstinence we shame As in incontinence; for not to swim I' th' aid o' th' current, were almost to sink, at least to frustrate striving; and to follow The common stream, 't

Very remarkable parallel.

would bring us to an eddy Where  
we should turn or drown; if  
labour through, Our gain but life  
and weakness."

ll. 36—42: "I spake of  
Thebes, How dangerous, if we  
will keep our honours, It is for  
our residing; where every evil  
Hath a good colour, where every  
seeming good 's A certain evil;  
where not to be ev'n jump As  
they are here, were to be strangers,  
and Such things to be, mere  
monsters."

ll. 49—55: "The toil o' the  
war, A pain that only seems to  
seek out danger I' the name of  
fame and honour; which dies  
i' the search, And hath as oft a  
slandrous epitaph As record of  
fair act; nay, many times, Doth  
ill deserve by doing well; what's  
worse, Must court'sy at the  
censure."

ll. 15—23: "Scars and bare  
weeds The gain o' th' martialist,  
who did propound To his bold  
ends honour and golden ingots,  
Which though he won, he had  
not; and now flurled By peace,  
for whom he fought. Who, then,  
shall offer To Mars's so-scorned  
altar? I do bleed When such I  
meet, and wish great Juno would  
Resume her ancient fit of jealousy,  
To get the soldier work."

Compare the structure of

ll. 47—49 (*above*: "whose  
top to climb . . . falling").

ll. 7—9 (*above*: "for not to  
swim . . . striving").

ll. 7—9

The image in ll. 7—9—swimming with the current of vice—has  
its counterpart in *Timon*, IV. i. 25:—

"Lust and liberty  
Creep in the minds and marrows of our youth,  
That 'gainst the stream of virtue they may *strive*,  
And drown themselves in riot!"

Note the use of *strive* = swim.

The denunciations of Thebes may be compared with Timon's  
more violent denunciations of Athens, and contrasted with the  
very inconsistent words which Fletcher puts into the mouths of  
the kinsmen, beginning—

II. ii. 7.

"Where is Thebes now, where is *our noble country*?"

The servile imitation of fashions, satirized by Palamon in his fine speech, besides the very noticeable parallel to *Cymbeline*, III. iii. 21,<sup>1</sup> has a resemblance to *Pericles*, I. iv. 21—27 :—

“This Tarsus . . .

Whose men and dames so jetted and adorned,  
Like one another's glass to trim them by.”

The whole description of the corruptions at Thebes under the rule of Creon reminds us of the state of Scotland under Macbeth (IV. iii.).

In place of Arcite's urging Palamon to leave Thebes, and Palamon's determination to stay and defy the evils which surround them, we have Malcolm's despair and Macduff's courageous resolve :—

“*Mal.* Let us seek out some desolate shade, and there  
Weep our sad bosoms empty.

“*Macd.* Let us rather  
Hold fast the mortal sword, and like good men  
Bestride our downfall'n birthdom ; each new morn  
New widows howl, new orphans cry, new sorrows  
Strike heaven on the face, that it resounds  
As if it felt with Scotland, and yelled out  
Like syllable of dolour.”

The rage of Creon calls to mind *Cymbeline*, III. v. 67 :— l. 84.

“Go in and cheer the king : he rages ; none  
Dare come about him.”

Lastly, note the strong family likeness between Palamon's words—

“The blood we venture  
Should be as for our health”—

l. 109.

and those of Coriolanus—

“The blood I drop is rather physical  
Than dangerous to me” (I. v. 19).

§ 45. This is by the writer of the main part of the two preceding scenes ; whatever presumption of Shakspeare's authorship has been Act I. sc. iii. Ly  
Shakspeare.

<sup>1</sup> My *Cymbeline* parallel seems rather a tough nut for the upholders of the “plagiarism” theory, for we have here an *expansion*—which plagiarisms never are—of the germs of thought in *Cymbeline*, III. iii.

ll. 49—82.

ruised with regard to them must be allowed to attach here also. The whole scene is marked by Shakspeare's manner, but I have not succeeded in noting any parallels such as I have adduced for scenes i. and ii. This is the more remarkable because the description of Flavina has been called an imitation of a somewhat similar description in *A Midsummer Night's Dream*, III. ii. 198—219.

The nature of the two passages is such, that the similarities appear to me coincidences, and not conscious imitations. Each passage has a fitness of its own.

Motive for  
introducing the  
'Flavina'  
speech.

The motive of this speech of Emilia's seems to be to strengthen the wall of indifference to man which her vows to Diana have raised round her—an indifference necessary for the happy termination of the play—by adding a reasoned conviction on her part that "the love 'tween maid and maid may be more than in sex dividual."

There is not a word in the scene which Shakspeare might not have written: its rhythm is his rhythm; its mannerisms are his; its free and natural treatment of classical legend is his also.

Fine style.

Will not the description of the friendship of Theseus and Pirithous stand in point of style beside any piece of *Coriolanus*? They have

l. 40.

"Fought out together, *where death's self was lodged*;  
Yet fate hath brought them off."

This may contain a reference to the commoner form of the legend, which confused Aidoneus, king of the Molossians, with the god Pluto. Plutarch gives the more ancient version (p. 289, ed. Skeat), according to which the king caused Pirithous "presently to be torn in pieces with his dog, and shut Theseus up in close prison." But (supposing "death's self was lodged" to refer to this adventure) it was necessary for dramatic purposes that fate should bring them off.

ll. 61—64.

A little further on we have one of the numerous medical references which this play contains, expressed with exquisite grace:—

"And like the elements,  
That know not what nor why, yet do effect



Rare issues by their operance, our souls  
Did so to one another."<sup>1</sup>

A second medical allusion occurs a few lines on :—

"A sickly appetite,  
That loathes even as it longs." l. 89.

The other peculiarity of sick men's longings is noted in *Coriol.*,  
I. i. 181 :—

"And your affections are  
A sick man's appetite, who desires most that  
Which would increase his evil."

§ 46. The danger of too readily relying upon apparently parallel passages in an inquiry like the present may be illustrated from this scene.

Act I. sc. iv.  
Danger of  
relying on  
apparent  
similarities  
illustrated from  
ll. 24, 25.

Theseus asks of the kinsmen—

"They are not dead?"

To which the Herald replies—

"Nor in a state of life," &c.

At first sight this seems to be a self-repetition from *Macbeth* :—

"I have drugged their possets,  
That death and nature do contend about them,  
Whether they live or die" (II. ii. 6).

But the resemblance is only fortuitous; here is the true original,  
from Chaucer (l. 157) :—

"Nat fully quyk, ne fully deed they were;  
But by here coote armour, and by here gere,  
Heraudes knew hem wel in special."

With this caution borne in mind, I may continue my comparisons, beginning by noting a slight verbal resemblance between  
l. 32, "rather than niggard, waste," and *Sonnets*, i. 12, "mak'st l. 32.  
waste in niggarding."

"Bear 'em speedily  
From our kind air,—to them unkind,—and minister  
What man to man may do; for our sake, more;  
Since I have known frights, fury, friends' behests," ll. 37—45.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Twelfth Night*, II. iii. 10, and Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, pp. 120, 121.



Love's provocations, zeal, a mistress' task,  
 Desire of liberty, a fever, madness,  
 Hath set a mark—which nature could not reach to  
 Without some imposition,—sickness in will,  
 Or wrestling strength in reason."

In the notes I suggested that *imposition*<sup>1</sup> meant *deception*; but it seems to me now more probable that the passage means—take the greatest care of them, for I have known violent mental or moral shocks, when accompanied by acute physical suffering (such as might arise from careless treatment), to leave some *impression of evil* in the form of either chronic languor or actual insanity.

If this explanation be approved, it receives a strong confirmation from the following remarks by Dr. Bucknill on the madness of Lear:—"Insanity, arising from mental constitution, and moral causes, often continues in a certain state of imperfect development; that state which has been somewhat miscalled by Prichard, moral insanity; a state of exaggerated and perverted emotion, accompanied by violent and irregular conduct, but unconnected with intellectual aberration; *until some physical shock is incurred—bodily illness, or accident, or exposure to physical suffering; and then the imperfect type of mental disease is converted into perfect lunacy, characterized by more or less profound affection of the intellect, by delusion or incoherence.*"<sup>2</sup> This is evidently the case in Lear; and although we have never seen the point referred to by any writer, and have again and again read the play without perceiving it, we cannot doubt from the above quotations [*Lear*, III. ii. 67—73; IV. vi. 102—107], and especially from the second, in which the poor madman's imperfect memory refers to his suffering in the storm, that *Shakespeare contemplated this exposure and physical suffering as the cause of the first crisis in the malady.* Our wonder at his profound knowledge of mental disease increases, the more carefully we study his works;

<sup>1</sup> Cf. *Winter's Tale*, I. ii. 74, and v. Singer's note; also see § 94, *infra*.

<sup>2</sup> It is a pity that we have not Dr. Bucknill's opinion on both the medical knowledge and mad scenes of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*. In the words which I have italicized we have an almost verbal, and yet quite unconscious, reproduction, by an eminent mental physiologist of our own day, of the very ideas which Shakspeare has expressed with equal precision and greater fulness of detail in this speech (ll. 37—45).

here and elsewhere he displays with prolific carelessness a knowledge of principles, half of which would make the reputation of a modern psychologist."<sup>1</sup>

For the "cataloguing of circumstances, altogether peculiar to Shakspeare" (Hickson), we may compare *Timon*, IV. i. 15:—

"Piety, and fear,  
Religion to the gods, peace, justice, truth,  
Domestic awe, night-rest, and neighbourhood,  
Instruction, manners, mysteries, and trades,  
Degrees, observances, customs, and laws,  
Decline to your confounding contraries,  
And let confusion live ;"

and contrast (as Hickson has done) the "mere flash in the pan" in II. ii. 188:—

"Am not I liable to those affections,  
Those joys, griefs, angers, fears, my friend shall suffer?"

§ 47. "The only scene throughout the entire play with regard to which we entertain doubt" (Hickson), I assign to Fletcher for the following reasons:—

Act I. sc. v. by  
Fletcher.

First, the song is very poor stuff, and contains several Fletcherian phrases, as "quick-eyed pleasure" (see below on II. v.), the "wild air," and "sad and solemn" (occurs in a *Fletcherian* stage direction in *Henry VIII.*, IV. ii. : "sad and solemn music").

Next, note the word *convent*, evidently imitated from the preceding scene (where it is correctly used: "all our surgeons convent l. 30. in their behoof;," here it is meaningless: "We convent nought else l. 9. but woes"). It is not likely that the writer of sc. iv. would so soon have repeated such an unusual word.<sup>2</sup>

Lastly, the well-known couplet at the end—

"This world's a city full of straying streets,  
And death's the market-place, where each one meets"—

is not original.

<sup>1</sup> *Mad Folk of Sh.*, p. 196, ed. 1867.

<sup>2</sup> Hazlitt says that Shakspeare never uses *convent* in the senses in which we have it here (*Eliz. Lit.*, p. 151); but compare *Measure*, V. 128; *Henry VIII.* [? F.], V. i. 52; *Coriol.*, II. ii. 58 (Schnidt).

Even supposing it to be older than all the instances given in my notes, it is borrowed from Chaucer, *K. T.*, ll. 1989—1991 :—

“This world nys but a thurghfare full of woo,  
And we ben pilgryms, passyng to and froo ;  
Deth is an ende of every worldly sore.”

Act II. sc. i.

Strange to say, this has not been hitherto pointed out by any one.

Underplot

§ 48. I have now come to the underplot, and must admit that

probably begun  
by Shakspeare.

I can no longer speak with that confidence which the evidence seemed to justify in the preceding scenes ; for though it may be possible to show that Shakspeare must have given some outline of this subordinate part of the play, I think that in no single scene of the underplot can we feel absolutely certain of his hand throughout. At the same time, we are liable to very great prejudice in judging of this matter, on account of the degradation to which Fletcher has reduced characters which Shakspeare had only begun to sketch in outline.<sup>1</sup>

Our liability to  
prejudice on this  
point.

This scene  
blameless.  
Gaoler.

In this first scene, no fault can be found with any of the characters. The Gaoler is in no ways different from his fellow in *Winter's Tale*, II. ii. ; the Wooer—afterwards made the most utterly contemptible individual in the play—is a plain-spoken man of the same degree as the girl he is wooing ; the daughter herself is made to speak, Shakspeare-like, in a way that a girl of her position never spoke outside of Shakspeare's pages : her lowly utterances becoming the medium for expressing profound reflections upon captivity and adversity.

Wooer.

Daughter.

These considerations go strongly against Fletcher's claim to have written the scene under review ; for most of his reflections can be shown to be borrowed, generally without much appropriateness, and often spoiled in the borrowing.

The daughter says :—

II. 21—24.

“I do think they have patience to make any adversity ashamed ; the prison itself is proud of 'em ; and they have all the world in their chamber.”

<sup>1</sup> It has been objected that these characters have no names, but this may be explained by saying that not being in the original, they were new conceptions, and needed not to be named until their delineation was complete. This fact might, however, be made an additional argument against the “old-play adapted” theory of Mr. Collier.

§ 48. FLETCHER'S EXPANSION OF SHAKSPERE'S THOUGHTS IN II. i. 47\*

This comes more fitly from a third person than from the prisoners themselves.

But Fletcher borrows it all in the next scene:—

“I see two comforts rising, two mere blessings,  
If the gods please, to hold here a brave patience,  
And the enjoying of our griefs together.  
Whilst Palamon is with me, let me perish  
If I think this our prison!”

II. ii. 58—62.

In fact, the first half of scene ii. is but an expanded travesty of the words of the Gaoler's Daughter in scene i.<sup>1</sup>

“*Daugh.* . . . I marvel how they would have looked, had they II. 30—34.  
been victors, that, with such a constant nobility, enforce a freedom  
out of bondage, making misery their mirth, and affliction a toy  
to jest at.”

This is evidently imitated in the next scene by Fletcher (l. 2):—  
“Why, strong enough to laugh at misery;” and (l. 96):—“almost  
wanton with my captivity.”

Again, notice the inconsistency of all sc. ii. with the girl's  
declaration in sc. i. :—“they eat well, look merrily, discourse of II. 37—39.  
many things, but nothing of their own restraint and disasters.”

Fletcher, careless as he was, could hardly have written that  
speech with sc. ii. also in his mind.

Taking this scene by itself, there is nothing offensive or inadequate in it. It perfectly fulfils its purpose of being an introduction to the window scene, though it might have been further elaborated had the designer completed the play himself.

A few more considerations remain. Note first that the scene Note the prose.  
is in that form of prose dialogue so generally used by servants and  
people of low degree in Shakspeare. Next, that we should search  
Fletcher in vain to find another prose dialogue like it. His most  
slovenly work has some kind of rhythm, and even the Palace Yard  
scene (*Henry VIII.*, V. iii.), may be turned into the same sort of  
rhythmical prose, half verse half prose, as we find in Act III. sc. v.

<sup>1</sup> From seeing how Fletcher has amplified the hints in sc. i., we may gather  
some idea of the way in which he may have expanded Shakspeare's notes of  
the play.



A parallel between the last line: "Lord, the difference of men," and *Lear*, IV. ii. 26: "Oh, the difference of man and man," has been pointed out by Steevens and by Mr. Skeat.

Plutarch  
again (?).

Lastly, there may be in the Daughter's words some reminiscence of Plutarch: "Howbeit [Antonius] was of such a strong nature, that *by patience* he would *overcome any adversity*:<sup>1</sup> and the heavier fortune lay upon him, *the more constant* shewed he himself. Every man that feeleth want or adversity, knoweth by virtue and discretion what he should do: but when indeed they are overlaid with *extremity*, and be sore oppressed, few have the hearts to follow that which they praise and commend, and much less to avoid that they reprove and mislike: but rather to the contrary, they yield to their accustomed easy life, and through faint heart, and lack of courage, do change their first mind and purpose."<sup>2</sup>

Act II. sc. ii.  
Fletcher's

use of plural  
nouns.

§ 49. This scene, being admittedly Fletcher's, needs no examination. Hickson has noted that it is not conterminous with sc. i.: in the former the kinsmen are seen together in the window, yet here they begin as if just meeting: "How do you, noble kinsman?" "How do you, sir?" I may exemplify Fletcher's use of plural nouns, especially abstracts, from the first fifty lines:—prisoners, friends, kindreds, comforts, youths, games, favours, ladies, ships, clouds, praises, garlands, twins, arms, horses, seas, swords, sides, temples, gods, hands, armies, hopes, prisoners, graces, youths, embraces, kisses, cupids, necks, figures, selves, eagles, arms, fathers, maids, banishments, songs, woes, delights, hounds, echoes, javelins, rages—total, 44 in 50 lines.

Singer's mistake.

To illustrate the value of offhand criticism in a question of authorship like the present, I may mention that Singer (X. 337) quotes the "beautiful lines" about the rose as "evidently by Shakspeare, as he assisted Fletcher in writing" the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, and compares *Cymbeline*, I. iv.:—

"And, like the tyrannous breathing of the north,  
Shakes all our buds from growing."

<sup>1</sup> Cf. italicized words with "patience to make any adversity ashamed:" "with such a *constant* nobility." And the passage about *Extremity* with I. i. 117: "Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits, makes me a fool."

<sup>2</sup> *Life of Antonius*, § 9, ed. Skeat, p. 167.



Singer cannot have seen the context: he arrived at this positive conclusion on the strength of Farmer's note, which quotes the "beautiful lines" in question:—

"*Emil.* Of all flowers, ll. 137—143.  
Methinks, a rose is best.  
"*Woman.* Why, gentle madam?  
"*Emil.* It is the very emblem of a maid:  
For when the west wind courts her gently,  
How modestly she blows, and paints the sun  
With her chaste blushes! When the north comes near her,  
Rude and impatient, then, like chastity,  
She locks her beauties in her bud again,  
And leaves him to base briars."

I may be excused for quoting from my note (p. 134) the following "striking parallel to this intensely Fletcherian passage," from *The Loyal Subject*, IV. iii. sp. 15:—

"Here, ladies, here (you were not made for cloisters),  
Here is the sphere you move in; here shine nobly,  
And by your powerful influence, command all!—  
*What a sweet modesty dwells round about 'em,*  
*And, like a nipping morn, pulls in their blossoms!*" [*Aside.*]

As illustrating another Fletcherian problem (with which I hope ll. 242, 243,  
parallel from  
Fletcher's part of  
*Henry VIII.* some day to deal), compare<sup>1</sup>:—

"Youth and pleasure,  
Still as she tasted, should be doubled on her,"  
with *Henry VIII.*, V. v. 26:—

"All princely graces,  
That mould up such a mighty piece as this is,  
With all the virtues that attend the good,  
Shall still be doubled on her."

Before passing to the next scene, I beg to direct the particular attention of any reader who may be studying Fletcher's mannerisms Fletcher's  
mannerisms. to my note on II. ii. 37/40.

§ 50. Fletcher's, beyond a doubt. For parallels, see notes. Act II. sc. iii.  
Fletcher's.

§ 51. Now comes the Gaoler's Daughter, moralizing on her love for Palamon, in Fletcher's peculiarly prurient way. Observe the phrase "young handsome man," which we find also in IV. ii. Act II. sc. iv.  
Fletcher's.

<sup>1</sup> Cf II. ii. 73, "the ways of honour," with *Henry VIII.*, V. v. 38, "the perfect ways of honour."

50\* § 52-3. II. v, vi. FLETCHER'S. § 54. III. i. 1—76 SHAKSPERE'S.

13, "young handsome men," and Epil. 1. 6 "young handsome wench."

Act II. sc. v.  
Fletcher's.

§ 52. Fletcher's frequent use of the adj. *fair* (see *Concordance*), both simply and in composition, is seen here. In nine lines (29—37) we have "fair-eyed honour" (cf. IV. i. 8, "fair-eyed Emily"), "fair gentleman," "fair birthday," "fair hand."

Act II. sc. vi.  
Fletcher's.

§ 53. This soliloquy is Fletcher's, but it is Fletcher in his better frame of mind. He has, however, gone on the wrong track, having made her passion extravagantly sensual, mere frenzy of lust, and therefore totally unlike that disinterested solicitude of true love which she displays in III. ii.

Contrast with  
Act III. sc. ii.

No imitation of  
Ophelia.

Up to this no resemblance can be traced between this girl and Ophelia; indeed, the notion would never have come into existence had it not been for the evident imitation of the pictorial circumstances of Ophelia's death in IV. i.

Act III. sc. i.  
Shakspeare to l.  
76; the rest  
possibly touched  
by Fletcher.

§ 54. In this scene we again come upon Shakspeare's work. The first 76 lines are certainly his, but there is a crudeness and want of polish about the remainder of the scene which make me think that his work has been expanded into its present form by Fletcher.

I at least do not hear the ring of unalloyed Shakspeare in these latter speeches, though there are plain traces of Shaksperian admixture.<sup>1</sup>

Peculiar words  
and phrases.  
l. 6. l. 11.

l. 7.

l. 13.

l. 72.

l. 41.

Some words and phrases are very characteristic. The "gold buttons on the boughs" (*Hamlet*, I. iii. 40); "rumination" (*As You Like It*, IV. i. 19, cf. *ruminate* in Schmidt); "the *enamell'd* knacks o'th' mead or garden" (note Shakspeare's diverse uses of this adjective—of the stones in a brook, 2 *Gent.*, II. vii. 28, of the snake's skin, *M. N. D.*, II. i. 255, and of the "jewel best enamell'd" = tinted, *Errors*, II. i. 109); "some cold thought" (= chaste, as seven times in Shakspeare), "cold gyves" (= iron bonds, as *Cymb.*, V. iv. 28); "a chaffy lord" (has its counterpart in

<sup>1</sup> I may be accused of evading difficulties by assuming that Shakspeare left rough notes here and there which Fletcher has expanded; in other words, this is saying that I have framed a hypothesis which solves the riddles of previous critics. I own the charge! Mr. Skeat's theory most nearly agrees with mine.

*Cymb.*, I. vi. 178: "the gods made you, unlike all others, chaffless"); "fight like compell'd bears" (*Macbeth*, V. vii. 1); the word-plays I. 68. in "house-clogs" (= fetters, also shoes for indoors); and "cousin" II. 43. 44. —"cozener" (*v.* notes).

§ 55. This scene has been referred to several times already. Act III. sc. ii. Shakspeare, perhaps revised by Fletcher. The distracted girl. There are many features which recall Shakspeare to our minds. It is dawn; all night the distraught girl has roamed the forest in quest of the man whom she has enabled to escape: the tumultuous fancies of her mind have found an echo in the voice of Nature:<sup>1</sup>

"I have heard  
Strange howls this livelong night,"

I. 12.

enough to terrify any woman not nerved by maddening despair. But her grief hath slain her fear, and she is reckless, would even fall a willing victim to the wolves were she but enabled to complete his release by giving him "this file." Her passion in this scene is utterly unselfish; it is simply guided by anxiety for Palamon's liberation from his fetters, and has nothing to do with the filthy nymphomania into which Fletcher perverts it in his subsequent mad scenes. Her passion unselfish, not sensual.

Still, the primary cause of her madness is here seen to be disappointment. Compare Polonius's account of Hamlet's symptoms (II. ii. 146) with the indications in this scene:—

"And he, repulsed,—a short tale to make,—  
Fell into a sadness, then into a fast,  
Thence to a watch, thence into a weakness,  
Thence to a lightness, and, by this declension,  
Into the madness wherein now he raves."

Or, as Dr. Bucknill translates the "psychological opinion of the

<sup>1</sup> The student of Shelley will recollect Giacomo's speech in *The Cenci*, III. ii. sp. 1:—

"What! can the everlasting elements  
Feel with a worm like man?" &c.

Dr. George Macdonald, *The Seaboard Parish*, ch. ii. p. 9, asks:—"Was it from observation of nature in its association with human nature, or from artistic feeling alone, that Shakspeare so often represents Nature's mood as in harmony with the mood of the principal actors of his drama? I know I have so often found Nature's mood in harmony with my own, even when she had nothing to do with forming mine, that in looking back I have wondered at the fact." Compare *Troilus*, I. iii. 49—54.

The growth of Hamlet's madness according to Polonius.

old courtier" into the "dulness of medical prose":—"Disappointed and rejected in his ardent addresses to Ophelia, Hamlet became melancholy, and neglected to take food; the result of fasting was the loss of sleep; loss of sleep and loss of food were followed by general weakness; this produced a lightness or instability of the mental functions, which passed into insanity."<sup>1</sup>

Note the resemblance here.

It is curious to notice how many of these indications we have here. The melancholy is betrayed in the opening lines of the girl's soliloquy. The fasting, in her declaration:—"food took I none these two days,—sift some water." Loss of sleep, in "I have not closed mine eyes, save when my lids scoured off their brine" (the force of this expression is like Shakspeare). And instability of the mental functions, in her agonized cry:—

ll. 29—32.

"Alas!  
Dissolve, my life! let not my sense unsettle,  
Lest I should drown, or stab, or hang myself!  
O state of nature, fail together in me,  
Since thy best props are warp!"

Fletcher could not have devised this scene.

We are thus shown the natural and gradual development of insanity; the various phases, the gradation of causes, are here faithfully displayed. I cannot ascribe the conception of such a scene to Fletcher. Here once more note that there is not the faintest imitation of Ophelia; the "cases" are distinct.

No imitation of Ophelia yet.

In the scene there are many Shaksperian marks of style.

Mannerisms.

The construction in l. 20, "Be bold to ring the bell," recalls *Temp.*, IV. i. 119: "May I *be bold to call* these spirits?" With "Dissolve, my life!" compare *Lear*, IV. iv. 19:—

l. 29.

"Lest his ungoverned rage dissolve the life  
That wants the means to lead it."

The enumeration of suicidal agencies in connection with insanity,—

l. 29.

"Let not my sense unsettle,  
Lest I should drown, or stab, or hang myself,"

may be compared with Ariel's words:—

<sup>1</sup> *Mad Folk of Shakspeare*, p. 70. Discussed very similarly in *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 261.



"I have made you mad ;  
And even with such-like valour, men hang and drown  
Their proper selves."—*Temp.*, III. iii. 58.

Also with the present play :—

"Those that with cords, knives, drams, precipitance,  
Weary of this world's light, have to themselves  
Been death's most horrid agents," I. i. 142—144

and :—"Take heed ! if one be mad, or hang, or drown them- IV. iii. 28.  
selves"—which seems to be a reminiscence of the mad girl's fears  
as expressed in the passage first quoted ("Let not," &c.).

Finally, I have to ask the reader to refer to Hickson's paper,  
pp. 42\*, 43\*, for some further considerations which I need not  
repeat here.

I have expressed the opinion that Fletcher has probably re-  
touched this scene. Against this view it should be remembered  
that all the metrical evidence except the "stopt-line" points to  
Shakspeare as the author, and the "stopt-line" can be given no  
weight here, the spasmodic versification, full of jerky pauses, being  
an artistic reflection of the mental whirl and bewilderment of the  
speaker. I must confess that my uncertainty about Shakspeare's  
claim to the scene in its entirety is chiefly based upon a sense of  
indefiniteness in certain passages, and a doubt whether the closing  
incoherencies are natural. In the main the scene is Shaksperian.

Has Fletcher  
touched this  
scene?  
Metrical  
evidence not  
really conflicting.

§ 56. This scene is Fletcher's, both matter and metre. One  
inconsistency may be noted, as showing (were proof needed !) that  
Fletcher did not write the prayers in Act V. sc. i. Contrast II. 36—  
41 of this scene with Palamon's prayer to Venus.

Act III. sc. iii.  
Fletcher's.

§ 57. The ridiculous chatter in this scene gives us Fletcher's  
idea of mad talk.

Act III. sc. iv.  
Fletcher's.

§ 58. More padding by Fletcher. See notes to this and the  
preceding scenes for some illustrative quotations. One passage  
there quoted (p. 145) may be repeated here, as it opens a wide field  
of speculation about the relation of this play to that *Masque of the  
Inner Temple and Gray's Inn*, which was presented "in the Ban-  
queting House at Whitehall, on Saturday, the 20th day of February,  
1612" (O. S.). In this *Masque* we have a stage direction, setting  
A clue to the  
date.

Act III. sc. v.  
Fletcher's.



Fletcher's  
Masque, 1612,  
1613.

forth the particulars of a dance, which must have either been borrowed from, or imitated by, that in the *Two Noble Kinsmen*. This direction has been written for the printed copy after the performance. It may be that Fletcher both wrote the Masque and finished the *Two Noble Kinsmen* at about the same time, and introduced the dance into the Masque for private, and the play for public, representation. The description is as follows :—"The second Anti-masque rush in, dance their measure, and as rudely depart ; consisting of a Pedant, May Lord, May Lady ; Servingman, Chambermaid ; a Country Clown or Shepherd, Country Wench ; an Host, Hostess ; a He-Baboon, She-Baboon ; a He-Fool, She-Fool, ushering them in. All these persons, apparelled to the life, the Men issuing out of one side of the boscaige, the Women from the other. The music was extremely well fitted, having such a spirit of country jollity, as can hardly be imagined ; but the perpetual laughter and applause was above the music.

"The dance likewise was of the same strain ; and the dancers or RATHER ACTORS, expressed every one their part so naturally and aptly, as when a man's eye was caught with the one, and then past on to the other, he could not satisfy himself which did best. It pleased his Majesty to call for it again at the end, as he did likewise for the first Anti-masque ; but one of the statues by that time was undressed." <sup>1</sup>

Two  
suppositions.  
i.

Now that quotation strongly favours two suppositions. I have marked the words, "*or rather actors*," because they seem to show that *this* Anti-masque was *presented* by "his Majesty's servants," the company named on the title-page of our play ; but even omitting this suggestion, there can be no doubt about the identity of the representations.

ii.

Secondly, notice that this dance was a great hit, was repeated by command at the end of the piece. If it had been known to the spectators, frequenters of the playhouse, by having been previously introduced during the representation of a play there, would it have been encored at Whitehall, or even so provocative as it was of "perpetual laughter and applause"? Assuredly it would not.

<sup>1</sup> B. & F. ed., Darley, vol. ii. p. 688.

This gives one more slight clue to the date. It puts the representation of the play back till after 20th February, 1612, that is, 1613, new style, and therefore near where I have conjectured it to be, July or August, 1613, shortly after the destruction of the Globe Theatre. See the paragraph on *Date of Composition*.

§ 59. This scene is also Fletcher's work. As an example of his self-repetitions, compare—

Act III. sc. vi.  
Fletcher's.

"*Hip.* Sir, by our tie of marriage,—  
*Emil.* By your own spotless honour,—  
*Hip.* By that faith, ll. 195—201.  
 That fair hand, and that honest heart you gave me,—  
*Emil.* By that you would have pity in another,  
 By your own virtues infinite,—  
*Hip.* By valour,  
 By all the chaste nights I have ever pleased you,—  
*Thes.* These are strange conjurings!"

with *The Little French Lawyer*, IV. v. :—

"*Lam.* Dinant as thou art noble,—  
*Ana.* As thou art valiant, Cleremont,—  
*Lam.* As ever I  
 Appeared lovely,—  
*Ana.* As you ever hope  
 For what I would give gladly,—  
*Clere.* Pretty conjurations!"

§ 60. Here we have the description of the mad girl floating on the lake, making the flower-posies and singing her snatches of song; an imitation obviously of the flower-scene and death of Ophelia.

Act IV. sc. i.  
Fletcher

But we must beware of confusing this imitation of "the circumstances of Ophelia's death" with an imitation of the character of Ophelia; as Hickson shows, there is undeniably the former, but certainly not the latter. This error has become stereotyped; it will probably live side by side with its refutation for many a day.

imitates the  
circumstances of  
Ophelia's death.

§ 61. With the contemplation of the pictures in this scene, "Fletcher's masterpiece," we may contrast *Timon*, I. i. 30—38; *Hamlet*, III. iv. 53—63; *Lucrece*, 1366—1561, and compare the *Lover's Progress*, I. ii. sp. 15, where a rich 'heir,' Madam Olinda, has to choose between two rival lovers.

Act IV. sc. ii.  
"Fletcher's  
masterpiece."

"*Olinda*. I thus look  
With equal eyes on both ; either deserves  
A fairer fortune than they can in reason  
Hope for from me ; from Lidian I expect,  
When I have made him mine, all pleasures that  
The sweetness of his manners, youth, and virtues,  
Can give assurance of ; But turning this way  
To brave Clarangè, in his face appears  
A kind of majesty which should command,  
Not sue for favour." &c.

The whole scene is full of echoes of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*.<sup>1</sup>

A collection of Fletcher's allusions to the *eye* would fill many pages. Here the description of Palamon,

l. 27.

"of an eye as heavy  
As if he had lost his mother,"

resembles somewhat an expression in *The Double Marriage*, III. ii. :—

"That's an Englishman ;  
He looks as though he had lost his dog."

See below, § 113, for some important remarks by Mr. Swinburne on this scene.

Act. IV. sc. iii.

§ 62. I cannot do better than quote my words, written five years ago, as an introduction to the discussion of this scene :—

My first view—  
all by Shakspeare.

On the way in which we determine the authorship of this scene (with Act II. sc. i. and Act III. sc. ii.), must depend our view of Shakspeare's share in the play as a whole. But—as Spalding (p. 58) lays down—"In truth, a question of this sort is infinitely more easy of decision where Fletcher is the author against whose claims Shakspeare's are to be balanced, than it could be if the poet's supposed assistant were any other ancient English dramatist. . . . When Fletcher is Shakspeare's only competitor, . . . we are not compelled to reason from difference in *degree*, because we are sensible of a striking dissimilarity in *kind*." In continuation therefore of the principle—that the underplot is

<sup>1</sup> Compare the *Lover's Progress*, I. ii. speeches 3 and 17, with *Two Noble Kinsmen*, III. vi. 275 ; sp. 19, 21, with III. vi. 239 ; sp. 27, with III. vi. 289 ; sp. 71, with IV. ii. 104, 136, III. vi. 85 ; sp. 73 ("what a lane he made"), with I. iv. 19 ("make lanes in troops aghast").

entirely from one hand—which he assumed in order to prove, Spalding, without a single word of criticism, gives this scene to Fletcher; but Hickson—and let no one refuse to accept his judgment without a careful weighing of his arguments—confidently declares Shakspeare to be the author. Be it Shakspeare's or another's, can any one read by themselves the scenes composing the underplot without feeling satisfied that we have here the very thing Spalding describes, an absolute dissimilarity in *kind*, and not a merely relative difference in *degree*? (*v. N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. i. pp. 45\*—50\*). *Notes*, p. 155.

Further consideration has made me modify the opinion there expressed: I now believe that Shakspeare wrote most of the scene, but that Fletcher has interpolated some passages.

Modified opinion: Shakspeare with touches by Fletcher.

The scene is very interesting as showing Shakspeare's humane and rational opinion as to the treatment of insane patients, so much in advance of a time when "a dark house and a whip"—gloomy isolation, heavy fetters, privation of food, and severe flogging—were the remedies employed by the most enlightened physicians.<sup>1</sup>

Shakspeare's treatment of the insane.

The Doctor in this scene will bear comparison with any of the other doctors in Shakspeare's plays; compare him in particular with those in *Lear* and *Macbeth*; and also refer to those in *Romeo and Juliet*, *Pericles* (Cerimon), *Merry Wives*, *Henry VIII.* (Dr. Butts), and *Cymbeline*.

Doctor.

The sleep-walking scene in *Macbeth* is perhaps the most important in this connection. There, as here,<sup>2</sup> we have a Doctor watching a patient who is unconsciously betraying the cause of her disorder.

Lady Macbeth.

The similarity of the precedent facts prevent us from ascribing

<sup>1</sup> *v. Bucknill, Mad Folk*, p. 315; *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 239.

<sup>2</sup> Observe the small outbreak of professional enthusiasm with a good "case:" "How prettily she's amiss! note her a little further." This illustrates that mental bias, that "professional habit of mind," which characterizes Shakspeare's medical men; or, as Dr. Bucknill (*Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, pp. 4, 5,) defines it further: that "sidelong growth of mind which special training impresses."

Having had to form an opinion on the question of a particular author's delineation of insanity, I have tried to atone for my laymanship by studying such books as seemed to bear on the subject, especially Dr. Bucknill's two works, several times referred to.



Fletcher's touch  
suspected.

resemblances to imitations, although there are some features in this scene which greatly diminish my sense of certainty that it is all Shakspeare's work.

i.

In the first place, I feel inclined to doubt whether the speaker's unconsciousness of being listened to is not as unnatural and improbable here as it is natural and probable in a case of somnambulism; though to this may be answered that Shakspeare implies its probability in the Queen's ejaculation to Hamlet: "this is the very coinage of your brain; *this bodiless creation ecstasy is very cunning in.*" The circumstances which provoke these words of the Queen's are not unlike those which here make the Doctor exclaim: "How her brain coins!"

ii.  
l. 51.

Next, it may be said that the Doctor's declaration: "she has a perturbed mind, which I cannot minister too," is contradicted by the fact that he does minister to it; but perhaps it will be a sufficient explanation of this to take the Doctor to mean that it is nature and not the physician who must cure such disorders: "therein the patient must minister to" herself.<sup>1</sup>

iii.

But setting aside these questions as hypercritical, the third objection remains, that the song of which the burthen was *Down-a, down-a*, refers to the *Fletcherian* portion (III. v. 140), and must therefore have been interpolated by Fletcher, unless we prefer the opposite (and less tenable) supposition that Fletcher introduced the song there to suit the girl's statement here, a view which might be backed by pointing out that Fletcher's hedge-schoolmaster, Gerrold, is not the same as the mad girl's "Geraldo, Emilia's school-master."

In any case, these words seem a very suspicious echo of Ophelia's (IV. v. 170): "you must sing *a-down a-down, an you call him a-down-a*. O, how the wheel [*i. e.* burden on't] becomes it!"

The scene in the  
main not  
Fletcher's.  
i.

These considerations seem to give some little support to my theory that Shakspeare's draft scenes have been generally modified and interpolated by Fletcher. But nevertheless, the scene is in the main *not* Fletcher's. For one proof of this, we need only compare

<sup>1</sup> It was common in those days for doctors to decline cases which they deemed incurable.



the Doctor here with the debased wretch in V. ii., to see that they are as distinct creations as are Marina and Boult in *Pericles*.

Again, it is most unlikely that the Shaksperisms in this scene ii. are merely stolen scraps, for they harmonize quite naturally and fully with their surroundings, and resemble, not one scene or one play, but passages too widely scattered to be collected by any plagiarist, however skilful.

The Doctor's first inquiry—"Her distraction is more at some l. 7. time of the moon than at other some, is it not?"—may have a double point, for lunar influences "affect women as well as lunatics,"<sup>1</sup> as Olivia knows when she says to Viola: "'t is not that time of moon with me, to make one in so skipping a dialogue" (I. v. 214).

The Gaoler's reply accurately describes the symptoms already noted in III. ii.: "She is continually in a harmless distemper; l. 3. sleeps little; altogether without appetite, save often drinking; dreaming of another world and a better."

In the mad girl's second speech, we have the liver correctly referred to as the "seat of animal desire and of passion founded upon it:"<sup>2</sup> "we maids that have our livers perished, cracked to l. 19. pieces with love;" so in *Tempest*, IV. i. 56; *As You Like It*, III. ii. 443; and *Twelfth Night*, II. iv. 101, &c.

The description of suicidal agencies, and the dread of suicide under the influence of mental derangement, have been noted with l. 28. reference to III. ii. 29.

The "usurer's grease" reminds us of a somewhat similar hit in l. 31. *Winter's Tale*, IV. iv. 266: "how a usurer's wife was brought to bed of twenty money-bags at a burden," and the tortures here enumerated recall Paulina's question: "What studied torments hast thou, tyrant, for me? What wheels, racks, fires? What flaying, boiling? In leads or oils?" (III. ii. 176).

As people will not hunt up references in these hurrying days, I must quote Mr. Hickson's remarks upon the girl's speech, ll. 35—41. <sup>Hickson's remarks on ll. 35—41.</sup> "The allusions here will remind the reader of the following passage in *King Lear* (IV. vi. 126): 'Down from the waist they are

<sup>1</sup> Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 119.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.* p. 122 (cf. 110. ? Dr. Bucknill makes a mistake here).

centaurs, though women all above; but to the girdle do the gods inherit; beneath is all the fiend's: there's hell, there's darkness, there's the sulphurous pit, burning, scalding, stench, consumption.' The resemblance of the two quotations is striking, but rather in style or structure, which go to prove identity of writer, than in either sentiment or imagery. Comparing the women, who 'down from the waist are centaurs,' with the lords and courtiers who 'stand in ice up to the heart,' we may perceive that there is not one circumstance that is common to both images, and that the resemblance is entirely that of manner. Of the moral purpose of this scene we need hardly speak; but we must call attention to its peculiar fitness; the subject being the punishment awarded to deceit in love, and the indulgence of ungoverned passions,—both of these acting as causes of the disturbed state of mind of the speaker. It would hardly be straining probability to suppose, that the Doctor who attended the jailor's daughter was afterwards [?] had been previously] called to King Lear and Lady Macbeth. His office is purely ministerial, and his purpose is to describe the state of mind of his respective patients; consequently, if by the same writer, no difference of character can be looked for. Similar states of mind, however, call for like expressions. Macbeth, we may recollect, says:—

'Canst thou not minister to a mind diseased?'

To which the Doctor replies,

'Therein the patient  
Must minister to himself.'

The latter speaks, in another place, of Lady Macbeth's state, as

'A great perturbation in nature!'

1 51. Our doctor says of *his* patient, in answer to a question from her father, 'I think she has a perturbed mind, which I cannot minister to.'

1 43. "We may observe that he has called her disorder, 'not an engrafted madness, but a most thick and profound melancholy;' and he now proceeds to give his advice as to the means of recovering her."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pt. i. pp. 49\*, 50\*.

Considering this explicit statement by the Doctor, it may be doubted whether we are justified in calling her mad at all. He calls her disorder "melancholy," what doctors now call *melancholia*—<sup>The "mad" girl.</sup> "most thick," excessively morbid, not "engrafted," superinduced by external influences.<sup>1</sup>

The girl's fifth speech, ll. 44—48, is certainly more in Fletcher's style than Shakspeare's: I suspect it to be an interpolation. Compare it with two passages in Fletcher's part, III. v. 127 (silent hanging = arras), and III. iii. 33 (arbour = garden-house). The tone of the speech, too, is quite different from that of the other speeches in this scene.

The treatment which the Doctor recommends, is most judicious and humane. As "our foster-nurse of nature is repose" (*Lear*, IV. iv.), she is to be kept quiet; the dark room has its gloominess toned down; it is to be "a place where the light may rather seem to steal in than be permitted;" as music has often "holpe madmen to their wits" (*Richard II.*, V. v. 62, cf. *Pericles*, III. ii.), they are to sing to her; her lover is to be gradually associated with the idea of Palamon in her mind, the "falsehood" (hallucination, delusion) being gently eliminated by guiding its vagaries to a new object. This treatment may—the Doctor has great hopes of it—"bring her to eat, to sleep, and reduce what's now out of square in her into their former law and regiment." Meanwhile, he will come in with his "appliance." What that application was, we never learn; <sup>The treatment pursued by the Doctor. ll. 61—89.</sup> 1. 87. for in the play, as it stands, we see *this* Doctor's face no more.

To sum up, the difficulty in IV. iii. is to explain how—if Fletcher wrote it he should have written it in prose, and so immeasurably better than the other mad scenes which are admittedly his; how he has here made the Doctor so professional, so intelligent, so homogeneous with Shakspeare's other mad doctors, and so utterly unlike the despicable pander who goes by the name of "Doctor" in V. ii.?

I cannot resist the general conclusion that Shakspeare has

Conclusion

<sup>1</sup> *v. Mad Folk*, pp. 300—311. Compare *King John*, III. iii. 42:—

"Or if that surly spirit, melancholy,  
Had baked thy blood and made it *heavy-thick*."

written much of the scene, that most of the expressions comparable with those in his other plays are self-resemblances, not imitations; but that Fletcher has touched up and modified the scene, to make it nearer his own delineation of the mad girl.

Act V. sc. i.

Shakspeare,  
except ll. 1—17,  
by Fletcher.

§ 63. This, like the first scene of Act I., requires less demonstration for its authorship to be admitted than do the minor scenes of the play, but it is the more necessary to demonstrate that authorship to the full, as thereby we raise up a body of presumptive proof in the case of the less obviously Shaksperian portions.

Critics who admit Shakspeare's claim at all, are unanimous in assigning this and the last two scenes to him. At the same time, the view of Messrs. Skeat<sup>1</sup> and Swinburne, that Fletcher has completed and interpolated some passages in those scenes, must be admitted to be more scientifically correct.

Metre of ll. 1—  
17, Fletcher's.

A most cursory examination of the metre will suffice to show that Fletcher wrote the exordium, ll. 1—17 (17 verse-lines, 13 'double-endings'), but we seem to hear Shakspeare with Palamon's address:—"The glass is running now that cannot finish till one of us expire." From this on, and especially in Arcite's and Emilia's prayers, "the tense dignity and pointedness of the language, the gorgeousness and overflow of illustration, and the reach, the mingled familiarities and elevation of thought, are admirable, inimitable, and decisive."<sup>2</sup>

l. 18 to end,  
Shakspeare.

Arcite's prayer.

Following the method of comparison, we may note the resemblance of the line—

l. 49.

"that with thy power hast turned  
Green Neptune into purple"

to Macbeth's

"No: this my hand will rather  
The multitudinous seas incarnadine,  
Making the green one-red" (II. ii. 62)

—and the recurrence of the phrase "green Neptune" in *Winter's Tale*, IV. iv. 28. There is quite a cluster of Shaksperisms in the passage:—

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Skeat suspects ll. 1—17, and some parts of the prayers of Palamon and Emilia, to be by Fletcher.

<sup>2</sup> Spalding, p. 47 (1st ed.); p. 45 (*N. S. S.* ed.).



“Whose *havoc* in *vast* field  
*Unearthed* skulls proclaim; whose breath blows down  
The *teeming Ceres' foison*; who doth pluck  
With hand *armipotent* from forth blue *clouds*  
The *mason'd turrets*.”

ll. 51—55.

Here we find *havoc* (as in *Jul. Cæs.*, III. i. 273; *John*, II. i. 220); *vast field* (“vasty fields of France,” *Henry V.*, prol. 12); *unearthed* (= unburied, just such a coinage as “earthed” = buried, in *Temp.*, II. i. 234); *the teeming Ceres' foison* (*Ceres*, *Temp.*, IV. 60, 75, 117, 167; “teeming foison,” *Meas.*, I. iv. 43, &c.); *armipotent* (“the a. Mars,” *L. L. L.*, V. ii. 650, may be from Chaucer, *K. T.*, ll. 1124, 1583); *from forth blue clouds the masoned turrets* (based on Chaucer, l. 1605, “Myn is the ruen of the hihe halles, The fallyng of the toures and the walles,” but also echoing *Temp.*, IV. 152—“cloud-capped towers”).

We come once more on the medical reference to Mars, “shaker l. 63. of o'er-rank states,” previously noticed on I. ii. The expression, l. 62. “enormous times,” like Lear’s “enormous state” (II. ii. 176), is remarkable. Palamon’s prayer is considered by Spalding to be inferior to the other two. This inferiority may be partly due to the subject, Mars and Diana being capable of more concrete supplication than Venus: the latter being conventional, suffers by comparison with the less commonplace petitions of Arcite and Emilia.

The description of the old man and young wife seems to me to be an exaggeration, and to err on the side of forcible expression,<sup>1</sup> but it is undoubtedly in Shakspeare’s manner, and like his other descriptions of old age.

Compare sc. iv. ll. 6—9 of this act:—

“we prevent  
The loathsome misery of age, beguile  
The gout and rheum, that in lag hours attend  
For grey approachers.”

<sup>1</sup> But *tempora mutantur*. What maiden would now use Perdita’s words:—

“I would wish  
This youth should say ’twere well; and only therefore  
Desire to breed by me.”—*Winter’s Tale*, IV. iv. 103.



So in *Measure for Measure*, III. i. 31 :—

“Do curse the gout, serpigo, and the rheum,  
For ending thee no sooner.”<sup>1</sup>

*Winter's Tale*, IV. iv. 408 :—

“Is not your father grown incapable  
Of reasonable affairs? is he not stupid  
With age, and altering rheums? can he speak? hear?  
Know man from man? dispute his own estate?  
Lies he not bedrid? and again does nothing  
But what he did being childish?”

2 *Henry IV.*, I. ii. 201—209, 258, 273.

*Troilus*, I. iii. 172-5 :—

“the faint defects of age  
Must be the scene of mirth; to cough and spit  
And with a palsy-fumbling on his gorget,  
Shake in and out the rivet.”

*Hamlet*, II. ii. 198 : “the satirical rogue says here that old men have grey beards,” &c.

*Troilus*, I. ii. 29—31 : “He is a gouty Briareus,” &c.

L 103.

I have already noted the inconsistency of Palamon's declaration : “I never at great feasts sought to betray a beauty,” with the confession of his amour in III. iii. 36. Contrast the metre with the speech given at foot, in which Fletcher evidently imitates this passage.<sup>2</sup> Palamon's declaration of his purity might have been put in the mouth of young Malcolm (*Mc*b., IV. iii. 125) :—

“I am yet  
Unknown to woman, never was forsworn,  
Scarcely have coveted what was mine own,  
At no time broke my faith, would not betray  
The devil to his fellow, and delight  
No less in truth than life.”

<sup>1</sup> “A singular trio as diseases peculiar to old age.”—Bucknill, *Shakspeare's Medical Knowledge*, p. 71.

<sup>2</sup> “. . . I never called a fool my friend, a madman,  
That durst oppose his fame to all opinions,  
His life to dishonest dangers; I never lov'd him,  
Durst know his name, that sought a virgin's ruin,  
Nor ever took I pleasure in acquaintance  
With men, that give as loose rein to their fancies  
As the wild ocean to his raging fluxes,” &c.

*Women Pleased*, I. i. sp. 63.

Hic'son (p. 32\*) has pointed out the coincidence of sentiment between the words:—

"I never at great feasts  
Sought to betray a beauty, but have blushed  
At simpering sirs that did: I have been harsh  
To large confessors, and have hotly asked them  
If they had mothers? I had one, a woman,  
And women 't were they wronged."

l. 102—107.

And those of *Troilus* (V. ii.):—

"Let it not be believed for womanhood!  
Think, we had mothers; do not give advantage  
To stubborn critics, apt, without a theme,  
For depravation, to square the general sex  
By Cressid's rule: rather think this not Cressid."

Somewhat similarly, Miranda says:—

"I should sin  
To think but nobly of my grandmother;  
Good wombs have borne bad sons." (*Temp.*, II. ii.).

Emilia's prayer is a magnificent piece of poetry. Her character Emilia's prayer. is here delineated by Shakspeare as that of a pure and modest vestal of Diana: though bride-habited, she is maiden-hearted, and guiltless of desire.

In the notes will be found two parallels to her description of Diana:—

"White as chaste, and pure  
As windfann'd snow."

l. 139.

The fanciful epithet,

"our general of ebbs and flows,"

recalls *The Tempest*, V. i.:—

"That could control the moon, make flows and ebbs."

§ 64. One has only to compare this with Act IV. sc. iii. to see that it is by a different and immeasurably inferior hand. Act V. sc. ii.  
Fletcher.

It is this scene in particular—as it is the basest—which has given rise to the undue depreciation of any potentialities of merit which may be in the underplot.

§ 65. This scene is partly by Shakspeare, but has been touched by Fletcher, and perhaps by Beaumont also. Mr. Furnivall (pref. to Spalding, p. vi) makes very merry over Emilia's phrase:— Act V. sc. iii.  
Shakspeare with  
touches by  
Fletcher.

ll. 57-60.

"Arcite may win me;  
And yet may Palamon wound Arcite to  
*The spoiling of his figure*. Oh, what pity  
Enough for such a chance!"

Arcite's figure. But the italicized words formerly meant more than they do now, being equal to saying, "Palamon may incurably cripple Arcite,"—surely not a pleasant prospect for a bride who has no option but to accept her winner, no matter how fragmentary his condition.

The word-play in l. 46:—

Word-play.  
l. 46.

"his brow  
Is *graved*, and seems to *bury* what it frowns on,"

is very Shaksperian, and the dramatic construction of the scene is especially worthy of his genius.

Splendour of  
dramatic  
description.

We should have to go back to the Greek stage to find any scene comparable with this in its substitution of pure description for the pomp and circumstance of the tourney. We realize the unseen conflict as vividly as if it were presented to our view.

Fletcher's  
touches.

It may be heresy, but I think that Fletcher had a hand in the last forty lines; ll. 105-114, and 136 to the end, are decidedly in his manner.

Act V. sc. iv.  
ll. 1-11.

§ 66. An extraordinary resemblance may be traced between Palamon's speech and that of Postumus in prison (*Cymb.*, V. iv.):—

"Most welcome bondage! for thou art a way,  
I think, to liberty: yet am I better  
'Than one that's sick o' the gout; since he had rather  
Groan so in perpetuity than be cured  
By the sure physician, Death, who is the key  
To unbar these locks," &c.

l. 3.

"The gout and rheum that in lag hours attend For grey approachers," have been spoken of above (on V. i.); but the phrase *lag hours* deserves notice in connection with 1 *Henry IV*, V. i. 23:—

"I could be well content  
To entertain the *lag end* of my life  
With quiet hours,"<sup>1</sup>

and the word *approachers*, with *Timon*, IV. iii. 216.

<sup>1</sup> Noted by Mr. Skeat. I regret much that my criticism of his book (*Bibliography*, prefixed to Qo. reprint) has made Mr. Skeat feel aggrieved with the

The rare adjective *unwappered* is used here just as Shakspeare l. 10. employs the similar form *wappered* in *Timon*, IV. iii. 38.

In IV. i. we are told that Palamon has given a large sum of money to the marriage of the Gaoler's Daughter. Is that gift alluded to in l. 31 here?—

“Commend me to her, and, to piece *her portion*,  
Tender her this.”

If so, these lines about the Gaoler's Daughter may have been, as Spalding says, inserted by Fletcher. The point is, however, open to doubt. Are ll. 23—38 interpolated by Fletcher?

It is curious to note that the description of the death of Arcite, which De Quincey thought in Shakspeare's finest style, seemed to Spalding “decidedly bad, but undeniably the work of Shakspeare.”

Remembering the descriptions of the horse in *Venus and Adonis*, and of Lamond's horsemanship in *Hamlet* (IV. vii. 86), we can well understand the zest with which Shakspeare would throw himself into this elaborate picture of the struggle between horse and rider; it contains some of his peculiar expressions,<sup>1</sup> and is deeply marked by his manner. But the speeches immediately following, ll. 84—98, are unmistakably from Fletcher's pen. However, we find the master-hand once more in the closing words of Theseus:— Arcite's death.  
Shakspeare and the horse.  
ll. 84—98 by Fletcher, rest of the scene Shakspeare.

“His part is played, and though it were too short,  
He did it well; your day is lengthened, and  
The blissful dew of heaven does arrose you:  
The powerful Venus well hath graced her altar,  
And given you your love; our master Mars  
Hath vouch'd his oracle, and to Arcite gave  
The grace of the contention; so the deities  
Have showed due justice.”

ll. 102—109.

Theseus, blessing Palamon and Emilia, says that the beneficent dew of heaven sprinkles their marriage: “The blissful dew of Marriage blessings.

Society in general and myself in particular. This being so, I now wish that my zeal for minute accuracy had not led me to be so outspoken about some little defects in Mr. Skeat's edition. Experience has taught me that perfect accuracy is not to be found in any book.

<sup>1</sup> *E. g. disseat*, a word which confirms the folio reading (*dis-eate*) in *Macbeth*, V. iii. 21.



heaven does arrose you." Closely related are the words of Prospero, when, *speaking also of marriage*, he says that if Ferdinand wrong Miranda, the dewy blessings of heaven shall not besprinkle their union :

" No sweet aspersion shall the heavens let fall  
To make this contract grow."

The resemblances here are very striking ; in each case the idea being that heaven bedews a marriage with blessings. Note the Romanticisms, *arrose* (Qo. *arouse*, O. F. *arrouser*), and *aspersion*.

Most of the preceding parallels from late plays.

Throughout my collection of parallels it will have been noted how few have been drawn from the early or even second period plays : all the closer self-reproductions are traced from the last two groups, and especially from the plays of the fourth period. For instance, the foregoing close parallel between this play and *The Tempest*.<sup>1</sup>

The solemn reflections of Theseus at the close :—

ll. 132—4.

" For what we lack, we laugh ;  
For what we have, are sorry ; still  
Are children in some kind,"

recall the melancholy words of his brother duke in *Measure for Measure* :—

" Happy thou art not ;  
For what thou hast not, still thou striv'st to get,  
And what thou hast, forgett'st."

Epilogue.

§ 67. By Fletcher.

Date of composition.

§ 68. We have no external evidence to fix the date. There are, however, several internal indications which place the Shaksperian portion about 1609, and the Fletcherian portion about 1613.

Metrical evidence puts Shakspeare's sketch about 1609.

The metrical evidence, and the self-reproductions from *Cymbeline*, *Tempest*, and *Winter's Tale*, place the Shaksperian part in 1609 or 1610.

Evidence for Fletcher's completion, in 1613.

The date of completion (or rather, first representation, which is

<sup>1</sup> This is not a further parallel from the Fletcherian portion of *Henry VIII.* (IV. ii. 133), for there is no reference to *marriage* here :—

" The dews of heaven fall thick in blessings on her."

But Fletcher evidently repeats himself in the following :—

" Blessings from heaven in thousand showers fall on you " (*Rollo*, II. iii.).



§ 68. TWO NOBLE KINSMEN FINISHED AND ACTED IN 1613. § 69. 69\*

generally much the same thing) may be conjectured from some very slender indications which I have collected.

First, note that the prologue was intended for a *first* representa- Prologue.  
tion of the play (l. 16); then, that the writer refers to some severe i.  
losses which the company had recently sustained: "our losses fall ii.  
so thick, we must needs leave." Surely this must refer to the  
burning of the Globe theatre on June 29th, 1613?

When did the Company's losses fall so thick as about that time?

There is a curious plagiarism from Act I. sc. i. l. 118:

*Honest Man's  
Fortune.*

"Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits,  
Makes me a fool,"

in Beaumont and Fletcher's play (the Beaumont part) of *The Honest Man's Fortune*, III. i:—

"Cunning Calamity,  
That others' gross wits uses to refine,  
When I most need it, dulls the edge of mine."

This supplies a *terminus ad quem*, for *The H. M. F.* was acted in 1613 (v. Notes, p. 117).

And we are given a *terminus a quo* by the imitation in III. iv. *Masque of Inner*  
of the *Masque of the Inner Temple and Gray's Inn*, as shown above *Temple, &c.*  
in my remarks on that scene, § 58.

Thus the Fletcherian part may be assigned to 1613, and the first representation to July or August of that year.

As it was during the performance of *Henry VIII.* that the Globe had been burned, there would be a peculiar significance in this allusion to "*our* losses" by Fletcher when introducing another "new play" at the remaining theatre of His Majesty's servants: the Blackfriars.

This is a very slight basis on which to build up an hypothesis of the date, but it is better than none.

§ 69. I originally intended to reprint here a complete catena of History of  
all preceding criticisms and opinions concerning the play; but opinion.  
having written out a considerable number, I found that such an undertaking would swell the Introduction to more than double its

present size. I have therefore only given a list of references to the writings of the various critics who have pronounced upon this play, and summarised or quoted their opinions (without adducing their arguments, if any) upon the question of authorship.

Langbaine.

§ 70. Gerard Langbaine (1656—1692) in his list of Beaumont and Fletcher's plays, p. 215 of *An account of the English Dramatick Poets*, 1691, calls our play "a Tragi-Comedy," and says that it "was written by Mr. Fletcher and Mr. Shakespear." See Bibliography, prefixed to Qo. Reprint, p. vii.

Ed. 1711.

§ 71. Tonsen's ed. of B. and F. 1711, gives Langbaine's opinion above quoted, vol. I. p. xxxix.

Pope.

§ 72. Alexander Pope (1688—1744), preface to Plays: "We may conclude him (Shakspeare) to be no less conversant with the ancients of his own country; from the use he has made of Chaucer in *Troilus* and *Cressida*, and in the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, if that play be his, as there goes a tradition it was (and indeed it has little resemblance to Fletcher, and more of our author than some of those which have been received as genuine)."

Warburton.

§ 73. William Warburton (1698—1779) says:—"the whole first Act of Fletcher's *Two Noble Kinsmen*" was written by Shakspeare, "but in his worst style." Pope and W.'s ed. vol. I. at end of Table of Editions.

Ed. 1750.

§ 74. Seward in his preface undertakes to "prove that either Shakespeare had a very great hand in all the acts of this play, particularly in the whole charming character of the Jailor's daughter, or else that Fletcher more closely imitated him in this than in any other part of his works." Act I. sc. i. he gives to Fletcher. Act I. sc. iii., the *Flavina* speech, is "probably Shakespeare's, and in his *Second*, if not in his very *Best* manner." The prison scene between the *Kinsmen* (II. ii.) is more worthy of Shakspeare than any part of Act I. "It is in Shakespeare's *second-best* manner, or in Fletcher's *best*." The Gaoler's Daughter, from her likeness to Ophelia, is either by Shakspeare, or "Fletcher has here equalled him in his very best manner." Act V. sc. i. may have been by Sh. and F. jointly.

Gerrold and his rout he assigns to Fletcher, on account of the

Latinisms. Act V. sc. iii.—the combat scene—he thinks too like the Greek plays to be by Shakspeare.

§ 75. Richard Farmer (1735—1797), *Appendix to Shakspeare*, Farmer. 1773, holds that Shakspeare had a hand in the play. He has not examined the question at any length. See my notes, p. 134.

§ 76. Colman “cannot find one plausible argument for as- Ed. 1778. cribing to Shakspeare any part of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*,” and thinks it is by Beaumont and Fletcher.

§ 77. George Steevens (1786—1800), *Shakspeare's plays by Steevens. Johnson, Steevens, and Reid*, vol. xxi., note to *Pericles*, pp. 401—8, has a long dissertation, with many verbal parallels, to show that Fletcher alone wrote this tragedy, “in silent imitation” of Shakspeare. See also vol. xvii. p. 177.

§ 78. Edmond Malone (1741—1812), *Sh. by Boswell*, vol. iii. Malone. p. 303, referring to the *palamon and arsett* of 1594, says: “On this play the *Two Noble Kinsmen* was probably founded.”

§ 79. August Wilhelm von Schlegel (1767—1845), *Lectures on Schlegel. Dramatic Art*, translated by John Black, vol. ii. pp. 309—312, calls the play “the joint production of Shakspeare and Fletcher.” . . . “The first Acts are most carefully laboured; afterwards the piece is drawn out in an epic manner to too great a length; the dramatic law of quickening the action, towards the conclusion, is not sufficiently observed. The part of the daughter of the jailor, whose insanity is artlessly conducted in pure monologues, is certainly not Shakspeare's; for, in that case, we must suppose him to have had an intention of arrogantly imitating his own Ophelia.”<sup>1</sup> For Tieck's opinion, v. § 87. Tieck.

§ 80. Henry Weber (1783—1818), works of *B. & F.*, vol. xiii. Weber. pp. 151—169:—“The supposition of Warburton, that the first act was his [Shakspeare's], is supported strongly by internal evidence; but few will agree with his *ipse dixit*, that it is written in Shakspeare's worst manner. The second act bears all the marks of Fletcher's

<sup>1</sup> Every reader of the play must have been struck by the frequency of monologues, above mentioned by Schlegel. Of these, Shakspeare wrote but one, Act III. sc. ii.; the others are imitations of this scene. In *Cymbeline*, Posthumus soliloquises in a scene of the same kind, Act II. sc. v.

style. Of the third, I should be inclined to ascribe the first scene to Shakspeare, and in the fourth, the third scene, which is written in prose; while the other scenes in which the madness of the Jailer's Daughter is delineated, are in verse, according to the usual practice of Fletcher. The entire last act, perhaps, with the exception of the fourth scene [*i. e.* sc. ii.; Weber divided Act V. sc. i. into 3 scenes], strongly indicates that it was the composition of Fletcher's illustrious associate."

Lamb.

§ 81. Charles Lamb (1775—1834), *Dramatic Poets*, vol. ii. pp. 78-9:—Act II. sc. ii. (window scene) "bears indubitable marks of Fletcher; the two which precede it [Act I. sc. i. the three queens, and sc. iii. Flavinia] give strong countenance to the tradition that Shakspeare had a hand in this play. The same judgment may be formed of the death of Arcite, and some other passages, not here given. They have a luxuriance in them which strongly resembles Shakspeare's manner in those parts of his play where, the progress of the interest being subordinate, the poet was at leisure for description."

Shelley.

§ 82. Percy Bysshe Shelley (1782—1822), Letter to Mary Shelley, 20th August, 1818 (*Essays, Letters from abroad, &c.*, vol. ii. p. 107):—"I have been reading the 'Noble Kinsmen,' in which, with the exception of that lovely scene to which you added so much grace in reading to me, I have been disappointed. The Jailer's Daughter is a poor imitation and deformed. The whole story wants moral discrimination and modesty. I do not believe that Shakspeare wrote a word of it."

Hazlitt.

§ 83. William Hazlitt (1778—1830), *Elizabethan Literature*, p. 121:—"it appears to me that the first part of this play was written in imitation of Shakspeare's manner [by Beaumont and Fletcher]; but I see no reason to suppose that it was his, but the common tradition, which is, however, by no means well established. The subsequent acts are confessedly Fletcher's, and the imitations of Shakspeare which occur there (not of Shakspeare's manner as differing from his, but as it was congenial to his own spirit and feeling of nature) are glorious in themselves, and exalt our idea of the great original which could give birth to such magnificent concep-



tions in another. The conversation of Palamon and Arcite in prison [II. ii.] is of this description; the outline is evidently taken from that of Guiderius, Arviragus, and Belarius in *Cymbeline*, but filled up with a rich profusion of graces that make it his own again." . . . "The jailor's daughter, who falls in love with Palamon, and goes mad, is a wretched interpolation in the story, and a fantastic copy of Ophelia." . . . "The story of the *Two Noble Kinsmen* is taken from Chaucer's *Palamon and Arcite*; but the latter part, which in Chaucer is full of dramatic power and interest, degenerates in the play into a mere narrative of the principal events, and possesses little value or effect."

§ 84. Samuel Taylor Coleridge (1772—1834), *Literary Remains*, S. T. Coleridge, vol. II. pp. 320-1:—"On comparing the prison scene of Palamon and Arcite, Act II. sc. ii., with the dialogue between the same speakers, Act I. sc. ii., I can scarcely retain a doubt as to the first act's having been written by Shakespeare. Assuredly it was not written by *B. & F.* I hold Jonson more probable than either of these two. The main presumption, however, for Shakespeare's share in this play rests on a point, to which the sturdy critics of this edition (and indeed all before them) were blind,—that is, the construction of the blank verse, which proves beyond all doubt an intentional imitation, if not the proper hand, of Shakespeare. Now, whatever improbability there is in the former (which supposes Fletcher conscious of the inferiority, the too poetic *minus-dramatic* nature of his versification, and of which there is neither proof nor likelihood), adds so much to the probability of the latter. On the other hand, the harshness of many of these very passages, a harshness unrelieved by any lyrical inter-breathings, and still more the want of profundity in the thoughts, keep me from an absolute decision."<sup>1</sup> *v. Table Talk*, ii. 119, and J. P. Collier's *Seven Lectures on Shakespeare and Milton* by S. T. C. in 1811, p. xx, ed. 1856.

§ 85. Thomas De Quincey (1785—1859). In my notes, pp. De Quincey. 157 and 168, will be found quoted the two passages in which De

<sup>1</sup> This quotation may also be found in Coleridge's *Shakespeare Notes and Lectures*, p. 317. Howell, Liverpool, 1874.



Quincey alludes to the play. He gives Acts I. and V. to Shakspeare, but apparently without intending to include Act V. sc. ii.

Spalding.

§ 86. William Spalding (1809—1859). *Letter on Shakspeare's Authorship*, &c., reprinted by the New Shakspeare Society. Spalding rejected Shakspeare's claim to any part of the underplot. His division of the play has been given above, § 13. But see Leopold Shakspeare, pref. p. xcvi, and Mr. Furnivall's "Forewords to N. S. S. reprint of Spalding's *Letter*."

Knight.

§ 87. Charles Knight (1791—1873), *Studies of Shakspeare*, pp. 428—447, holds that Fletcher wrote the scenes which are ordinarily ascribed to him (as by Spalding), but that the non-Fletcherian portion was the work of George Chapman. Knight quotes the opinion of Ludwig Tieck (1773—1853), which I may give here (*Alt-Englisches Theater, oder Supplemente zum Shakspeare*):—"I have never been able to convince myself that a single verse has been written by Shakspeare. The manner, the language, the versification, is as thoroughly Fletcher as any other of his pieces," &c. (Knight, *Studies*, p. 442.)

Tieck.

H. Coleridge.

§ 88. Hartley Coleridge (1796—1849), *Essays and Marginalia*, vol. ii. pp. 137—8:—"There is a dialogue of maiden friendship in the *Two Noble Kinsmen* so like this [*Midsummer Night's Dream*, 'Lo, she is one of the confederacy,' III. ii.], that many have ascribed it to Shakspeare. But it was not Shakspeare's way to emulate himself. The resemblance of this scene is *primâ facie* evidence that it is not Shakspeare's. It is, besides, quite in the best manner of Fletcher, who, when he was not lazy, generally did his best, said all the good things that could be said on a given subject without much caring whether the occasion justified them or not. Hence Fletcher is much less injured by discription than Shakspeare. A quoted passage of Fletcher may be thoroughly understood with very little previous explanation. But Shakspeare's best things are absolutely slandered when separated from the context. In the present case, Emilia's description of her own affection to Flavia [Flavina] is a better piece of writing than Helena's reproach of Hermia; but it is a deliberate piece of good writing, an ornate wax taper ceremoniously consecrated at the shrine of

I. iii

female friendship, whereas Helena's speech is the quick combustion of love and anger. Still it must be confessed that if Fletcher did write the speech of Emilia, he has imitated Shakspeare's diction and versification very closely.

"P. S. I am now convinced that the scene in the *Two Noble Kinsmen* is Shakspeare's." See also *Essays and Marginalia*, vol. i. p. 362.

§ 89. George Darley, preface to Weber's text of *B. & F.* Darley. (Moxon, 1839), says:—"Shakspeare has been deemed part-author, with Fletcher, of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, from a superiority to Fletcher's usual style, and a resemblance to Shakspeare's. Imitation of the latter poet by the former might account in some degree for both these facts, if such; a lower artist imitating a higher, will often surpass himself; he makes a greater effort, and has a nobler model, than usual. The other Fine Arts offer frequent examples of this. But it is quite possible, also, that Shakspeare may have contributed towards the *Two Noble Kinsmen*. Not only are several speeches (*vide* Act V. scs. i., ii., iii. [*i. e.* V. i.]) after his 'enormous' style of conception, but his enormous style of handling or [?] and] versification, so different from Fletcher's. Palamon [read *Arcite*] supplicates the statue of Mars," &c., p. xlii.

§ 90. Alexander Dyce (1798—1869) has expressed several Dyce. opinions on the play. See above, § 5, and Dyce's prefaces to his various editions of this play. Dyce began by denying Shakspeare any share in the composition, but ended by accepting the conclusions of Spalding's *Letter*.

§ 91. Henry Hallam (1777—1859), *Literature of Europe*, vol. Hallam. iii. p. 598, sees "imitations of Shakspeare rather than such resemblances as denote his powerful stamp. The madness of the jailor's daughter, where some have imagined they saw the master-hand, is doubtless suggested by that of Ophelia, but with an inferiority of taste and feeling, which it seems impossible not to recognize. The painful and degrading symptom of female insanity, which Shakspeare has touched with his gentle hand, is dwelt upon by Fletcher with all his innate impurity. Can anyone believe that the former would have written the last scene in which the jailor's daughter appears on the stage [V. ii.]?"

*Quarterly  
Review.*

§ 92. *Quarterly Review*, vol. 83, pp. 403—7, on Dyce's *B. & F.*, Sept. 1848, gives a convenient *resumé* of the opinions previously expressed. "We have a hideous Ophelia in the Jailer's Daughter, the clowns are like those in the *Midsummer Night's Dream*, and the schoolmaster resembles Holofernes . . ." "We confess it seems to us less unlikely that Fletcher produced the main body of the drama, and obtained help from his great contemporary in the subordinate passages; or, which we incline to believe—for we think that, in the absence of positive or strong outward evidence, these questions of authorship cannot be positively determined—that he wrote the whole himself."

Gervinus.

§ 93. Georg Gottfried Gervinus (1805—1871), *Sh. Commentaries*, vol. ii. p. 504 (trans. by F. E. Bunnett):—"We are, therefore, of Staunton's opinion, who would as little impute to Shakespeare a share in this as in any of the plays falsely awarded to him."

Staunton.

Mitford.

§ 94. John Mitford (1831—1859), *Cursory Notes on various passages in the Text of B. & F.*:—"He [Theseus, referring to the speech in Act I.]<sup>1</sup> thus confesses his weakness, and feels that the moral balance of the affections had been disturbed, and the power of nature oppressed and injured by the force of the various conflicts to which they had been unequally exposed. It is indeed a speech, that in its reflective and philosophical sentiments bears the impress of Hamlet's character, and marks similar to those of Shakespeare's hand.<sup>2</sup> At least the varied and beautiful ground-work here laid might have heightened into a character of noble lights and shadows in the future scenes by the hand of a master; but it is subsequently so faded and lost sight of, that we may be inclined to believe the remainder of the play to have fallen into the hands of an inferior artist, who had not power to sustain the original conception; certainly a composition offering stronger contrasts of excellence and weakness, of natural powers and artificial effect, can perhaps seldom be found."

Hickson

§ 95. Samuel Hickson, in *The Westminster and Foreign Quar-*

<sup>1</sup> See § 46 *supra*, written before I had seen these remarks of Mitford's.

<sup>2</sup> In this play, concerning the authorship of which there is so much variety of opinion, I certainly am inclined to agree with Mr. Hallam in seeing *imitations of Shakespeare* rather than such resemblances as denote his powerful stamp.

*terly Review* for April, 1847, reprinted in *N. S. S. Trans.* for 1874, Appendix, p. 25\*.

Hickson's division has been given above, § 13. With Spalding's *Letter*, his paper should be read by all students of the play.

§ 96. Samuel Weller Singer (1783—1858) seems to have Singer. admitted Shakspeare to a share in the play, but has evidently given the subject no attention. See above, § 49.

§ 97. Mr. James Spedding, letter from *Gentleman's Magazine*, Spedding. reprinted in *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, App. p. 21.

Also note at p. 18, approving of Hickson's theory with regard to the underplot.

§ 98. Sidney Walker, *Critical Examination of the Text of Shake-* Walker. *speare*, i. 227, ii. 75, gives all act I. and act V. sc. i. to Shakspeare.

§ 99. Dr. Clement Mansfield Ingleby, *Complete View of the* Ingleby. *Shakespeare Controversy*, 1861, p. 16 :—"In the same year (1623) his fellows, Heminge and Condell, issued the first folio edition of his plays complete, with the exception of *Pericles* and the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, of considerable parts of which he was unquestionably the author." See also *Sh., the Man and the Book*, pt. i., p. 61.

§ 100. Rev. F. G. Fleay confirms Hickson's division by metrical Fleay. tests, *Sh. Manual*, p. 52, but forgets here to give the two prose scenes, II. i. and IV. iii., to Shakspeare as he had done in *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, App. p. 61.

§ 101. Professor A. W. Ward, *English Dramatic Literature*, Ward. vol. i. p. 466, reviews some of the leading theories, and inclines to Collier's view,<sup>1</sup> "that Shakspeare remodelled an old play called *Palamon and Arsett* (1594), and that Fletcher afterwards produced another version, in which he retained all of Shakspeare's 'additions,' though 'tampering with them here and there.'" But on the whole, Professor Ward remains "sceptical with regard to" the opinion that the play was written conjointly by Shakspeare and Fletcher, vol. ii. p. 232. He refers to H. von Friesen's paper in *Jahrb.* for 1865 for H. von Friesen. other reasons against Shakspeare's claim.

<sup>1</sup> Prof. Ward, i. 466, wrongly ascribes this view to Dyce instead of Collier. A few lines down he also writes Dyce instead of Darley, quoting from the passage given by me in § 89.



- W. C. Hazlitt. § 102. Mr. W. C. Hazlitt, *Shakespeare's Library*, vol. iv. p. 112, says:—"Assuming the first, and portions of the last, act to be Shakespeare's, we are perhaps authorized to assume that the poet died, leaving this much written, and that for the rest we are debtors to the pen of Fletcher."
- Delius. § 103. Professor N. Delius rejects the hypothesis that either Shakspeare or Fletcher had a hand in this play, and assigns it some hypothetical "Anonymus." See *Jahrbuch d. d. Sh. Gesellschaft*, vols. xii. and xiii., for a full exposition of the Professor's views.
- Abbott. § 104. Dr. E. A. Abbott, *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, p. 76, quite believes with Mr. Fleay "that Shakspeare's part may be disentangled from the Fletcherian part of the *Two Noble Kinsmen*."
- Nicholson. § 105. Dr. B. Nicholson, in the same discussion (p. 78), agreed with Dr. Abbott's remarks.
- Simpson. § 106. Mr. Richard Simpson (p. 82) "wrote that he had read the *Two Noble Kinsmen* carefully, and agreed with Mr. Hickson and Mr. Fleay in their division of the play," but (p. 83) thought that "the speeches of Arcite in Act I. sc. ii. are Shakspeare's, and not Fletcher's, as Mr. Hickson contends, although they do contain rather over the Shaksperian average of double-ended lines."
- Ingram. § 107. Dr. John Kells Ingram, in his paper on 'The Light- and Weak-Ending Test,' *N. S. S. Trans.*, 1874, pp. 442—464, comes to no definite conclusion about the authorship. His four objections I have taken above (§ 27) as the most convenient statement of the chief arguments against Shakspeare's claim, and to them I may now add his concessions:—"Still, it is certain that there is much in it that is *like* Shakspeare, and some things that are worthy of him at his best; that the manner, in general, is more that of Shakspeare than of any other contemporary dramatist; and that the system of verse is one which we do not find in any other, while it is, in all essentials, that of Shakspeare's last period. I cannot name any one else who could have written this portion of the play." (p. 454.)
- Dowden. § 108. Prof. Edward Dowden, *Shakspeare Primer*, p. 156, like Dr. Ingram, hesitates to express any very positive opinion, but says, "the Shakspeare portions of the play will repay a careful study. The characterisation may be faint, but there are animated pieces of

dialogue, magnificent single speeches, and remarkable Shaksperian turns of expression and imagery. . . . The underplot of Fletcher, made up of indecency and trash in about equal proportions, is but slightly connected with the nobler portion of the drama. Shakspeare's portion was probably written before his latest fragment, that of *Henry VIII*. He was at that time abandoning dramatic authorship, and seems to have been willing that Fletcher should be the heir to his genius."

§ 109. Dr. Hermann Ulrici (*b.* 1806), *Sh.'s Dramatic Art* Ulrici. (transl. L. D. Schmidt, vol. ii. pp. 403—411), examines the play at some length, and concludes that it is by Fletcher in imitation of Shakspeare.

§ 110. Mr. F. J. Furnivall has had several opinions on the Furnivall. question of authorship. At first, carried away by Hickson's paper and the wave of metrical tests which inundated criticism in 1874, he accepted Hickson's division. But "the light that lies in woman's eyes"—"the cleverest and most poetic-natured girl-friend" (p. vii, Spalding), helped Mr. Furnivall to a second opinion. In his Forewords to the Society's reprint of Spalding (p. ix), he does not think the "evidence that Shakspeare wrote all the parts that either Prof. Spalding or Mr. Hickson assigns to him, at all conclusive. If it could be shown that Beaumont or any other author wrote the supposed Shakspeare parts, and that Shakspeare toucht them up, that theory would suit me best. It failing, I accept, for the time, Shakspeare as the second author, subject to Fletcher having spoilt parts of his conception and work."

In the *Leopold Shakspeare, Introduction*, p. xcix, Mr. Furnivall's "present feeling is to substitute 'some' for the word 'many' in the passage" to be next quoted, from

§ 111. Mr. J. Herbert Stack's paper appended to the Society's Stack. reprint of Spalding, p. 116:—"I should incline to the middle opinion,<sup>1</sup> that Shakspeare selected the subject, began the play, wrote

<sup>1</sup> I have to request owners of the Society's reprint of Spalding to cancel the note on p. 116 (with my initials): it is an extract from a private letter, not intended for publication, and written before I had made up my mind on the subject.—H. L.

many passages; had no underplot, and generally left it in a skeleton state; that Fletcher took it up, patched it here and there, and added an underplot; that Fletcher, not Shakspeare, is answerable for all the departures from Chaucer, for all the underplot, and for the revised play as it stands."

Skeat.

§ 112. Prof. W. W. Skeat's division has been given above, § 13. Prof. Skeat thinks that Fletcher has touched up the speeches of Palamon and Emilia, and does "not feel convinced that we have Shakespeare's work in ll. 1—17, or much beyond l. 68" of Act V. sc. i. On the whole he accepts Hickson's division, though with some hesitation as regards III. ii., IV. iii., and certain parts of V. i. Prof. Skeat dates the play 1612. "It may be remembered that the date of our Authorised Version of the Bible is 1611; so that we may fairly suppose our play to have been nearly contemporaneous with the publication of that important Book" (p. xxi).

Swinburne.

§ 113. Mr. A. C. Swinburne, *A Study of Shakespeare*, pp. 93, 142, 215—220. "Among all competent scholars and all rational students of Shakespeare there can have been, except possibly with regard to three of the shorter scenes, no room for doubt or perplexity on any detail of the subject since the perfect summary and the masterly decision of Mr. Dyce [? Spalding]. These three scenes, as no such reader will need to be told or reminded, are the two first soliloquies of the Gaoler's Daughter after the release of Palamon, and the scene of the portraits, as we may in a double sense call it, in which Emilia, after weighing against each other in solitude the likenesses of the cousins, receives from her own kinsfolk a full and laboured description of their leading champions on either side. Even setting apart for once and for a moment the sovereign evidence of mere style, we must recognise in this last instance a beautiful and significant example of that loyal and loving fidelity to the minor passing suggestions of Chaucer's text which on all possible occasions of such comparison so markedly and vividly distinguishes the work of Shakespeare's from the work of Fletcher's hand. Of the pestilent abuse and perversion to which Fletcher has put the perhaps already superfluous hints or sketches by Shakespeare for an episodic underplot, in his transmutation of Palamon's love-stricken and luckless



deliverer into the disgusting burlesque of a mock Ophelia, I have happily no need as I should certainly have no patience to speak." In a note, Mr. Swinburne adds: "Except perhaps one little word of due praise for the pretty imitation or recollection of his dead friend Beaumont rather than of Shakespeare, in the description of the crazed girl whose 'careless tresses a wreath of bullrush rounded, where she sat playing with flowers for emblems at a game of love and sorrow—but liker in all else to Bellario by another fountain-side than to Ophelia by the brook of death."

I have refrained from obtruding corrections upon the various opinions here briefly enumerated, but I must ask, are we to understand from the words "dead friend Beaumont" that Mr. Swinburne places the completion of this play after Beaumont's death, March 6th, 1616? If so, we might expect "dead friend Shakespeare" also, as he died on the 23rd of the succeeding month.

§ 114. I have to thank Miss Eleanor Marx for her great kindness in hunting up and transcribing in full the opinions *and arguments* of the critics named in the following §§:—72, 73, 74, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80, 81, 82, 84, 88, 92, 94, and 99. Thanks.

In addition to the acknowledgments already expressed (*Bibliography*, p. xii) to several gentlemen for their assistance, I have to renew my thanks to Mr. Furnivall for the care with which he has seen this part of my work through the press, and for the useful headings which he has placed to the pages. I am also indebted to him for many valuable suggestions, received from time to time, which I have embodied in my work.

§ 115. The Society has now a fairly complete Trial-Edition of this "Doubtful Play," including Bibliographical Preface, Literal reprint of the Quarto, Folio Collation, chief critical variations, revised text, copious notes, Introductory Dissertation on the three-fold subject of source, authorship, and date; synoptical History of Opinion, and Concordance to every important word in the play. Conclusion.

My final revisions of the text will be found in the *Leopold Shakspeare*.

For seven years I have had some part or other of this work on my hands, and have gradually got through it, amid great distractions



and hindrances to continuous study. Palamon and Arcite have been my companions in many places: on the hills of Wicklow, in the Libraries of Trinity College, Dublin, and the British Museum, beneath the pines of the Black Forest, in the pleasant fields of Leicestershire, and amid the brighter surroundings of my Indian home.

Here, thanks to my wife's help, the Introduction and Concordance have been finished, at least two years sooner than without her aid would have been possible, and my task is done at last.

HAROLD LITTLEDALE.

*Baroda, India, Sept. 5th, 1880.*

## POSTSCRIPT.

I ADD here a few parallels to those given in my Introduction to the *Two Noble Kinsmen*, to illustrate coincidences of thought and expression between Shakspeare's undoubted works and that play.

- (1) *Othello*, III. iii. 386 :

"If there be cords, or knives,  
Poison, or fire, or suffocating streams,  
I'll not endure it."

- 2 *N. K.*, I. i. 142 :

"Cords, knives, drams, precipitance."

- (2) *Ant. and Cleopatra*, IV. xiii. 161 :

"as it determines, so  
Dissolve my life."

- 2 *N. K.*, III. ii. 29 :

"Dissolve my life."

- (3) *Ant. and Cleopatra*, V. ii. 231 :

"And when thou hast done this chare."

- 2 *N. K.*, III. ii. 20 :

"All's char'd when he is gone."

- (4) *Ant. and Cleopatra*, II. i. 26 :

"That sleep and feeding may prorogue his honour  
Even till a Lethe'd dullness."

- |   |                              |
|---|------------------------------|
| { | 2 <i>N. K.</i> , I. i. 196 : |
|   | "Prorogue this business."    |
|   | 2 <i>N. K.</i> , I. i. 159 : |
| { | "his army full               |
|   | Of bread and sloth."         |

- (5) 2 *Henry IV.*, I. i. 192—200 :

"My lord, your son had only but the corpse,  
But shadows and the shows of men to fight ;  
For that same word, rebellion, did divide  
The action of their bodies from their souls ;  
And they did fight with queasiness, constrained,  
As men drink potions, that their weapons only  
Seem'd on our side ; but, for their spirits and souls,  
That word, rebellion, it had froze them up,  
As fish are in a pond."

{ 2 *N. K.*, I. ii. 96; I. ii. 112.  
 { 2 *N. K.*, III. i. 66:

“Their valiant temper  
 Men lose when they incline to treachery;  
 And then they fight like compell’d bears,  
 Would fly, were they not tied.”

(6) 2 *Henry IV.*, II. iii. 21—32:

“he was indeed the glass  
 Wherein the noble youth did dress themselves;  
 He had no legs that practised not his gait,” &c.  
 (See passage.)

2 *N. K.*, I. ii. *passim*; note l. 44:

“what need I  
 Affect another’s gait,” &c.

(7) *Mid. Night’s Dream*, IV. i. 182:

“We’ll hold a feast in great solemnity.  
 Come, Hippolyta.”

2 *N. K.*, I. i. 221:

“the feast’s solemnity  
 Shall want till your return.”

Especially weigh the following parallels:—

(8) *Ant. and Cleopatra*, III. iv. 12—20:

(*Octavia*) . . . . “A more unhappy lady,  
 If this division chance, ne’er stood between,  
 Praying for both parts:  
 The good gods will mock me presently,  
 When I shall pray, ‘O, bless my lord and husband!’  
 Undo that prayer, by crying out as loud,  
 ‘O, bless my brother!’ Husband win, win brother,  
 Prays, and destroys the prayer; no midway  
 ’Twixt these extremes at all.”

2 *N. K.*, V. i. 151—160.

(9) *Sonnet cxlvi.*:

“My love is as a fever, longing still  
 For that which longer nurseth the disease;  
 Feeding on that which doth preserve the ill,  
 The uncertain sickly appetite to please.”

2 *N. K.*, I. iii. 89:

“a sickly appetite  
 That loathes even as it longs.”

## INDEX.

- A. i. ind. art.** *Prol.* 3, 10, 11, 16, 19, 31; I.1.60, 89, 94, 96, 98, 112, 119, 123, 127, 130, 184; II.2.39, &c. **An. Prol.** 22; I.1.16; II.1.17, &c.
- ii. *ellipsis of a*: sounds more like a bell than [—] blade, V.3.6.
- iii. the cry 's 'a Palamon, V.3.67, 80.
- iv. *suffix to refrains*: Barbary-a! III.5.60; by one, by two, by three-a, 62; bound-a, 64; sound-a, 66; Down-a, IV.3.9.
- v. (= *on*): hallooing of people a-Maying, III.1. *st. dir.*; now I'm set abegging, III.6.238; aboard, II.3.32; ahunting, III.3.40; III.6.108; I'll be cut apieces, III.6.256.
- vi. (= *of*): Light-a-Love, *v. Light o' Love*, V.2.54.
- vii. many a murder, V.3.27; V.4.1; *Epil.* 16.
- Abandoner.** *n.* — of revels, V.1.138.
- Abate.** *See* Bate.
- Abatement.** *n.* make no —, I.1.225.
- Able.** *adj.* being — to make, I.1.181; 176; III.6.9; he lisps in 's neighing — to entice a miller's mare, V.2.66.
- superl.* **Ablest.** my — service, II.5.26.
- Aboard.** *adv.* Clap her —, II.3.32.
- Aborne.** *adj.* (= *Auburn*) not wanton-white, but such a manly colour, next to an —, IV.2.125.
- About.** *prep.* i. — that neck, I.1.197; to swell — the blossom, I.3.68; III.5.67; III.6.1; have the agony of love — them, III.6.219; IV.1.84; IV.2.137; IV.2.145.
- ii. to fight — you, III.6.221.
- iii. 'tis bad he goes —, I.2.98; this business we are going —, I.1.196; what broken piece of matter soe'er she's —, IV.3.6.
- About.** *adv.* we shall tack —, *Prol.* 26; tack —, III.4.10.
- Above.** *prep.* I.1.228; II.1.27; III.4.19; V.1.5; V.4.136.
- Abroad.** *adv.* i. to live — (= *out of captivity*), II.2.98.
- ii. I must be — (= *out of doors*), IV.1.110.
- iii. there be tales — (= *in circulation*), III.3.38.
- iv. blown — (= *far and wide*), III.5.116.
- Absent.** *adj.* not an angel of the air be — hence, I.1.18.
- Absolute.** *adj.* a pair of — men (= *perfect*), II.1.25.
- Abstaining.** *n.* by th' — of my joy, I.1.189.
- Abstinence.** *n.* in — we shame as in incontinence, I.2.6.
- Abuse.** *v. t.* — young lays of love (= *misuse, mar*), V.1.89.
- Acceptance.** *n.* grace and — into her favour, IV.3.78.
- Accompany.** *v. t.* —ied with three fair knights, III.6.291.
- Account.** *n.* casts himself th' —s, V.2.58.
- Account.** *v. t.* would — I had a great pen'worth on 't, IV.3.58.
- Accurst.** *adj.* stand — of many mortal millions, V.3.23.
- Achieve.** *v. t.* Your office unjustly is —d (= *obtained*), III.1.112.
- Acknowledge.** *v. t.* — to the gods, V.4.100.



- Acquaint.** *v. t.* I was —ed once with, I.3.49.
- Acquaintance.** *n. i.* crave our — (= *knowledge*), II.2.91.  
ii. friends, —, II.2.81.
- Act.** *n.* (= *deed*) sacred — V.1.165; deny my, — III.2.24; I.2.69; I.1.164.
- Act.** *v. t.* (= *perform*) — it in your glass, III.1.70; nature now shall make and — the story, V.3.14.
- Action.** *n.* (= *deed*) this good —, I.1.102; your premeditating more than their —s, but oh Jove! your —s, soon as they move, as asprays do the fish, subdue before they touch, I.1.137, 173; his —'s dregged with mind assur'd 'tis bad he goes about, I.2.97.
- Active.** *adj.* an — soul, IV.2.126.
- Add.** *v. t.* thou —'st flames, V.1.91.
- Addition.** *n.* make an — of some, IV.3.73.
- Adieu.** *interj.* I.4.12; V.4.37.
- Admire.** *v. t.* Chaucer, of all —d, *Prolog.* 13; II.5.17.
- Adopt.** *v. t.* whom I — my friends, V.4.124.
- Advance.** i. *v. intrans.* all shall presently —, III.5.134.  
ii. *v. trans.* require him he — it o'er our heads, I.1.93; — my streamer, V.1.59; our hands —d before our hearts, I.2.112; see what our general . . . . . with sacred act —s, V.1.165.
- Advantage.** *n.* sharp to spy —s, IV.2.133; I will make th' — of this hour mine own, III.6.123.
- Adventure.** *n. i.* at — (= *by chance*), I.3.75.  
ii. put off this great — to a second trial (= *attempt*), III.6.119.
- Adversity.** *n.* they have patience to make any — ashamed, II.1.22.
- Advertise.** *v. t.* you have been well —d how much I dare, III.1.58.
- Advice.** *n.* I.2.12; V.2.1; th' — of fears, III.1.60.
- Advise.** *v. t.* what I shall be —d, I.3.16.
- Advocate.** *n.* be — for us and our distresses, I.1.31.
- Affect.** *v. t. i.* (= *imitate*) — another's gait, I.2.45.  
ii. (= *love*) he never will — me, II.4.2; she ever —ed any man, IV.3.54.
- Affection.** *n. i.* (= *love*), II.2.212; III.6.51; preserve the honour of —, III.6.269.  
ii. (= *fancies, tastes*) her —s, pretty, though haply her careless wear, I.3.72.  
iii. (= *inclinations*) those best —s that the heavens infuse in their best-temper'd pieces, I.3.9.  
iv. (= *desire, passion*) mak'st — bend, I.1.229; am not I liable to those —s, II.2.188.
- Affliction.** *n.* — a toy to jest at, II.1.33.
- Afford.** *v. t.* human grace —s them dust and shadow, I.1.145.
- Afire.** *adv.* set Jove —, IV.2.16.
- Afoot.** *adv.* is't said this war's —, I.2.104; II.5.53.
- Afore.** *prep.* hang your shield — your heart, I.1.196.
- After.** *adj.* curses . . . of — ages, III.6.187.
- After.** *prep. i.* — holy tie, *Prolog.* 6; II.2.116; III.1.16, 86; III.3.19, 30; IV.2.111.  
ii. is gone — his fancy (*may mean 'according to his inclination,' or 'to follow his love'*), III.2.2.
- After.** *adv.* (= *afterwards*) and — eat them, I.3.21; II.4.26.
- Afternoon.** *n.* II.5.46.
- Afterward.** *adv.* hang for 't —, II.2.266.
- Again.** *adv.* I.2.82; I.5.12; II.2.19, 142, 179, 233, 250; II.3.33, 48, 49; II.6.21; III.1.82; III.3.43, 49; III.5.74, 145, 153; III.6.2, 9, III.154, 289, 292, 300;

- IV.1.92; IV.3.62; V.1.32; V.2.17, 98; V.3.126.
- Against.** *prep.* i. Do we all hold — the Maying? (= *do we all undertake to be ready for*) II.3.35.
- ii. exclaim'd — the horses, I.2.86; I.3.97; II.2.35; III.1.61; III.4.26; III.6.145; V.1.22; V.1.98; — his conscience *Epil.* 8.
- iii. *written* 'gainst: I.1.123, 127; III.6.230; V.3.8.
- Age.** *n.* i. like —, must run to rust, II.2.22, 28; to glad our —, II.2.34; IV.2.116; his —, IV.2.139; loathsome misery of —, V.4.7.
- ii. the curses . . . of after —s, III.6.187.
- Aged.** *adj.* the — forest, II.2.47; the — cramp, V.1.110 (= *the cramp of old age*).
- Agent.** *n.* death's most horrid —s, I.1.144.
- Aghast.** *adj.* make lanes in troops —, I.4.19.
- Agony.** *n.* the — of love, III.6.219.
- Agree.** *v. i.* That's as we bargain, madam. Well, — then (= *come to terms*), II.2.153.
- Aha.** *interj.* V.4.23.
- Aid.** *n.* V.1.47; swim i' th' — o' th' current [*Theob. conj.* 'head'], I.2.8.
- Aiglet.** *n.* the little stars and all that look like —s, III.4.2.
- Ail.** *v. t.* what should — us? (*see note*) II.3.37.
- Air.** *n. i.* (= *climate*) our kind —, to them unkind, I.4.38.
- ii. (= *tune*) had mine ear stol'n some new —, or at adventure humm'd one from musical coinage, I.3.75.
- iii. (= *atmosphere*) angel of the — (= *bird*), I.1.16; clamours through the wild — flying, I.5.6; by this —! III.1.103.
- Akin.** *adj.* new plays and maiden-heads are near —, *Prol.* 1.
- Alack.** *interj.* Lady, lady, —! I.3.113, 86.
- Alacrity.** *n.* no stirring in him, no —, IV.2.29.
- Alarm.** *n.* turn th' — to whispers, V.1.81.
- Alas.** *interj.* I.1.124; I.2.111; II.1.2; III.1.22; III.2.28; III.4.4; III.6.185; IV.1.32; IV.1.94; IV.2.51; IV.3.26, 53; V.2.14, 57, 96; V.3.104.
- Alcides.** *pr. n.* — was to him a sow of lead, V.3.119.
- Aliis.** *Latin.* III.5.133.
- Alive.** *adj.* many a man —, V.4.1.
- All.** *pron.* of — admir'd, *Prol.* 13; I.1.34, 38, 70, 225; I.2.115; —s done, II.2.68; II.3.33, 36, 41; II.5.49; III.2.21, 38; III.3.50; III.4.9; III.5.109, 134; III.6.20, 46, 78, 239; IV.1.15, 131; V.1.100; V.3.121; — hail! III.5.100.
- All.** *adj.* I.1.12, 114, 173, 192; I.4.2, 30, 46; I.5.7; II.1.23; II.2.40, 44, 51, 57, 70, 100, 122, 135, 148, 169, 174, 176, 208, 237; II.3.6, 46; II.5.10, 28, 29, 60; II.6.1; III.1.6, 19, 33; III.2.36; III.3.14, 48; III.4.1, 2, 13; III.5.11, 39, 147, 152, 158; III.6.51, 92, 115, 126, 153, 194, 200, 202, 203, 206, 207, 208, 229, 246, 257, 280, 297; IV.1.51, 75, 124, 126, 128, 129, 134, 138; IV.2.8, 24, 30, 93, 99, 113, 141; IV.3.15, 21, 74; V.2.53, 59; V.3.69, 139, 142; V.4.23, 32, 36, 71, 91; *Epil.* 17.
- All.** *adv.* the — fear'd gods, V.1.13; at —, II.2.166, 167; — o'er the prison, II.6.36; that's — one, II.3.31; V.2.16, 32, 85; the — noble Theseus, I.3.93; our — royal brother, I.3.12; — moist and cold, V.1.93.
- Alliance.** *n.* end of our —, V.4.85.
- Allow.** *v. t. i.* (= *permit*) —'st no more blood than, V.1.141.
- ii. (= *commend, recommend*) run the best and wrestle that these times can —, II.5.4.
- Allowance.** *n.* (= *credence*) which superstition here finds —, V.4.54.

- Almost.** *adv.* — breathless, *Prol.* 24; — to sink, I.2.8, 62, 65; II.2.96; II.6.17; III.6.207; V.1.114.
- Alone.** *adj.* grow — unplucked, V.1.168.
- Alone.** *adv.* not royal in their smells —, I.1.2; I.2.66; II.2.193; III.5.31; let 'em all —, IV.1.126, 144; — and only beautiful, IV.2.37.
- Along.** *adv.* Thou wilt not go — ? (*sc.* with us) II.3.69; carry our swords and cause — (*sc.* with us), III.6.260.
- Aloof.** *adv.* standing —. *St. Dir* p. 88.
- Alow!** *interj.* (= 'halloa!') See Notes) III.5.59.
- Also.** *adv.* yea, the speed —, V.1.41.
- Altar.** *n.* Mars's —, I.1.62; Mars's so-scorn'd —, I.2.20; IV.2.61; V.1.3, 12, 143, 164; V.4.105.
- Alter.** *v. i.* — to the quality of his thoughts (= *changes according to*), V.3.47.
- Although.** *adv.* III.1.27.
- Altogether.** *adv.* IV.3.4.
- Amazonian.** *n.* honour'd Hippolyta, most dreaded —, I.1.78.
- Ambitious.** *adj.* too — to aspire to him, *Prol.* 23.
- Amen.** *n.* I cry — to 't, I.4.3.
- Amiss.** *adj.* how prettily she 's — (= *insane, aberrant*), IV.3.24.
- Among.** *prep.* III.5.3.
- Among.** *adv.* and still — intermingle your petition, IV.3.77.
- Amongst.** *prep.* II.2.12; IV.3.31.
- An.** *i. indef. art.* See **A**.
- ii. (= *if*) — 't ought to be, I.3.4; I were a beast — I 'd call it good sport [*Qo. and*], IV.3.45; — we should give [*Qo. and*], V.2.29; nay — she fail me once [*Qo. and*], III.5.46.
- Anatomy.** *n.* this — (= *decayed old man*), V.1.115.
- Ancient.** *adj.* our — love [*Qo. auncient*], III.3.11; V.1.26; I.2.22.
- And.** *i.* (*for An = if*) III.5.46; IV.3.45; V.2.29.
- ii. *conj.* — if he lose, II.2.255. *Prol.* 1, 3, 5, 6, 10, 11, 12, 16, 18, 20, 23, 24, 26, 27; I.1.6, 14, 25, 26, 27, 28, 30, 32, 51, 53, 54, 55, 69, 73, 76, 103, 128, 132, 145, 147, 150, 158, &c.
- Anew.** *adv.* retain, — I.2.24.
- Angel.** *n.* — of the air (= *bird of good omen*) [*Qo. Angle*], I.1.16.
- Anger.** *n. i. singular:* content and —, III.1.107; III.6.26, 189, 227; V.1.11.
- ii. *plural:* —s, fears, II.2.189.
- Anger.** *v. t.* to — thee, II.2.219; with our patience — tott'ring fortune, V.4.20.
- Angle.** *n.* I then left my — to his own skill (= *rod and line*), IV.1.59.
- Angle.** *v. i.* as I late was —ing, IV.1.52.
- Angry.** *adj.* the — swine, II.2.49; IV.1.41; IV.2.100.
- Anly.** See **Aulis**.
- Anon.** *adv.* (= *presently, immediately*) I 'll speak —, I.1.106; now . . . — the other, then, V.3.126; V.3.81.
- Another.** *i. adj.* III.6.230; III.5.146; just such — (*sc. eye*), IV.2.15.
- ii. *pron.* I.2.45, 47; I.3.31, 64, 69; II.2.41; II.3.21; II.2.195, 212; III.1.60; III.6.197, 220, 225, 256; IV.1.44; IV.2.116; IV.3.5; V.1.22.
- Answer.** *n.* this gentleness of —, III.1.48.
- Answer.** *v.* if he not —ed, III.2.10; I called him now to —, III.6.151; she —ed me, IV.1.38.
- Antique.** *n.* (= *antic*) all we 'll dance an — 'fore the duke, IV.1.75.
- Any.** *pron.* like such a woman as — of us three, I.1.95; love — that's call'd man, I.3.85; III.1.89; V.3.36.
- Any.** *adj.* I.1.23; I.1.172; to ask you — thing, I.1.204, 209; I.2.



- 50; I.3.3; II.1.22; II.2.112, 146, 182; by — means (= *all*), II.3.51; by — means (= *all*), II.3.56; II.4.12; II.5.55; III.1.8, 46, 66; by — means (= *all*), III.5.135; — thing, III.6.27; by — means (= *all*), III.6.58; — thing, III.6.234, 241, 263, 281; IV.3.54; by — means (= *all*), IV.2.65; V.2.1, 17, 53; V.3.89; — jot, V.4.71; *Epil.* 14.
- Ape.** *n.* fear that —s can tutor 's, I.2.43.
- Apieces.** *adv.* I'll be cut —, III.6.256.
- Apollo.** *pr. n.* great —'s mercy, I.4.46; V.1.83.
- Appal.** *v. t.* who where he threatens, —s, I.2.90.
- Appear.** *v. i.* may yet — worth, *Prol.* 28; II.1.5; —s, III.5.13, 122; III.6.292; IV.1.86; in 's face —s all the fair hopes (*note plural subject, singular verb*), IV.2.98, 106, 153; — with tokens, IV.3.80; V.4.85.
- Appetite.** *n. i.* (= *desire for food*) a sickly —, I.3.89; without —, IV.3.4.  
*ii.* (= *sensual desire*) please her —, V.2.36.
- Appliance.** *n.* come in with my — (= *application*), IV.3.87.
- Appoint.** *v. t.* making battle thus like knights —ed (= *armed*, &c.), III.6.134.
- Appointment.** *n.* with these hands, void of — (= *arms and armour*), III.1.40; men of great quality, as may be judged by their — (= *attire*), I.4.15.
- Apprehension.** *n.* the seeds of fear, and th' — which still is farther off it, V.1.36. (*See Notes.*)
- Approach.** *n.* whose —, V.1.50.
- Approach.** *v. i.* let him —, I.2.93; that next —es, V.4.84.
- Approacher.** *n.* gout and rheum, that in lag hours attend for grey —s, V.4.9.
- Approve.** *v. t.* what she liked was then of me —d, I.3.65; I have seen it —d (= *tested*), IV.3.84.
- Apricocke, Apricot.** *n.* yon blooming —, II.2.238.
- Apt.** *adj. compar.* so —er to make (= *readier*), IV.2.97.
- Arbitrament.** *n.* the gods, by their divine —, V.3.107.
- Arbitrator.** *n.* the event, that never-erring —, I.2.114.
- Arbour.** *n.* she met him in an —, III.3.33.
- Arcas.** (*name of a rustic*) II.3.37; III.5.46.
- Arched.** *adj.* a brow, — like the great-ey'd Juno's, IV.2.20.
- Arcite.** *pr. n.* I.4.23; II.1.48; II.2.6, 14, 46, 49, 96, 107, 113, 132, 135, 172, 187, 203, 223, 246, 252, 257; III.1.44, 87, 91; III.3.2, 4, 8, 28, 32; III.6.7, 43, 65, 70, 106, 131, 140, 263, 299; IV.2.7, 14, 43, 48, 76; V.2.90; V.3.41, 50, 57, 58, 79, 90, 93, 96, 121; V.4.54, 78, 86, 107, 126.
- Ardently.** *adv.* your sorrow beats so — upon me, I.1.126.
- Argue.** *v. t.* We 'll — that hereafter, III.3.5.
- Argument.** *n.* our — is love (= *subject, theme*), V.1.70.
- Arise.** *v. i.* —, great sire, V.4.46.
- Arm.** *n.* (= *limb of the body*) thy — as strong as it is white, I.1.79; I.1.175; the — of the all noble Theseus, I.3.92; II.2.219; my wanton —s (= *branches of a tree*), II.2.239; guides his —, IV.2.102; his —s are brawny, IV.2.126; — oppress'd by —, V.1.22. *See Armed.*
- Arm.** *n.* (= *weapon*) II.2.19; bright —s, II.2.35; call to —s, II.2.250; choose your —s, III.6.45; officers of —s, III.6.135; the weight of —s, IV.2.130.
- Arm.** *v. t.* (= *to provide with weapons*) —ed with thousand Cupids, II.2.31; III.6.28; wilt please you —, III.6.35; III.6.53;



- s in assurance my body to this business, V.1.134.
- Arm.** *v. t.* (= to give the arm to a lady) — your prize (Emilia), V. 3.135. See **Armed**.
- Armed.** *adj.* (= having arms) — long and round [*Seward conj. Arms*], IV.2.85. See **Bare-armed**, III.6.63.
- Armipotent.** *adj.* with hand — [*Qo. armenypotent*], V.1.54.
- Armour.** *n.* III.1.89; III.3.50; two swords and two good —s, III.6.3; III.6.54, 70.
- Army.** *n.* I.1.158; I.3.17; I.4.49; to blast whole —ies more, II. 2.25.
- Arouse.** *v. t.* — your pity, I.2.30.
- Arowze.** See **Arrose**, V.4.104.
- Arraignment.** *n.* no more —, I.3.66.
- Arras.** *n.* did it behind the —, IV.3.47.
- Arrose.** *v. t.* the blissful dew of heaven does — you (= *besprinkle*) [*Qo. arowze*], V.4.104.
- Art.** *n.* scenes, though below his —, may yet appear, *Prol.* 28; how near — can come near their colours, II.2.150; great and fine — in nature, IV.2.123; seemed with strange — to hang, V.4.79.
- Artesius.** *pr. n.* I.1.159 [*Weber in St. Dir. Arbesius*].
- As.** *conj.* weak — we are, *Prol.* 24; and — you wish your womb may thrive with fair ones, I.1.27; III. 6.174, 175; such lamenting — wakes my vengeance, I.1.58, 61, 95; — strong —, I.1.79; I had — lief trace this good action, I. 1.102; soon —, I.1.138; should be — for our health, I.2.110; — I pursue (= *while*), I.3.25; V.3. 111; as soon —, II.1.16; so . . . —, III.2.24; take heed, — you're a gentleman, III.6.303; [strange] — ever you heard, IV.1.133; and — a heated lion, so he looks, IV. 2.82; — I have a soul, I long to see 'em, IV.2.142; — [*Qo. as*, *var. conj.* 'are,' 'ay'], IV.3.18; — 't were, V.3.19; he is a good one — ever struck [*one 'as' omitted*], V.3.109. I.1.80, 103, 138, 169, 187, 193, 211, 217, 231; I.2.7, 29, 41; I.3.36, 90; I.4.14; II.2.13, 104, 109, 153, 163, 164, 165, 173, 180, 181, 182, 201, 215, 236, 242; II.3.15, 30, 66; II.4.9, 10, 16, 28; II.5.27; II.6.19, 22; III.1.45, 69, 70; III.3.37, 47; III. 5.18, 32, 73, 143; III.6.21, 27, 39, 48, 50, 108, 128, 129, 152, 159, 163, 164, 165, 166, 273, 276, 277; IV. 1.26, 40, 43, 52, 72; IV.2.22, 96, 109, 114, 118; IV.3.11, 39, 71, 72, 81; V.1.15, 96, 139, 140; V.3.114, 115; V.4.38, 60.
- Ascend.** *v. i. St. Dir.* p.89, V.1.162.
- Ash.** *n.* to urn their —es, I.1.44; bless my —es, III.6.283; the dead-cold —es of their sons, IV. 2.5.
- Ashamed.** *adj.* II.1.22.
- Ask.** *v. t.* to — you anything, I. 1.204; III.6.91, 168; IV.1.32, 38; IV.2.37, 47, 50, 51; V.1. 105; V.2.5, 18; *Epil.* 1.
- Aspect.** *n.* a most menacing —, V.3.45.
- Aspire.** *v. i.* too ambitious to — to him, *Prol.* 23.
- Aspray.** *n.* as —s do the fish, subdue before they touch, I.1.138.
- Assistant.** *n.* th' —s made a brave redemption, V.3.82.
- Assurance.** *n.* I.3.94; V.1.134.
- Assure.** *v. t.* villainy —d, I.2.64; with mind —d, I.2.97; — upon my daughter, II.1.7; II.5.56; I 'll — you, IV.1.24; IV.3.41; V.2.77.
- At.** *prep.* I.1.60; fortune — you dimpled her cheek with smiles, I.1.65, 84; grinning — the moon, I.1.100, 117, 211; I 'll follow you — heels, I.1.221; I.2.9; is — hand, I.2.92; I.3.22; — adventure, I.3.75; — liberty, I.4.35; II.1.8, 34, 42; II.2.2, 88, 166, 167, 210, 240, 258; II.5.55; II.6.2;

- III.1.26, 88; III.5.16, 24, 124; III.6.60; have — thy life! III.6.131, 177; — better time, IV.1.30; — least two hundred, IV.1.127; IV.3.1; — liberty, V.2.96; have — the worst, *Epil.* 10.
- Athenian.** *n.* —s, III.1.3.
- Athens.** *pr. n.* I.1.223; I.4.49; II.3.46; V.4.55.
- Attend.** *v. t.* as patiently I was —ing sport (= *fishing*), IV.1.55; that in lag hours — for grey approachers, V.4.8.
- Attendance.** *n.* your — cannot please heaven (= *service*), III.1.110.
- Attention.** *n.* lay — to the cry, V.3.91.
- Attentive.** *adv.* — I gave my ear, IV.1.56.
- Attribute.** *v. t.* who only —s the faculties of other instruments to his own nerves and act, I.2.67.
- Auburn.** *See* **Aborne**, IV.2.125.
- Audacity.** *n.* — and manhood, III.5.36.
- Audience.** *n.* due — of the gods, I.2.83.
- Augel.** *Theobald's conj. for* Angel, *Ital.* 'augello,' bird, I.1.16.
- Aught.** *n.* is there — else to say? III.6.93; were there — in me, V.1.20.
- Aulis.** *pr. n.* [O. Edd. Anly] at the banks of —, I.1.212. *See* Notes.
- Aunt.** *n.* mine —'s son, III.6.94.
- Auspiciously.** *adv.* I do take thy signs —, V.1.67.
- Author.** *n.* learned —s, III.5.40.
- Authority.** *n.* of more —, I 'm sure more love, III.6.231.
- Away.** *adv.* [Tyrrell reads 'way for way, I.1.104]; —! II.3.59; and these house-clogs —, III.1.43; — with this strain'd mirth, III.3.43; III.5.71, 92; III.6.66; IV.1.97, 102; V.1.94; I'll — straight, V.2.101; V.3.141.
- Awhile.** *adv.* II.2.225; *Epil.* 3.
- Axe.** *n.* a well-steel'd —, the staff of gold, IV.2.115.
- Ay.** *adv.* [*Quarto always* I] [*Sympson conj.* Ay! for way, I.1.104]; —, do but put, II.3.33; III.5.134; V.2.109.
- Aye.** *n.* for —, I.1.195.
- Babe.** *n.* tell of —s broach'd on the lance, I.3.20; Arcite was no —, V.3.96.
- Bachelor.** *n.* would ha've me di'e a — le'st his ra'ce, V.3.117; the poul'd —, V.1.85 (*in both these passages it is a dissyllable: bach'lor*).
- Back.** *v. t.* [horses] by a pair of kings —t (= *ridden*), III.1.21.
- Backward.** *adv.* presently — the jade comes o'er, V.4.81.
- Bacon.** *n.* a gammon of —, IV.3.32.
- Bad.** *adj.* 'tis — he goes about, I.2.98.
- Baldrick.** *n.* hung by a curious —, IV.2.86.
- Ball.** *See* **Stoolball**, V.2.74.
- Balm.** *n.* our richest —s, I.4.31; —s and gums, I.5.4.
- Band.** *n.* continue in thy — (*sc.* of followers), V.1.162.
- Banish.** *v. t.* —ed the kingdom, II.3.1, 2; II.2.246; III.6.143, 251.
- Banishment.** *n.* III.6.218, 257. *In plural:* our —s, II.2.37; with their —s, III.6.214.
- Bank.** *n. i.* (*of a river*) the — of any nymph, III.1.8.
- ii. (= *embankment*) than humble —s can go to law with waters that drift winds force to raging, V.3.99.
- iii. (= *sea-shore*) the —s of Aulis, I.1.212.
- Banquet.** *n.* [*Qo. banket*] I.1.186; III.1.109; he that led you to this — shall taste to you all, V.4.22.
- Barbary.** *pr. n.* the coast of —a, III.5.60.

**Barbary.** (*name of a country girl*)  
bouncing —, III.5.26.

**Barber.** *n.* I.2.53.

**Bare.** *adj.* — weeds (= *ragged clothes*), I.2.15.

**Bare-armed.** *adv.* Will you fight —? III.6.63.

**Bargain.** *v. i.* as we —, II.2.153.

**Bark.** *v. i.* and when you —, do it with judgment (*spoken to a 'Bavian'*), III.5.37.

**Barlybreak.** (*See Notes*) IV.3.25.

**Base.** *adj.* I am — (= *of mean origin*), II.4.2; — briars, II.2.143; III.3.44; III.6.117. *Comp.*

**Baser:** his — garments, II.5.24; — in it than a cutpurse, II.2.213.

**Basely.** *adv.* to take (= *receive*) my life so —, III.6.267.

**Baseness.** *See* Business, III.1.90.

**Bastard.** *n.* like old Importment's — [*See Notes*], I.3.80.

**Bate.** *v. t.* Keep the feast full, — not an hour on 't, I.1.220.

**Battle.** *n.* [*Qo. bataille*] to strike a — for her, II.2.254; are making —, III.6.134; II.1.28; V.1.166.

**Bavian.** *n.* (= *Baboon. See Notes.*) the — with long tail and eke long tool, III.5.131; where 's the —? [*Qo. Stage Dir. Baum. A misprint for Bavian*], III.5.33.

**Bay.** *n.* that blasts my —s (= *poetic wreath*), *Prol.* 20.

**Bay.** *adj.* A bright — (*sc. horse*), III.6.78.

**Be.** *i.* As a verb of incomplete predication: *Prol.* 1, 5, 7, 9, 16, 21, 22, 24; I.1.18 [*imperat.*], 31, 34, 36, 38, 39, 53, 55, 59, 61, 62, 65, 80, 84, 89, 98, 103, 106, 109, 120, 121, 125, though it *were* made of stone, 129, 132, 135, 144, 147, 166, as much sorry I should — (*sc. to be*) such a suitor, 188, 204, 219; I.2.26, 72, 84, 85, to — neutral to him *were* dishonour, 100; I.3. been [*Qo. bin, as commonly, the spelling being phonetic*], 18; II.2. 105, if he — but one, 198, 201, 236;

II.5.53, 63; III.6. if thou *beest*, 151, that *were* a cruel wisdom, 242; IV.1. — of good comfort, 17, there — new conditions, 29, there *is* at least two hundred [*plural nom., sing. verb*], 127; IV.2. thou *art* alone and only beautiful, 37, 92, —ing so few, 122; IV.3.13, never — enough (*sc. boiled*), 32, I *were* a beast an I 'd call it good sport, 45; V.1. so your help —! 14, *were* [*subj.*], 20, 21, let it —, 33, 46, women 't *were* they wronged [*grammatical subject singular, verb and real subject plural*], 107, 117; V.2.25, he 'll — the death of her, 67; V.3. as 't *were* i' th' night, 19, if I *were* by, 60, *were* they metamorphosed both into one, there *were* no woman worth [*subj.*], 84, 85, 146; V.4. what ending could — of more content, 15, though it *were* too short, 102; *et passim*.

ii. *Intransitively:* what worthy blessing can —, but our imaginations can make it ours, II.2. 77; it must —, IV.2.148; would not, had I kenn'd all that *were* (= *existed*), V.1.100, &c.

**Beak.** *n.* who endure the —s of ravens, I.1.41.

**Beake.** *Qo. for* Brake, *q. v.* III. 2.1.

**Bear.** *v. t. i.* (= *carry or endure*) I.4.37; II.2.3; ever *bore* gentle token, III.1.37; — a guilty business, III.1.90; — the curses else of after ages, III.6.187; he — a charging staff, IV.2.140; — thy yoke, V.1.95; — this [*Arcite's body*] hence, V.4.109.

ii. (= *conduct*) how bravely may he — himself to win her, II.2. 256; — us like the time, V.4. 137.

iii. you — a charge there too (= *have a duty*), V.2.101.

iv. (= *bring forth*) better never *born* [*Qo. borne*] than minister to such harm, V.3.65.

v. (= *steer*) — for it, master, IV. 1.149 [*sc. bear the ship*].



- Bear.** *n.* the lion's and the —s, I.1.53; fight like compell'd —s, III.1.68.
- Beard.** *n.* yet no — has blest him, IV.2.107.
- Beast.** *n.* II.2.99; you are a — now, III.3.47; I were a —, IV.3.45; poor —, V.2.62.
- Beast-eating.** *adj.* the — clown, III.5.131. [See Notes.]
- Beastly.** *adv.* you shall not die thus — (= *like a beast*), III.3.6.
- Beat.** *v. i. intrans.* your sorrow — [as *sunlight*] so ardently upon me, That it shall make a counter-reflect 'gainst My brother's heart, and warm it to some pity, I.1.126; it —s upon it [*ship on rock*], III.4.7; this her mind —s upon, IV.3.68.
- ii. *trans.* women ought to — me, IV.2.36; Philomels — the ear of the night, V.3.124.
- Beauteous.** *adj.* I.1.219; III.1.18.
- Beautiful.** *adj.* alone, and only, —, IV.2.38.
- Beauty.** *n.* her —ies, II.2.142, 148; this —, II.2.154, 155; those —ies in her (= *perfections*), II.2.169; —, II.2.181; a noble —, II.3.11; dearest —, II.5.38; III.6.31, 162, 247; all those —ies (= *beautiful qualities, perfections*), IV.2.8; IV.2.39, 64, 149.
- Because.** *conj.* II.2.195; II.5.44; III.6.244.
- Beck.** See **Brake**, III.2.1.
- Becking.** *n.* follow the — of our chance (= *beckoning*), I.2.116.
- Beckoning.** *n.* with a — informs the tapster to inflame the reckoning, III.5.129.
- Become.** *i. v. i. and pp.* II.6.24; our business is — a nullity, III.5.54; what will — of them, III.6.288; IV.3.70; — the executioners, V.4.121; —s the rider's load, V.4.82.
- ii. *v. t.* may — him (= *suit*), IV.2.31; all this shall — Palamon (= *befit*), IV.3.75; melancholy —s him nobly, V.3.50.
- Bed.** *n.* the honour of your —, I.1.30; what —s our slain kings have, I.1.40 (= *grave*); I.3.52; we 'll to —, V.2.86. See **Death**.
- Bedfellow.** *n.* mercy and manly courage are —s in 's visage, V.3.44.
- Beech.** *n.* a broad —, III.3.41.
- Been.** [*Qo. bin*] I.4.25. See **Be**.
- Before.** *prep.* i. our hands advanced — our hearts (= *further than, doing work which our hearts disapprove of*), I.2.112; — my liberty (= *in preference to*), II.2.160; cure him — Apollo (= *quicker than*), V.1.83. ii. *As ordinarily*: I.1.39, 139, 155; II.1.3; II.3.57; III.1.74; III.4.9; III.5.19, 123; III.6.84, 178, 294; IV.1.4, 75; V.1.1, 12, 31, 38; V.2.23. See 'fore, IV.1.75.
- Before.** *adv.* I.1.211; I.2.4, 58; III.6.257.
- Beg.** *v. t.* myself to —, III.2.23; the man that was —ged and banished, III.6.143; I — first, III.6.209; IV.1.9; never —ged but they prevailed, IV.1.26; IV.1.76.
- Beget.** *v. t.* ever —ting new births of love, II.2.80.
- Begging.** *n.* our holy —, I.1.156; 't is worse to me than —, III.6.266.
- Begin.** *v. t.* I.2.28, 35; I.3.67; V.1.93; V.4.21.
- Beginning.** *n.* a cold —, III.5.101.
- Beguile.** *v. t.* — the gout and rheum, V.4.7.
- Behalf.** *n.* in our —s, II.3.53.
- Behaviour.** *n.* IV.3.8; V.3.118.
- Behest.** *n.* friends' —s, I.4.40.
- Behind.** *prep.* II.2.13; IV.1.53, 99; IV.2.83.
- Behold.** *v. t.* I.1.113; I.4.5; II.2.9, 133; IV.3.55; which never yet *beheld* thing maculate, V.1.145.
- Behoof.** *n.* convent in their —, I.4.31.



- Belief.** *n.* nature now shall make and act the story, the — both seal'd with eye and ear (= *the credibility of the scene*), V.3.14.
- Believe.** *v. t.* I.3.87, 88; II.2.4; —, his mother was a wondrous handsome woman, II.5.19; —, you'll find it so [*See 'leave*], IV.1.47; IV.1.98; IV.3.39; V.1.117, 118.
- Bell.** *n.* Harbinger with her — dim [*See Hairbell*] (= *blossoms*), I.1.9; ring the —, III.2.19; more like a — than blade, V.3.6; play 'qui passa' on the —s and bones, III.5.86; a hawk, and her —s were cut away, III.5.71.
- Bellona.** *n.* The helmeted —, I.1.75; the great — I'll solicit, I.3.13.
- Below.** *prep.* — his art, *Prol.* 28; III.4.20.
- Bend.** *v. t.* mak'st affections —, I.1.229; do the deed with a *bent* brow, III.1.101; — your spirits towards him (= *pray*), V.1.148; his eye is like an engine *bent* (= *cocked*), V.3.42.
- Beneficial.** *adj.* a — foe, III.6.22.
- Benefit.** *n.* a —, a mercy, II.3.1.
- Bent.** *n.* the — of woman's fancy, IV.2.33 (= *the direction of woman's love*).
- Bequeath.** *v. t.* I am a suitor that to your sword you will — this plea, III.1.115; first —ing of the soul to, III.6.148.
- Bereave.** *v. t.* I must awhile — you of your fair cousin's company (= *deprive*), II.2.225.
- Beshrew.** *v. t.* — mine eyes, II.2.158; — my heart, II.5.62.
- Beside.** *adv.* each errant step — is torment (= *each step not progressing directly to a grave is*), III.2.34; —, I have another oath (= *moreover*), III.6.230.
- Besides.** *adv.* —, my father must be hanged, V.2.80.
- Best.** *adj.* — solicitation (= *most favourable*), I.1.170; those — affections, I.3.9; I.3.48; all our — their — skills tender, I.4.46; II.2.136; II.3.77; my — piece, II.5.14; III.2.32, 33; nature with all her — endowments, IV.2.8; V.2.52.
- Best.** *adv.* knowest, I.1.159; I.3.10, 47; II.5.3; IV.1.122; V.1.158; V.3.39, 77.
- Best-tempered.** *adj.* those affections that the heavens infuse in their — pieces, I.3.10.
- Bestow.** *v. t.* II.4.10; did first — on him, V.4.50.
- Betake.** *v. refl.* again — you to your hawthorn house, III.1.82.
- Betime.** *adv.* must rise — (= *early*), V.2.60.
- Betray.** *v. t.* IV.1.70; — a beauty, V.1.103.
- Better.** *subst.* encountered yet his —, V.3.123.
- Better.** *adj.* II.2.21; II.3.38; II.5.43, 47; II.6.10; III.5.151; III.6.89, 225; IV.1.30; IV.2.62, 87; IV.3.5; V.2.7; V.3.64, 65; *Epil.* 16.
- Better.** *adv.* II.1.5; II.2.113; II.4.26.
- Between.** *prep.* I.3.81 [*See 'tween*]; I.3.67; II.2.174, 219; II.3.43; III.1.12 [*See In*]; III.1.97, 113; — the passages of this project (= *among*), IV.3.86; and —, ever was, IV.1.80; V.1.10; V.3.128, 129.
- Betwixt.** *prep.* — ye, V.1.16.
- Bevy.** *n.* IV.1.71.
- Beyond.** *prep.* I.2.65; I.3.26; II.6.11; (= *exceeding*) II.3.5; I went — all women (= *excelled*), III.6.206.
- Bid.** *v. t.* — him that we, I.1.91; what that banquet —s thee to, I.1.186; he —s 'em charge, II.2.251; — farewell, 5.4.19.
- Bier.** *n.* [*Qo. beere*] I'll weep upon his —, III.6.308.
- Bigger.** *adj. comp.* more —, I.1.125; IV.2.94.
- Bind.** *v. t.* why am I bound, I.2.50; does — me to her, I.1.37;

- having *bound* things scattered, I. 4.48; — these wounds up, IV. 2.1; I am much *bound* to him (= *obliged*), V.2.44.
- Birch.** *n.* the — upon the breeches of the small ones, III.5.111.
- Bird.** *n.* — melodious or — fair, I.1.17.
- Birth.** *n.* new —s of love, II.2.81; the —s of noble bodies, IV.2.9.
- Birthday.** *n.* her fair —, II.5.36.
- Birthright.** *n.* the — of this beauty (= *title to*), III.6.31.
- Bitter.** *adj.* sweet and — (*sc.* tidings), V.4.47.
- Black.** *adj.* a —-haired man, III.3.31; — ey'd maids, IV.1.72; complexion nearer a brown than —, IV.2.79; IV.2.83; her — mantle (= *darkness*), V.3.25; a — one (*sc.* horse), V.4.40.
- Blade.** *n.* (*of a sword*) V.3.6.
- Blast.** *v. t.* that —s my bays, *Prol.* 19; your wheaten wreath was then nor thrashed nor —ed, I.1.65; to — whole armies, II.2.25; to — my wishes, II.2.171.
- Blazon.** *n.* not finding in the circuit of my breast any gross stuff to form me like your —, III.1.47.
- Bleed.** *v. i.* I.2.20; III.5.81; wounds . . . — to death, IV. 2.2.
- Bleeding.** *n.* this question, sick between 's, by — must be cured (*a reference to the medical practice of cupping, but here = bloodshed*), III.1.114.
- Blend.** *v. t.* — your spirits with mine, V.1.72.
- Bless.** *v. t.* —ing their sense (= *gratifying*)! I.1.15; *blest*, III.1.10; lovers yet unborn shall — my ashes, III.6.253; yet no beard has —t him, IV.2.107; Jupiter — us! IV.3.30; V.1. 128.
- Blessed.** *subst.* we of the —, IV. 3.26.
- Blessed.** *adj.* a — goddess, II.2. 164, 234, 235, 249; III.1.13; this *blest* morning, III.6.13; — souls, V.4.96; the — spirits, IV.3.18.
- Blessing.** *n.* two mere —s, II.2. 58, 76.
- Blind.** *adj.* some — priest, V.2. 78; two must needs be — (= *dead*) for it, V.3.146.
- Blinded.** *adj.* ever — Fortune, II.2.38.
- Blissful.** *adj.* the — dew of heaven does arrose you, V.4.102.
- Blister.** *v. i.* our lords lie —ing 'fore the visitating sun, I.1.146.
- Blood.** *n.* i. the — of mine that 's sibbe to him, I.2.72, 79; the — we venture, I.2.109; am I not part of your —, II.2.186; falsest cousin that ever — made kin, III.1.38; it (*sc.* wine) breeds good —, III.3.17; III.6.95; IV.2.60; weep —, IV.2.148; V.1.43; — of men, V.1.47; heal'st with — (= *by bleeding*), V.1.64; V.1.141.
- ii. the duke hath taken notice both of his — (= *breeding*) and body, II.2.230.
- iii. dearer in love than — (= *kinship*), I.2.1; II.2.173.
- Blood-stain'd.** *adj.* if he i 'th' — field lay swoln, I.1.99.
- Bloom.** *v. i.* yon —ing apricocke, II.2.238.
- Bloom'd.** *adj.* — May (= *flowery*), III.1.3.
- Blossom.** *n.* I.3.68; boughs that blush with thousand —s, III.6. 243.
- Blossom.** *v. i.* II.2.235.
- Blot.** *n.* a — i' th' business, V.2. 81.
- Blow.** *n.* disgrace and —s, II.5. 59; my —s, III.6.23; every — that falls, V.3.3.
- Blow.** i. *v. t.* — wind i' th' breech on us (= *are behind us*), II.3.47; whose fame is —n abroad, III. 5.116; to — that nearness out that flames between ye, V.1.10; whose breath —s down, V.1.52.
- ii. *v. i.* marigolds on death-beds —ing, I.1.11; how modestly she

- [*sc. rose*] —s, II.2.139; II.2.144.
- Blubber'd.** *adj.* rotten kings or — queens, I.1.180. (*This word has deteriorated since Shakspeare's time. Spenser often uses it as here = tearful.*)
- Blue.** *adj.* — clouds, V.1.54.
- Blush.** *n.* chaste —es, II.2.140; no more blood than will make a —, V.1.141.
- Blush.** *v. i.* modest scenes —, *Prolog.* 4; this —ing virgin, II.2.260; a —ing maid, III.6.205; boughs that — with thousand blossoms, III.6.243; have —ed at, V.1.103.
- Boar.** *n.* the scythe-tusk'd —, I.1.79; Meleager and the —, III.5.18.
- Boast.** *v. i.* V.1.120.
- Bode.** *v. i.* the —ing raven (= *ill-boding*), I.1.20; Pal. had the best —ing chance, V.3.77.
- Body.** *n. i.* noble —ies, II.2.65, 217, 230; II.3.72; II.4.23; II.5.21; swim with your —ies, III.5.28; the births of noble —ies, IV.2.9; IV.2.101, 119; V.1.13, 135; V.3.79.
- ii. the — of our sport (= *main portion*, i.e. *Gerrold*), III.5.121.
- iii. cast yourselves into a — decently, III.5.121.
- Boiling.** *n.* —, hissing, IV.3.27, 32.
- Boisterous.** *adj.* — and rough jadrie, V.4.72.
- Bold.** *adj.* his — ends, I.2.17; II.2.251; III.1.65, 92; be — to ring the bell, III.2.19; a —er traitor, III.6.141; — gravity, IV.2.41; —est language (= *most shameless*), V.1.124; the two — (= *valiant*) titlers, V.3.83; I am not —, *Epil.* 11.
- Boldly.** *adv.* II.2.35; V.1.68.
- Bond.** *n.* any generous —, I.2.50.
- Bondage.** *n.* II.1.33.
- Bone.** *n. i.* shake the —s of that good man, *Prolog.* 17; to his —s sweet sleep, *Prolog.* 29; to burn their —s, I.1.43; give us the —s of our dead kings, I.1.49; —s of your dead lords, I.4.7.
- ii. play 'qui passa' o' th' bells and —s, III.5.86.
- Bonfire.** *n.* like wanton boys through —s, V.1.86.
- Boni.** *Dii* —! (*Latin*), III.5.83.
- Bonny.** *adj.* I can sing 'The Broom' and '— Robin,' IV.1.108.
- Book.** *n.* the — of trespasses, I.1.33. See *Hornbook*, II.3.42.
- Boot.** *n.* — and glory, I.2.70 (= *booty*).
- Bootless.** *adj.* — toil, I.1.153.
- Born.** *p. p. adj.* [*Qo. borne*] — to uphold creation, I.1.82.
- Borrow.** *v. t.* Cynthia with her —'d light, IV.1.150.
- Bosom.** *n.* I.2.61; I.3.17; mortal —s, V.1.131.
- Both.** *pron.* *Prolog.* 2; II.2.166, 275, 286, 290, 302; IV.1.51; IV.2.50, 54, 68, 25, 85.
- Both.** *adj.* I.4.1; III.1.89; III.6.29, 136, 137, 172, 184, 213; IV.1.7; IV.3.59, 167; V.3.15, 92.
- Both.** *conj.* II.2.230; V.1.55.
- Bottle.** *n.* some 200 —s, and 20 strike of oats, V.2.64.
- Bottom.** *n.* the bottom of these miseries, II.2.56.
- Boughs.** *n.* [*Qo. bowes*] III.1.6; III.6.243.
- Bouncing.** *adj.* — Barbary, III.5.26.
- Bound.** *n.* shrunk thee into the — thou wast o'erflowing, I.1.84.
- Bound.** *adj. p. p.* whither now are you —a? III.5.64 (= *going: of a ship*).
- Bound.** *v. i.* —s, comes on end (= *leaps*), V.4.47.
- Bound.** *v. t.* who hath —ed our last minute (= *fixed the limit of*), I.2.103.
- Boundless.** *adj.* thy — goodness, I.1.51.
- Bounty.** *n.* I.1.64.



- Bow.** *n.* [Diana's] —, V.1.94.
- Bow.** *v. t.* he —s his noble body, II.4.23; — not my honour (= *bend*), III.6.226; — down your stubborn bodies, V.1.13; — before the goddess, V.1.135.
- Bowels.** *n.* out from the — of her holy altar, V.1.164.
- Bowling.** *n.* top the —, IV.1.146 (= *bowline*).
- Boy.** *n.* a fair —, II.2.120; II.3.27, 46, 49, 59, 70; III.4.10; III.5.21, 24, 76, 92, 143; III.6.34; IV.1.59, 129 (= *ship's boy*), 148; lovely —, IV.2.17; Narcissus was a sad —, IV.2.32; wanton —s, V.1.86, 116; *Epil.* 2. See *School-boy and Smallness*.
- Brace.** *n.* a — of horses, III.1.20.
- Bracelet.** *n.* his iron —s (= *hand-cuffs*).
- Brain.** *n.* how her — coins! IV.3.34; knock thy —s out, II.2.221.
- Brake.** *n.* [*Qo.* beake] he has mistook the — I meant, III.2.1.
- Branded.** *p. p. adj.* a — villain, II.2.202.
- Brave.** *adj.* a — patience, II.2.59; II.5.22; III.1.78, 81; III.5.61; III.6.43, 233; IV.2.73; six — spirits, IV.2.73; IV.2.102; V.1.167; V.3.4, 82, 115; V.4.95.
- Bravely.** *adv. i.* (= *courageously*), II.2.256; III.6.101; V.4.73.
- Bravery.** *n.* (= *display, pomp*), IV.2.154.
- Brawny.** *adj.* his arms are —, IV.2.126.
- Bread.** *n.* his army full of — and sloth, I.1.159; swore by wine and —, III.5.47; white —, III.5.80.
- Break.** *i. v. i.* I.2.73; sigh will — from one of them, II.1.4c; bright eyes — each morning 'gainst thy window (= *dawn*), II.3.9; virtue, like a hidden sun, —s through his baser garments, II.5.24; your silence should — out (= *become violently angry*), III.1.62; — comely out before him, III.5.19; III.6.84; girth —, V.4.74.
- ii. v. t.** I.2.86; dar'st thou — first (*sc.* the compact), III.3.45; she swore by wine and bread she would not — (*sc.* her pledge), III.5.47; for —ing prison, III.6.114; that *broke* thy prison, III.6.139; V.1.55.
- Breast.** *n.* my —s, I.3.67; the circuit of my —, III.1.46; III.4.26.
- Breast.** *v. t.* out —ed (= *outsung*), V.3.127.
- Breath.** *n.* out of —, I.3.82; thy — of mercy, III.6.158; — of tigers (= *endurance*), V.1.40; with the same — smiled (= *at the same moment*), IV.1.93; — of Mars, V.1.52.
- Breathe.** *v. i.* I.4.27; my mistress —d on me, III.1.28; III.3.34; any lady —ing (= *alive*), V.3.89.
- Breathless.** *adv.* almost — swim, *Prol.* 24.
- Breech.** *n.* blow wind i' th' — on 's, II.3.47; let fall the birch upon the —es of the small ones, III.5.111.
- Breed.** *v. t.* which —s a deeper longing, I.1.190; where were you *bred*, II.3.64; II.5.5; feeding me to — me strength, III.1.119; drink a good hearty draught, it —s good blood, III.3.17; we were not *bred* to talk, III.6.28; their lives might — the ruin of my name, III.6.240.
- Breeder.** *n.* a noble — and a pure, *Prol.* 10.
- Briar.** *n.* base —s, II.2.143.
- Bride.** *n.* lie fore — and bridegroom's feet, I.1.14; lead on the —, I.1.208.
- Bride.** *v. t.* a man of 80 winters who a lass of 14 —d, V.1.109.
- Bridegroom.** *n.* lie 'fore bride and —s feet, I.1.14; the visages of —s, V.4.127.
- Bride-habited.** *adj.* I am — but maiden-hearted, V.1.150.



- Bridehouse.** *n.* may on our — perch or sing, I.1.22.
- Brief.** *adv.* —, I am (= *in brief*), V.1.118.
- Bright.** *adj.* II.2.35; II.2.236; II.5.35; a — bay (*sc.* horse), III.6.78; lady —, III.5.125; III.6.146; — lamps of beauty (= *eyes*), IV.2.39.
- Bright.** *adv.* V.1.3.
- Brim.** *v. t.* the camp a cestron — med with the blood of men, V.1.47.
- Brine.** *n.* — they wept, I.3.22; I have not closed mine eyes, save when my lids scourd off their — [*Qo. bine*] (= *tears*), III.2.28.
- Bring.** *v. t.* This is the fear we —. *Prol.* 21; I.1.23; I.2.10; I.2.94; fate hath *brought* them off (= *rescued*), I.3.41; urns and odours — away, I.5.1; this funeral path —s (*sc.* you) to your household's grave, I.5.11; II.2.240, 268; II.3.54; II.4.22; II.6.3; III.1.99; III.3.2, 49; III.6.2, 164, 221; IV.1.17, 25, 71, 109; IV.2.64; I — you news, IV.2.56; IV.2.74; IV.3.17; may — her to eat (= *induce*), IV.3.82; IV.3.88; V.2.24; might be *brought* to play at tennis, V.2.56.
- Broach.** *v. t.* babes —d on the lance, I.3.20.
- Broad.** *adj.* a — beech, III.3.41; IV.2.84.
- Broken.** *p. p. adj.* — piece of matter (= *fitful, incoherent*), IV.3.5. See **Unbroken**.
- Brook.** *n.* (= *rivulet*), II.6.6.
- Broom.** *n.* I can sing *The* —, IV.1.107.
- Broth.** See **Plumbroth**, III.5.5.
- Brother.** *n.* my —'s heart, I.1.128; our all-royal — (*sc.* in-law), I.3.12; III.6.195, 226; IV.1.101; IV.2.47, 50, 55.
- Brow.** *n.* my —s, II.3.81; do the deed with a bent —, III.1.101; IV.2.19; his — is grav'd, V.3.45.
- Brown.** *adj.* a pretty — wench, III.3.39; this — manly face, IV.2.42; nearer a — than black, IV.2.79.
- Bruise.** *n.* III.6.88.
- Buckle.** *n.* thrust the — through.
- Buckle.** *v. t.* more —d with strong judgment, I.3.57; III.6.57.
- Bud.** *n.* II.2.142.
- Budge.** *v. i.* — not from Athens, I.1.223.
- Bulrush.** *n.* a wreath of —, IV.1.84.
- Burden.** *n.* the — on't was *Downa, downa*, IV.3.9 (= *refrain*).
- Burn.** *i. v. t.* he will not suffer us to — their bones, I.1.43.
- ii. v. i.* IV.3.27, 38; let the temples — bright with sacred fires, V.1.3.
- Burst.** *n.* the — of a battle, V.1.61 (*Stage Dir.* p. 86); — of clamour, V.3.77.
- Bury.** *v. t.* now — me, II.2.279; in that I'll — thee and all crosses else, III.6.126; gather flowers to — you, IV.1.78; his brow is *graved* and seems to — what it frowns on, V.3.46.
- Bush.** *n.* III.6.11.
- Business.** *n.* I.1.162, 196, 214; I.3.31; II.1.16; II.2.89; dares any so noble bear a guilty — [*var. conj. baseness*], III.1.90; III.5.54; IV.1.4; IV.3.7; V.1.21; arms in assurance my body to this —, V.1.135; a blot i' th' —, V.2.81; V.3.92.
- But.** *adv.* (= *only*) *Prol.* 25; I.1.229; I.2.12, 87; I.3.67, 83; II.1.26; II.2.103, 155, 198, 205, 209, 214, 234; II.3.19, 27, 33; II.5.40, 55; III.1.33, 75, 87, 108, 116; III.2.11; III.5.52, 144; III.6.15, 18, 91; IV.1.37; IV.2.26, 47; V.1.19, 165; V.2.20; V.3.21, 133; V.4.83, 129, &c.
- But.** *prep.* (= *except*), I.1.81; I.2.27, 31, 94; II.2.41, 42, 77; III.1.80, 91; III.2.5; III.5.83; III.6.87, 105, 192, 239, 250; IV.1.27, 42, 80; IV.3.21; V.2.84; V.3.9, 140; V.4.75, &c. *So-called*

- negative relative* (= *that . . . not*)  
No toy — was her pattern, I.3.72.
- But.** *conj.* I.1.3, 46, 97, 124, 137, 145, 168, 183, 291; I.2.33, 89, 111; I.3.30, 59, 90; I.4.10, 36; II.1.16, 38; II.2.43, 45, 120, 125, 161, 162, 194, 230, 263; II.3.2; II.5.5; III.1.61; III.2.24, 37; III.6.44, 57, 64, 78, 117, 214, 216, 261; IV.1.29, 42, 43, 51, 60, 66, 121, 125; IV.2.20, 32, 54, 95, 117, 124, 131, 144; IV.3.43, 63, 85; V.1.103, 151, 152, 154, 171; V.2.26, 32, 63, 83, 111; V.3.47, 51, 81; V.4.82, 83; *Epil.* 2; &c., &c.
- Button.** *n.* sweeter than her gold — on the boughs (= *buds*), III.1.6.
- Buy.** *v. t.* I would — you, I.1.122; III.4.22; V.3.112, 113; many will not — his goodness with this note, V.4.42; — dear love, V.4.111.
- Buz!** *interj.* Tell ten! I have posed him! —! III.5.79.
- By.** *prep.* I.1.62, 107, 177, 189; I.2.19, 47, 50; I.3.63, 64; I.4.15, 17; II.1.26; II.2.134, 147, 222, 266; II.3.51, 56, 60; II.5.50; II.6.34; III.1.21, 33, 103, 105, 114; III.3.14, 45; III.4.15; III.5.5, 21, 47, 49, 62, 107, 110, 126, 135; III.6.58, 81, 136, 195, 196, 197, 199, 200, 202, 203, 204, 205, 225, 289; IV.1.43, 44, 58, 64, 112, 118, 127; IV.2.17, 65, 76, 77; V.1.116; V.2.86; V.4.28.
- By.** *adv.* laid — his club, I.1.67; II.2.104; fast —, II.6.6; that grew —, IV.1.89; V.1.11; must needs be — (= *present*), V.3.31; if I were —, V.3.60; and — and — out-breasted, V.3.127.
- Cabin.** *v. i.* they two have —ed, I.3.35.
- Calkin.** *n.* the —'s did rather tell than trample, V.4.55 (= *horse-shoe tips*).
- Call.** *i. v. i.* the king —s for you, I.2.84.
- ii. v. t.* I.3.85; I.4.22; —ed Narcissus, I.4.22; II.2.183, 250; II.3.77; III.1.38, 64, 108; —ed a wolf, III.2.10, 15; the screech-owl —s in the dawn, III.2.36; III.3.32; I —ed him now to answer, III.6.151; III.6.160; IV.1.111; IV.3.45; V.1.78; V.4.123.
- Camp.** *n.* V.1.46.
- Can.** *v. aux.* I.1.86, 169; I.2.43; I.4.43; II.1.18; II.2.57; III.6.139; IV.1.106, 107, etc. *Followed by* not:—I.1.111, 120; I.3.18, 47; II.2.113, 115, 157, 216; II.6.18; III.1.50, 111; III.2.9, 14; III.6.275, 286; IV.1.46; IV.2.54, 102, 152; IV.3.51; V.1.18, 121, etc.
- Canon.** *n.* (= *social rule*), I.2.55.
- Cap.** *n.* III.5.17.
- Capacity.** *n.* most coarse frieze —ies, III.5.8.
- Capanëus.** *pr. n.* (See Note.) King — was your lord, I.1.59.
- Capital.** *adj.* T' instruct me against a — grief indeed, I.1.123.
- Captive.** *n.* wast near to make the male to thy sex —, I.1.81.
- Captivity.** *n.* II.1.37; II.2.97.
- Card.** *n.* go to dinner, and then we'll play at —s, V.2.108.
- Care.** *i. v. t.* what — for what thou feel'st not, I.1.180.
- ii. v. i.* II.6.13; I — for nothing, III.2.6; III.6.58; not — for me, V.2.83.
- Careless.** *adj.* past slightly his — execution, I.3.29; her — wear, I.3.73; her — tresses, IV.1.83.
- Carrack.** *n.* (*Qo.* carecke) make a — of a cockle-shell, III.4.14.
- Carrier.** See *Quarter-Carrier*, I.2.108.
- Carry.** *v. t.* to — such a business, I.1.162; my life, if then thou — it (= *conquer*), III.1.78; — it sweetly and deliverly, III.5.29; — your tail, III.5.34; III.6.259; what a brow he —ies, IV.2.19.
- Carve.** *v. t.* — her (*ethical dat.*

- = 'for' or 'to her'), IV.3.76.  
*See Crave*, II.2.91.
- Casque.** *n.* (*Qo. caske*), III.6.62.
- Cast.** *v. t.* something I may — to you (= *leave*), II.1.2; — yourselves into a body, III.5.20; never — your child away for honesty, V.2.21; —s himself the accounts (= *adds up*), V.2.58; by —ing her black mantle, V.3.25.
- Castor.** *pr. n.* By —! III.6.136.
- Catch.** *v. t.* to — one (*sc. minnow*), I.1.117; which is not —ing (= *infectious*), I.2.45; her attention, IV.3.68; V.1.87.
- Cauldron.** *n.* a — of lead and usurer's grease, IV.3.80.
- Cause.** *n.* our — cries for your knee, I.1.200; II.2.224; III.5.120; III.6.69; my — and honour guard me, III.6.92; I know your cunning, and I know your —, III.6.120; so we may fairly carry our swords and — along, III.6.260; IV.2.98, 144; V.1.73; no such —, *Epil.* 12.
- Cedar.** *n.* II.6.4.
- Celebration.** *n.* this —, I.1.131; omit not anything in the pretended —, I.1.210.
- Celerity.** *n.* with that — and nature, I.1.202.
- Centre.** *n.* the — (*sc. of the earth*), I.1.115.
- Ceremony.** *n.* treble —, I.4.8; the heart of —, III.1.4.
- Ceres.** *pr. n.* the teeming — 'foison', V.1.53.
- Cestron.** *See Cistern*, V.1.46.
- Certain.** *adj.* I.2.40; II.3.24; most — you love me not, III.1.101; death is —, V.4.18; *Superl.* tott'ring Fortune, who at her —'st, reels, V.4.21.
- Certain.** *adv.* that was a fair boy, —, II.2.120.
- Certainly.** *adv.* II.2.62; III.6.137.
- Chaff.** *n.* the witless — of such a writer, *Prol.* 19.
- Chaffy.** *adj.* a — lord (= *worthless*), III.1.41.
- Challenge.** *v. t.* III.1.8.
- Chamber.** *n.* II.1.20, 24.
- Chambermaid.** *n.* III.5.126.
- Chance.** *n.* voluble —, I.2.67, 116; the — of war, II.2.3; a thousand —s, II.2.94; thrice blessed —, III.1.13; if it be your — to come, IV.3.18; what pity enough for such a — (= *mis-chance*), V.3.60; what is the —, V.3.66; — would have it so, V.3.75; P. had the best boding —, V.3.77.
- Chance.** *v. t.* have —d to name you here, II.1.15.
- Changeling.** *n.* a — to him, a mere gipsy, IV.2.43.
- Chapel.** *v. t.* give us the bones... that we may — them, I.1.50.
- Chaplet.** *n.* —s on their heads of daffadillies, IV.1.73.
- Character.** *n.* his nose stands high, a — of honour (= *mark*), IV.2.110.
- Chare.** *v. t.* all's —d when he is gone (= *done, worked out*), III.2.21.
- Charitable.** *adj.* her — heart, I.2.25.
- Charity.** *n.* the — of one meal lend me, III.1.73.
- Charm.** *n.* this — that I told you of, IV.3.16.
- Charm.** *v. t.* his behaviour so —ed me, V.3.119.
- Charmer.** *n.* you heavenly —s (= *gods*), V.4.131.
- Charge.** *n.* I have this — too (= *command*). P. To discharge my life, II.2.262; you bear a — there too (= *have a duty*), V.2.101.
- Charge.** i. *v. i.* (*sc. the enemy*), II.2.197, 251; III.6.74, 82.  
 ii. *v. t.* I — you (= *command*), I.1.222; and —d me live to comfort this unfriended, V.3.141.
- Charging-staff.** *n.* a — embost with silver, IV.2.140.

- Chase.** *n.* [Venus] whose — is this world, and we in herds her game (= *hunting preserve*), V. 1.131.
- Chaste.** *adj.* — blushes, II.2.140; — nights, III.6.200; — Diana, IV.2.58; white as —, V.1.139.
- Chastise.** *v. t.* I.4.6.
- Chastity.** *n.* II.2.142; IV.2.60.
- Chatter.** *v. i.* —ing pie, I.1.21; —ing, cursing, IV.3.27.
- Chaucer.** *pr. n.* —, of all admir'd, the story gives, *Prol.* 13.
- Cheap.** *adj.* too too —, V.4.15.
- Cheaply.** *adv.* I purchase —, V. 3.113.
- Cheek.** *n.* Fortune at you dimpled her — with smiles, I.1.66; your grief is written in your —, I.1.109; —s of damask roses, IV.1.74.
- Cheer.** *n.* good —, I.1.233; heavy —s (= *sad visages*), I.5.4.
- Cheerfully.** *v.* 4.39.
- Cheerily.** *adv.* (*Qo.* cheerely) weigh, my hearts, —, IV.1.144.
- Cherish.** *v. t.* III.1.51.
- Cherry.** *n.* her twinning —ies (= *lips*), I.1.78.
- Cherry.** *adj.* — lips, IV.1.74.
- Chestnut.** *adj.* the — mare, V. 2.61.
- Chicken.** *n.* alas, poor — (*sc.* Palamon), V.2.96.
- Chide.** *v. t.* to be so *chid* (= *rebuked*), II.1.42; I — him not, III.1.107.
- Chiding.** *n.* 't is but a —, II.3.27.
- Child.** *n.* this — (= *play*), *Prol.* 16; Primrose, firstborn — of Ver, I. 1.7; all dear Nature's —ren sweet, I.1.13; sisters' —ren, nephews to the king, I.4.16; —ren of grief and ignorance, II. 2.55; play the — extremely, II. 2.206; love, what a stout-hearted — thou art, II.6.9; with — by him, IV.1.127; what a mere — is Fancy, IV.2.52; maids with —, IV.3.36; V.2.22, 41, 94; V.4.3; are —ren in some kind, V.4. 134.
- Childishly.** *adv.* (*See* *Innocent*), IV.1.39.
- Chin.** *n.* my poor —, I.2.54.
- Chirp.** *v. i.* crickets —, III.2. 35.
- Choice.** *n.* take your —, II.5.54; III.1.88; make —, III.6.285; I have no —, IV.2.35; so fair a — (*sc.* of a wife), V.2.92.
- Choke.** *v. t.* with an eye-glance to — Mars's drum (= *silence*), V. 1.80.
- Choose.** *i. v. i.* I 'll —, and end their strife, IV.2.2.  
*ii. v. t.* III.6.45; I should — one, V.1.153.
- Chop.** *v. i.* come between, and — on some cold thought, III.1.13.
- Chorus.** *n.* [*Qo.* *choris*, *rhyiming with, Morrice*] III.5.107.
- Chough.** *n.* [*O. Edd.* Clough] — hoar, I.1.20. (*See* *Introd.*, § 43.)
- Cicely.** *pr. n.* —, the sempster's daughter, III.5.44.
- Circle.** *n.* the — of his eyes show fire within him [*Query* circles], IV.2.81.
- Circuit.** *n.* the — of my breast, III.1.46.
- Cistern.** *n.* [*Qo.* *cestron*] makes the camp a — brimmed with the blood of men, V.1.46.
- City.** *n.* I.2.3; I.4.47; this world's a — full of straying streets, I. 5.15; IV.1.97; the stony girths of —ies, V.1.55.
- City-wife.** *n.* a proud lady and a proud —, IV.3.44.
- Clamour.** *n.* —s through the wild air flying, I.5.6; this burst of —, V.3.77.
- Clanging.** *n.* — of armour (*St. Dir.* p. 86), V.1.61.
- Clap.** *n.* — of thunder, III.6.83.
- Clap.** *v. t.* I 'll — more irons on you (= *quickly put*), II.2.373; Fame and Honour . . . should — their wings, IV.2.23; — her



- aboard to-morrow night and stow her, II.3.32.
- Clasp.** *v. t.* II.2.32.
- Clean.** *adj.* strong and — (= *well-shaped*), IV.2.114.
- Clear.** *adj.* to make petition —, I.1.157; we are more — spirits, V.4.13. *See* **Clear-spirited**.
- Clear.** *v. t.* — his own way, III.1.56; Pal. has —ed you, IV.1.18.
- Clear-spirited.** *adj.* — cousin, I.2.74.
- Cleave.** *v. t.* —ing his conscience into twain, I.3.46. *See* **Crave**, II.2.91.
- Clip.** *v. t.* — my yellow locks, III.4.20.
- Clock.** — that tells our woes, II.2.42.
- Clog.** *n.* these house —s away. *See* **House**, III.1.43.
- Close.** *adj.* (= *secret*) he shall keep —, II.6.6; — in the thicket, III.5.13; I keep — for all this, — as a cockle, IV.1.128; tells — offices the foulest way (= *private*), V.1.22. *See* **Concealment**.
- Close.** *adv.* III.6.57.
- Close.** *v. t.* to — mine eyes, II.2.93; not —d mine eyes, III.2.27; — thine eyes, V.4.96.
- Clothes.** my —, II.6.32.
- Cloud.** *n.* like lazy —s, II.2.14; in hallowed —s (*sc.* of incense), V.1.4; blue —s the masoned turrets, V.1.54.
- Clown.** *n.* the beast-eating —, III.5.131; say the schoolmaster's no —, III.5.141.
- Club.** *n.* Hercules . . . laid by his —, I.1.67.
- Coarse.** *adj.* most — frieze capacities, III.5.8; two — smocks, V.2.84.
- Coast.** *n.* — of Barbary-a, III.5.60.
- Coat.** *n.* my green —, III.4.19.
- Cockle.** *n.* Close as a —, IV.1.129.
- Cockle-shell.** *n.* III.4.14.
- Cocklight.** *n.* (= *cock crow, morn-ing twilight*), IV.1.112.
- Coil.** *n.* what a — he keeps (= *tumult*), II.4.18.
- Coin.** *v. i.* how her brain —s! IV.3.34.
- Coinage.** *n.* musical —, I.3.76.
- Cold.** *adj.* dead — winter, II.2.45; a — coward, II.2.255; durst better have endured — iron than done it, II.6.10; some — thought (= *chaste*), III.1.13; quit me of these — gyves (= iron), III.1.72; III.4.1; a — beginning (*pun on* 'all hail'), III.5.101; the dead — ashes of their sons, IV.2.5; all moist and —, V.1.93; — and constant, V.1.137; flint, — as old Saturn, V.4.62.
- Coldly.** *adv.* (= *calmly, coolly*), let me deal — with you, II.2.185.
- Collect.** *v. t.* those —ed here, III.5.103.
- Colour.** *n. i.* (= *pretext*) where every evil hath a good —, I.2.39.
- ii.* (= *hue*) II.2.129, 150; of several —s, IV.1.85; not wanton white, but such a manly —, next to an auburn, IV.2.124.
- Combat.** *n.* V.3.78; the —'s consummation is proclaimed, V.3.94.
- Combat.** *v. t.* — me, II.2.199; to be —ed, IV.3.82.
- Come.** *v. i.* we — unseasonably, I.1.168; I.2.106; that honour which his enemy [*sc.* doth] — in, I.2.109; this rehearsal —s in like old importment's bastard, I.3.79; I.5.7; II.1.3, 14, 45; my hour to — (= *the rest of my life*), II.2.6; II.2.44, 140, 150, 200, 279; II.3.14, 17, 58, 70, 74; II.4.21; III.1.12, 71, 74; III.3.3, 5, 49; III.5.12, 59, 66, 73, 89, 119, 120, 137, 158; III.6.11, 76, 103, 127, 302, 305; IV.1.4, 50, 103, 134, 139, 144; IV.2.50, 56, 71, 152; IV.3.8, 18, 20, 67, 72, 87; V.1.9, 135; V.2.4, 11, 40, 41, 49, 69; V.3.103, 107; V.4.9, 21, 61, 67, 81; *Epil.* 10.

- Comely.** *adv.* break — out before him, III.5.19; V.2.48.
- Comet.** *n.* —s prewarn, V.1.51.
- Comfort.** *n.* good —, I.1.129; I.1.148; now turn we towards your —s, I.1.234; 2.2.9; two —s, II.2.58; be of good —, IV.1.17; bring forth —, IV.3.89; V.4.3; this poor —, V.4.14.
- Comfort.** *v. t.* II.1.43; the gods — her, IV.1.48; to — this unfriended, V.3.141.
- Command.** *v. t.* I.2.56; —s men service, I.2.69; as you —ed, III.5.32; — him die, II.5.41; why her eyes — me, III.6.169; — and threaten Love, IV.2.39; yours to —, V.2.70.
- Commend.** *v. t.* delay —s us to a famishing hope, I.1.167; I — thee [*sc.* to Heaven. = *I bless thee*], III.6.103; let the altars in hallowed clouds — their swelling incense, V.1.4; — we our proceeding, V.1.75; — me to her, V.4.31, 35.
- Comment.** *v. t.* or what fierce sulphur else, to this end made, I — not, V.4.65.
- Commit.** *v. t.* I.3.69; sins have I —ed, IV.2.58.
- Common.** *adj.* to follow the — stream, I.2.10; — conversation, II.2.74.
- Commune.** *v. i.* come to eat with her, and to — of love (= *converse about*), IV.3.67.
- Companion.** *n.* II.3.56; IV.3.78; V.1.119.
- Company.** *n.* draw up the —, III.5.23; have your —, III.5.65; III.5.107; kept her —, V.2.2.
- Compass.** *n.* (*of a ship*). IV.1.141.
- Compassion.** *n.* say I felt — to them both, III.6.213; III.6.239, 271; sweet —, IV.1.11; he's gray-eyed, which yields — when he conquers, IV.2.132.
- Compel.** *v. t.* fight like —led bears, III.1.68. [*F2 coupel'd.*]
- Complexion.** *n.* IV.2.43; — nearer a brown than black, IV.2.78; his — is as a ripe grape ruddy, IV.2.95.
- Compose.** *v. t.* worth so —d a man (= *a man so —d*), V.3.86.
- Compound.** *v. t.* —ed odours, IV.3.74.
- Concealment.** *n.* tells close offices the foulest way, nor names —s in the boldest language, V.1.123.
- Conceive.** *v. t. i.* by mine own [speech] I may be reasonably —d, I.2.48 (= *understood*).  
ii. women new —d, IV.2.128; that eye of yours —s a tear, the which it will deliver, V.3.137.
- Concern.** *v. t.* their lives — us, I.4.32; it —s your credit, III.6.223; —ing, IV.1.2.
- Condemn.** *v. t.* what not, —ed, I.3.65; II.6.14.
- Condition.** *n.* on fail of some —, I.2.105; on what —s, III.6.252; will you, Arcite, take these —s, III.6.264; new —s (= *terms*), IV.1.29.
- Confess.** *v. t.* a —t traitor, III.1.35; V.4.116.
- Confessor.** *n.* large —s (= *boasters of their viciousness*), V.1.105.
- Confine.** *v. t.* IV.3.64.
- Confirm.** *v. t.* III.6.104; no voice, sir, to — her that way, V.2.15.
- Confound.** *v. t.* (= *destroy*) something I would —, V.1.28; this battle shall — both these brave knights, V.1.166.
- Conjuring.** *n.* these are strange —s, III.6.201.
- Conjuror.** *n.* a —; raise me a devil now, III.5.84.
- Conquer.** *v. t.* II.2.36; compassion when he —s, IV.2.132; the —ed triumphs, the victor has the loss, V.4.113.
- Conscience.** *n.* I.3.46; II.4.12; wild —s III.3.24; o' my —, IV.2.87; against his —, *Epil.* 8.
- Consent.** *n.* against my —, II.1.13.
- Consider.** *v. i.* let him —, I.1.105;

- nor gain made him regard nor loss —, I.3.30; II.6.27; by so —ing, V.4.4.
- Constant.** *adj.* there — to eternity it lives, *Prol.* 14; II.1.32; — queen, V.1.137.
- Constantly.** *adv.* I.4.20.
- Constellation.** *n.* a shining —, IV. 2.18.
- Constrain.** *v. t.* II.2.272.
- Consume.** *v. t.* quarrels — us, II. 2.90.
- Consumer.** *n.* O grief and time, fearful —s, you will all devour, I.1.70.
- Consummation.** *n.* the combat's — is proclaimed by the wind instruments, V.3.94.
- Contemn.** *v. t.* this is he —s thee, III.6.143.
- Contemplative.** *adj.* mute, —, V. 1.138.
- Contempt.** *n.* my — (*sc.* of my duty), III.6.115.
- Contend.** i. *v. t.* peril and want —ing (= *opposing*), I.3.37.  
ii. *v. i.* —ing lovers, IV.2.66.
- Content.** *n.* to his bones sweet sleep! — to you, *Prol.* 30; a more — II.2.100; — and anger in me have but one face, III.1.107; of more —, V.4.16.
- Content.** *adj.* —: the sports once ended we'll perform, II.3.58; be —, III.1.81; III.6.264, 379, 301; V.2.75.
- Content.** *v. t.* III.6.299; any way — ye, *Epil.* 14.
- Contention.** *n.* make me their —, III.6.253; the grace of the —, V.4.108.
- Contentious.** *adj.* their — throats, V.3.125.
- Continue.** *v. t.* I.3.97; she —s this fancy, IV.3.42; the file and quality I hold I may — in thy band (= *retain*), V.1.162.
- Continually.** *adv.* II.2.268; IV. 3.2.
- Convent.** *v. t.* (= *assemble*) all our surgeons — in their behoof (*imperat.*), I.4.31; we — nought else but woes, I.5.9, 10.
- Conversation.** *n.* common —, the poison of pure spirits (= *vulgar intercourse*), II.2.74.
- Convey.** *v. t.* stage dir. p. 88.
- Convulsion.** *n.* torturing —s [*sc.* of old age], V.1.113.
- Cool.** *v. t.* under the shadow of his sword may — us, I.1.92; paid with ice to —'em, I.2.34.
- Cope.** *v. i.* I have foregone, or futurely can — [*sc.* with], I.1. 174.
- Cord.** *n.* —s, knives, drams, precipitance, I.1.142.
- Corect.** *See* Court, Crown. IV. 2.109.
- Corn.** *n.* a field of —, II.3.78.
- Corner.** *n.* I.3.36.
- Cornet.** *n.* short flourish of —s, *st. dir.*, II.5.1; V.3.89, pp. 97, 98. *See* Trumpet.
- Corrector.** *n.* great — of enormous times, V.1.62.
- Corruption.** *n.* (*sc.* of blood) I.2. 74; to keep us from — of worse men, II.2.72.
- Corslet.** *v. t.* when her arms shall — thee (= *clasp thee as in a —*), I.1.177.
- Cost.** *n.* welcomes to their —, III.5.128.
- Cost.** *v. t.* — us the loss of, V.4. 110.
- Costliness.** *n.* his richness and — of spirit lookt through him, V. 3.97.
- Costly.** *adj.* be more — than your suppliant's war, I.1.132.
- Couch.** if thou — but one night with her, I.1.182.
- Could.** *See* Can. I.1.168; II.1.42; II.2.67, 123, &c.
- Counsel.** with — of the night I will be here (= *secrecy*, cf. 'to keep one's own —'), III.1.83.



- Count.** *n.* when our — [*sc.* of years] was each eleven, I.3.53.
- Count.** *v. t. i.* (= *number*) —ing the flinty pavement, V.4.58.  
ii. (= *consider*) these that we — errors, IV.2.31.
- Counter-reflect.** your sorrow beats so ardently upon me that it shall make a — 'gainst my brother's heart, and warm it to some pity, I.1.127.
- Country.** *n.* II.2.7; that cursed man that hates his —, II.2.201; II.5.5; III.6.290.
- Country.** *adj.* some — sport, III.5.97; — pastime, III.5.102.
- Couple.** *v. i.* (= *form pairs*), III.5.32. *See* **Compel**.
- Courage.** *n.* III.3.5; mercy and manly —, V.3.43.
- Courageous.** *adj.* — cousin, V.4.38.
- Course.** *n.* up with a — or two (= *sail*. *See* **Notes**), III.4.10; hold your —, III.6.304; a wise —, IV.1.126; direct your — (*sc.* ship's course), IV.1.142.
- Court.** *n. i.* (= *palace*), I.2.75; the — of Creon, II.2.105; II.5.28.  
ii. (= *—yard of a prison*), II.2.99.
- Court.** *adj.* the — hurry (= *excitement at —*), II.1.17.
- Court.** *v. t.* when the west wind —s her gently, II.2.138; as if she ever meant to — his valour [*Qo. Corect. Which see.*], IV.2.109.
- Courtier.** *n.* lords and —s, IV.3.35.
- Cousin.** *n.* [*Qo. cosen passim*], dear — Palamon. Cozener Arcite! III.1.43; I.1.222; I.2.2, 74; II.2.1, 4, 6, 55, 70, 91, 96, 107, 126, 131; II.4.16; III.1.23, 37; III.3.1, 23, 26, 37, 44; III.6.1, 18, 37, 44, 47, 53, 61, 65, 69, 73, 82, 101, 106, 107, 112, 117, 125, 166, 175, 180, 188, 248, 262, 294, 299; IV.2.154; V.1.31; V.2.90, 91; V.4.38, 48, 93, 109. *See* **Coz.**
- Coward.** *n.* a cold —, II.2.255; III.3.12; III.6.104.
- Coy.** *adj.* the — denials of young maids, IV.2.11.
- Coz.** *n.* (= *cousin, q. v.*) III.1.29; fair —, III.1.52; my —, my —, III.1.58; III.3.20, 30, 34; V.1.23, 33.
- Cozen.** *v. t.* that hostler must rise betimes that —s him, V.2.60.
- Cozener.** *n.* dear cousin Palamon. — Arcite! III.1.44.
- Crack.** *v. t.* our livers perish'd, —t to pieces with love, IV.3.20; curb would —, V.4.74.
- Cradle.** *n.* oxlips in their —s growing, I.1.10 ("the root-leaves of the oxlip are cradle-shaped, but circular instead of long." *Mr. Wm. Whale's note, quoted p. vi. of the Forewords to N. S. S. reprint of Spalding's 'Letter'*); the like innocent — (= *her bosom*), I.3.71.
- Cramp.** *n.* the aged — V.1.110.
- Crank.** *n.* the —s and turns of Thebes, I.2.28.
- Crave.** *v. t.* that —s a present medicine, I.1.191; his sports, though —ing seriousness and skill, I.3.28; — our acquaintance [*var. conj.*], II.2.91; which —d that present time, V.3.64.
- Craze.** *conj. for Crave*, II.2.91.
- Creation.** *n.* born to uphold — in that honour, I.1.82.
- Creature.** *n.* your most unworthy —, II.5.40; a right good —, V.4.34.
- Credit.** *n.* the — of our town (= *reputation*), III.5.56; it concerns your — (= *fair fame*), III.6.223.
- Creon.** *pr. n.* I.1.40, 150; I.2.62, 99.
- Crestfallen.** *adj.* so weak and — with my wants, III.6.7.
- Cricket.** *n.* the —s chirp, III.2.35.
- Crime.** *n.* the —s of nature, I.2.3; —s many and stale, V.4.10.



- Cripple.** *n.* make a — flourish with his crutch, V.1.82.
- Cross.** *n.* I'll bury thee and all —es else (= *troubles*), III.6.127.
- Cross.** *v. t.* lest this match between's be — t ere met, III.1.98; I saw from far off — her (*sc. path*), IV.1.100; by no mean — her, IV.1.118; what young maid dare — 'em (*sc. Pal.'s eyes*), IV.2.40.
- Crow.** *n.* the —, I.1.19; pecks of —s, I.1.42.
- Crown.** *n.* —s' title, III.1.22.
- Crown.** *v. t.* our —ed heads, I.1.52; labours — his memory, III.6.176; to — all this, III.6.208; honour — the worthiest, V.1.17; the price and garland to — the question's title, V.3.17. *See* Court, IV.2.109.
- Cruel.** *i. adj.* the wrath of — Creon, I.1.40; II.5.41; III.6.242. *ii. adv.* I am — fearful, *Epil.* 3.
- Cruelty.** *n.* III.6.249; curse my —, IV.2.6.
- Crutch.** *n.* make a cripple flourish with his —, V.1.82.
- Cry.** *n.* widows' —ies, I.2.81; his learning makes no —, II.3.54; a deep — of dogs (= *back*), II.5.12; IV.1.98, the —'s "a Palamon," V.3.67; the — was general "a P," V.3.80; V.3.91, 93.
- Cry.** *i. v. t.* make him — from underground, Prol. 17; your advice is —ed up with example (= *confirmed by*), I.2.13; I — amen to 't, I.4.3; III.5.7, 16; — woe worth me, III.6.249; IV.3.46, 47. *ii. v. t.* our cause —ies for your knee, I.1.200; III.4.8; — for both, IV.2.54; if you do, love, I'll — (= *weep*), V.2.112.
- Cuckoo.** *n.* the slanderous —, I.1.19..
- Cue.** *n.* mark your —, III.5.94.
- Cuff.** *n.* I could for each word give a —, III.1.104.
- Cull.** *v. t.* when could grief — forth . . . fitt'st time, I.1.169.
- Cum.** *Lat.* III.5.133.
- Cunning.** *adj.* I.3.43; III.6.120.
- Cunningly.** *adv.* II.2.191; III.5.92.
- Cupid.** *n.* armed with thousand —s, II.3.31.
- Curb.** *n.* neither — would crack, V.4.74.
- Cure.** *n.* past all —, IV.1.138, V.2.8; in the way of —, V.2.19.
- Cure.** *v. t.* — their surfeit, I.1.190; this question, sick between us, by bleeding must be —d, III.1.114; —st the world o' the plurisy of people, V.1.65; V.1.82; V.2.22, 37.
- Curious.** *adj.* a — baldrick, IV.2.86 (= *curiously wrought*).
- Curl.** *v. t.* —ing the wealthy ears (*sc. of corn*), II.3.79; —ed [hair], IV.2.104.
- Currant.** *adj.* [*Qo. current, with a play on currant (fruit) and current (coin)*] I stamp this kiss upon thy — lip; sweet, keep it as my token, I.1.216.
- Current.** *n.* to swim i' th' aid o' the —, I.2.8.
- Curse.** *n.* the — of honour, II.2.54; the people's —s, II.2.110; the —s else of after ages, III.6.187.
- Curse.** *v. t.* — ever-blinded fortune, II.2.38; —d man, II.2.201; III.6.104; shall — me and my beauty, III.6.247; — my cruelty, IV.2.6; —ing, IV.3.28; —s a suing fellow, IV.3.48; a —d haste, V.4.41.
- Curtis.** *Actor named in stage dir* p. 95, T. Tucke, Curtis.
- Curtsey.** *n.* V.2.69, 70.
- Curtsey.** *v. i. Stage dir.*, p. 88.
- Cut.** *n.* (= *gelding*) he s' buy me a white — forth for to ride, III.4.22.
- Cut.** *adj.* — and long tail. *See* Notes, V.2.49.
- Cut.** *v. t.* III.4.19; her bells were — away, III.5.71; I'll be — a

- pieces, III.6.256; IV.1.64; that —s away a life, V.3.141.
- Cutpurse.** *n.* baser in it than a —, II.2.213; a whole million of —s, IV.3.31.
- Cynthia.** *pr. n.* when — with her borrowed light, IV.1.150.
- Daedalus.** *pr. n.* Lat. III.5.115.
- Daffodilly.** *n.* chaplets on their heads of —ies, IV.1.73.
- Dainty.** *adj.* the — Dominie, II.3.40; a — madwoman, III.5.72, 114.
- Dainty.** *adv.* II.2.130.
- Daisy.** *n.* —ies smell-less yet most quaint, I.1.5.
- Dam.** *n.* the — of horror, V.3.23.
- Damage.** *n.* what will the fall o' the stroke do —, I.2.113.
- Damask.** *adj.* cheeks of — roses, IV.1.74.
- Damsel.** *n.* III.5.84.
- Dance.** *n.* [*Qo. sometimes daunce.*] III.5.133, 150.
- Dance.** i. *v. t.* — a morris, III.5.108; —s the morris, V.2.51.  
ii. *v. i.* II.3.8, 45; III.5.74, 81, 159; IV.1.75; V.2.47, 48; V.4.59.
- Danger.** *n.* —s, III.6.202; proud of —s, IV.2.80.
- Dangerous.** *adj.* I.2.37; I.3.36; II.2.272.
- Dangle.** *v. t.* my rapier from my hip to — it in my hand, I.2.57.
- Dare.** i. *v. incompl. pred.* I'll not —, I.1.203; I.2.71; I.3.2; II.2.85; I must, I ought to do so, and I —, II.2.207; II.2.216, 253; II.3.73, 76; II.5.12, 56; my father *durst* better have endured cold iron, II.6.10; that thou *durst*, Arcite (= *I would that, &c.*)... how much I —, III.1.57, 59; III.1.89; III.3.45; III.6.105, 128, 144; —s think her his (*speaking of self in the third person*), III.6.149; III.6.166, 261, 305; IV.2.40; *Epil.* 16.
- ii. *v. t.* to — ill-dealing Fortune [*Qo. dure.*] (= *subdue, terrify: term from falconry; see Notes*), I.3.5.
- Daring.** *adj.* — deed of fate in wedlock, I.1.164.
- Dark.** *adj.* to thee no star be —, I.4.1; those —er humours (= *more melancholy*), V.3.53.
- Darken.** *v. t.* vapours, sighs, — the day, I.5.2.
- Darkness.** *n.* — lord o' the world, III.2.4; —, which ever was the dam of horror, who does stand accurst, V.3.22. [*Note the difference of sex in these personifications of —.*]
- Dart.** *n.* our well-steel'd —s, II.2.51.
- Dart.** *v. t.* —ed a spark, V.4.63.
- Daughter.** *n.* II.1.8, 10; II.3.44; II.6.38; III.3.29; III.5.44; IV.1.20, 32, 65; V.4.24.
- Dawn.** *n.* calls in the —, III.2.36.
- Day.** *n.* I.1.59; I.5.2; II.1.8; II.4.26, 27; III.1.66; III.2.26; III.3.29; III.6.38, 71, 72, 220; IV.1.37; IV.3.15, 21; V.1.9, 57, 60; a —s journey [to the end of the world], V.2.73; V.2.104; V.4.98, 104, 124. *See Marriage —.*
- Dead.** *n.* none fit for the —, I.1.141.
- Dead.** *adj.* the bones of our — kings, I.1.50; your — lords, I.1.57; I.1.149; I.4.7, 24, 35; III.6.273; — cold, II.2.45; IV.2.5.
- Deadly.** *adv.* — defiance, I.1.91; our dole more — looks than dying (= *death-like*), I.5.3.
- Dæque.** *Lat.* III.5.158.
- Deaf.** *adj.* I am — to all but your compassion, III.6.238.
- Deaf.** *v. t.* the echoes of his shame have *deaf* the ears, I.2.80; there is no —ing, but to hear (= *making one's self deaf*), V.3.9 [*Qo. deaf-fing*].
- Deal.** *n.* a great — short of, IV.2.89.

- Deal.** *v. t.* let me — coldly with you, II.2.185; why then would you — so cunningly, II.2.191; I — but truly (= *act fairly*), II.2.205.
- Dear.** *adj.* all — nature's children sweet, I.1.13; I.1.31, 90, 139, 141; I.3.11; I.4.9; III.1.43; III.5.135; III.6.188, 193; V.4.13, 112. *Com.* —er, I.2.1; *Superl.* —est, II.5.38; V.3.112.
- Dearly.** *adv.* — sorry, V.4.129; most — [*O. Edd.* early] sweet and bitter, V.4.47.
- Death.** *n.* —'s most horrid agents, I.1.144; where —'s self was lodged, I.3.40; I.4.37; this world 's a city full of straying streets, and —'s the market-place, where each one meets, I.5.16; the day of my —, II.1.8; till our —s, II.2.115, 116; a — beyond imagination, II.3.4; II.3.18; II.6.16; try — by dozens, III.2.25; make — a devil, III.6.270; any — thou canst invent, III.6.281; wounds . . . bleed to —, IV.2.2; he'll be the — of her, V.2.67; — is certain V.4.18; the stage of — (= *the scaffold*), V.4.123.
- Deathbed.** *n.* Marigolds on — blowing, I.1.11.
- Debt.** *n.* III.6.18.
- Decay.** *n.* —s, I.2.32; —s of many kinds, I.2.29.
- Decay.** *v. t.* a love that grows as you —, V.3.111.
- Deceive.** *v. t.* you are —d, III.6.48; the —ing part freezes, IV.3.38.
- Decently.** *adv.* cast yourselves into a body —, III.5.20.
- Decider.** *n.* [*Qo.* descider, *as if from scindo*] the true — of all injuries, III.6.153; V.1.63.
- Decision.** *n.* this —, V.3.3.
- Deck.** *v. t.* — the temples, II.2.23.
- Decking.** *n.* my most serious — (= *adornment*), I.3.74.
- Deed.** *n.* this good —, I.1.32; I.1.164; III.1.101; III.6.193; —s of honour, V.3.12.
- Deem.** *v. t.* me thou —'st at Thebes, III.1.26.
- Deep.** *adj.* in this — water, *Prol.* 25; I.3.43; a — cry of dogs, II.5.12; *Comp.* a —er longing, I.1.190; —er matter (= *more important*), I.1.109. *See* Heart—, Knee—.
- Defiance.** *n.* deadly —, I.2.91.
- Defier.** *n.* the intelligence of state came in the instant with the — (= *herald declaring war*), I.2.107; to those that boast and have not, a — (= *scorner*), V.1.120.
- Defy.** *v. t.* III.6.25.
- Deify.** *v. t.* —ies alone voluble chance, I.2.66.
- Deity.** earn'st a — equal with Mars (= *godhead*), I.1.227; the —ies, V.4.108.
- Delay.** *n.* I.1.166.
- Delay.** *v. t.* III.6.10.
- Delight.** *n.* all —s, II.2.44.
- Deliver.** *v. t.* What's your request? — you for all (*sc.* your answer), I.1.38; I would I were really that I am —ed to be, II.1.6; one eye of yours conceives a tear, the which it will — (= *bring forth*), V.3.138.
- Deliverance.** *n.* (= *utterance*) a divided sigh, martyr'd as 't were i' the —, II.1.40.
- Deliverly.** *adv.* (= *skilfully*) carry it sweetly and —, III.5.29.
- Demand.** *n.* [*Qo.* demaund] II.1.9.
- Demonstration.** *n.* such heart-pierced —, I.1.124.
- Denial.** *n.* the coy —s of young maids, IV.2.11.
- Deny.** *v. t.* who shall — me (= *forbid*), II.2.167; III.2.24; this cousin that —ies it, III.6.166; speak, not to be —ied, III.6.186; tremble to — a blushing maid (= *refuse*), III.6.204; III.6.234.

- Depart.** *n.* since his — (= *departure*), I.3.27.
- Depart.** *i. v. i.* (= *go away*) —ed, I.3.34; ere I —ed, IV.1.6.
- ii. (= *part*) I may — with little while I live, II.1.1.
- Depend.** *v. i.* III.1.51.
- Depute.** *v. t.* I.4.10.
- Derry.** (*refrain*) a — and a — and a down, III.5.139, 140.
- Describe.** *v. t.* —d, IV.2.89.
- Descend.** *v. i.* cries — again into their throats, I.2.82; the tree —s, V.1.169.
- Deserve.** *v. t.* II.5.42; —s (= *merit*), III.6.140; more to me (= *from me*) —ing than I, V.4.34.
- Design.** *n.* to my — march boldly, V.1.68.
- Desire.** *n.* — of liberty, I.4.42; that we should things desire which cost us the loss of our —, V.4.110.
- Desire.** *v. t.* II.2.73; and — her, II.2.159; III.6.95, 218; — to eat with her, IV.3.76; he much —s to have some speech with you, V.4.84; that we should things — which do cost us the loss of our desire, V.4.110; —d your spirit to send him hence forgiven, V.4.119.
- Despatch.** *v. t.* we — this grand act, I.1.163; as many as 20 to — (= *dispose of*), IV.1.136.
- Desperate.** *adj.* II.6.13.
- Despise.** *v. t.* — me, III.6.249, 257.
- Despiser.** both traitors, both —s of thee, III.6.137.
- Despising.** *n.* —s, III.6.33.
- Destiny.** *n.* II.2.5.
- Destroy.** *v. t.* V.1.23.
- Determine.** *v. t.* what shall we —, III.5.53.
- Deum.** *Lat.* III.5.11.
- Devil.** —s take 'em, II.2.264; all the —s roar [*Qo. devils*], II.6.1; raise me a — now, III.5.85; make death a —, III.6.270.
- Devour.** *v. t.* O grief and time, fearful consumers, you will all —, I.1.70.
- Dew.** *n.* the blissful — of heaven does arrowze you, V.4.102.
- Dian.** (= *Diana*) —'s wood, II.5.51. (*goddess*).
- Diana.** *pr. n.* chaste —, IV.2.58.
- Dido.** *pr. n.* IV.3.12.
- Die.** *v. i.* —d in perfume (= *faded away*), I.3.71; II.2.53; a willing man —s sleeping, II.2.68; we had —d as they do, II.2.109; I — for, II.3.3; command him —, II.5.41; *dying* almost a martyr, II.6.17; III.1.79; III.3.6; he dies for 't, III.3.53; though I had —d, III.6.41; III.6.105, 112, 129; both shall —, III.6.136; III.6.159, 177, 224, 269, 281, 290, 298; IV.2.112; — a bachelor, V.3.117; I should and would — too, V.3.144; loves thee *dying*, V.4.90; V.4.95.
- Differ.** *v. i.* these so —ing twins, I.3.33; a thousand —ing ways, I.5.14; —ing plunges (= *varying*), V.4.74.
- Difference.** *n. i.* (= *dissimilarity*) the — of men, II.1.53.
- ii. (= *quarrel*) we had a noble —, III.6.116; end this —, III.6.278.
- Dignity.** *n.* your —ies, I.4.11; 'fore thy — will dance, III.5.108.
- Dii.** *Lat.* III.5.83, 158.
- Dim.** *adj.* Primrose, firstborn child of Ver, merry springtime's har-binger, with her bells —, I.1.9.
- Dimple.** *v. t.* Fortune at you —d her cheek with smiles, I.1.66.
- Dinner.** *n.* V.2.107.
- Direct.** *v. t.* another —ing in his head, I.3.32; — your course, IV.1.142.
- Dirge.** *n.* sing my —, II.6.15.
- Dis.** *pr. n.* from — (= *Pluto*) to Daedalus, III.5.115.
- Disaster.** *n.* restraint and —s, II.1.39.



- Discharge.** *v. t.* I have this charge too. *Pal.* To — my life, II.2.262; thou here —st me, V.1.170.
- Disclaim.** *v. t.* all the ties between us I —, II.2.174.
- Discord.** *n.* (= *disunion*), I.1.23.
- Discourse.** *v. i.* — of many things, II.1.38; — you into health, III.6.38; III.6.129.
- Discover.** *v. t.* (= *explain*) —ed IV.1.19.
- Disdain.** *v. t.* III.1.71.
- Disgrace.** *n.* — and blows, II.5.59.
- Disguise.** *n.* (= *dress*) some poor —, II.3.80; III.6.144.
- Dishonour.** *n.* I.2.100; a bruise would be —, III.6.88.
- Disinsanity.** *n.* [*Qo.* *disensanity*] III.5.2.
- Dismal.** *adj.* doughty — fame, III.5.114.
- Disobedient.** *adj.* I.2.78.
- Disorder.** *n.* (= *misconduct*) fell to what —, V.4.66.
- Disparity.** *n.* the prejudice of —, V.3.88.
- Disperse.** *v. i.* —d, III.5.32.
- Dispose.** *v. i.* — of, II.5.32. *See* Well —d, IV.2.122.
- Disposer.** *n.* we had a noble difference but base —s of it (*i. e.* *the men who should hang us, and so end our quarrel*), III.6.117.
- Dispute.** *n.* with you leave —s that are above our question (= *not argue with those gods who are above arguing with us*), V.4.135.
- Disroot.** *v. t.* — his rider, V.4.75.
- Disseat.** *v. t.* to — his lord that kept it [*sc.* *seat*] bravely, V.4.72.
- Dissolve.** *v.* — my life. *Perhaps here intrans.*, my life *being nom.* to Dissolve), III.2.29.
- Distemper.** *n.* a harmless —, IV.3.2.
- Distemper.** *v. t.* she is then —ed far worse than now she shows, IV.1.118; hath —ed the other senses, IV.3.61.
- Distinguish.** *v. t.* that ruder tongues — villager (= *designate*), III.5.104; cannot —, but must cry for both (= *choose*), IV.2.54.
- Distraction.** *n.* her —, IV.3.1.
- Distress.** *n.* be advocate for us and our —es, I.1.32; I.1.105.
- Distress.** *v. t.* what woman . . . that is —t, I.1.36.
- Disturb.** *v. t.* III.3.15.
- Divide.** *v. t.* a —d sigh (= *cut in half: interrupted*), II.1.39.
- Dividual.** *adj.* [*Qo.* *individuall*] sex —, I.3.82.
- Divine.** *adj.* — arbitrament, V.3.107.
- Do.** *v. i.* how — you, noble cousin, II.2.1; will 't not — (= *serve*) rarely upon a skirt, II.2.129; how — you, II.2.131; how —es my sweetheart, III.5.148; how — ye, V.2.70; how —es she, V.4.25.
- Do.** *v. i.* thus should we —, I.1.232; — they so (= *act*), II.1.35; II.2.109, 177, 207; — sweetly, II.3.57; —ne worthily, II.5.1; those that prate and have —ne, (= *stop there*), V.1.119; V.2.10, 13.
- Do.** *v. incompl. pred.* *Prol.* 25, 30; I.1.37, 91, as asprays — [*sc.* *subdue*] the fish, I.1.138; I.1.189, 226; I.2.56; I.3.61, 64; II.1.21, 46; II.2.113, 163, 221, 258, 273; II.3.33; II.4.29, 32; II.5.57; II.6.10, 28; III.2.36; III.3.13, 26, 34; III.5.91; III.6.53; IV.1.72, 110, 139; you whose free nobleness *do* [*Qo.* *doe*, *plural verb with sing. nom.*], V.1.73; take me who *do* bear [*rel. pron.*, *first person*], V.1.95; V.1.104; V.2.75; V.3.61; &c.
- Do.** *v. t.* and something — to save us, *Prol.* 27; sword that —es good turns to the world, I.1.49; I.1.101, 134, 135, 149; to — . . . service, I.1.199; I.1.206; to — harm, I.2.71; what will the fall

- o' the stroke — damage, I.2.113; I.3.46; I.4.39; II.2.39, 68; — reverence, II.2.134; II.2.157; II.3.41, 50; II.4.27; II.5.26; to — observance, II.5.50; II.6.22, 25; III.1.77, 94; — the deed with a bent brow, III.1.101; III.2.11; III.5.22, 37, 75, 143; III.6.24, 46, 80, 144, 271; IV.1.71; she is —ne and undone in an hour, IV.1.123; he —es no wrongs, IV.2.134; — nothing, IV.3.20; ever I *did* it behind the arras, IV.3.47; IV.3.64; V.1.32; —ne any good upon her (= *to her*), V.2.1; V.2.7, 13, 17; — it home, V.2.37; V.2.42, 74, 99; V.3.133; V.4.25, 42, 94, 102.
- Doing.** *n.* presents itself to the —, I.1.151; forgets school — (= *training*), V.4.68.
- Doctor.** *n.* V.2.18, 23, 26, 39.
- Doer.** *n.* —s (= *performers of deeds of valour: contrasted with sufferers*), II.1.29.
- Dog.** *n.* —s, II.5.12; III.5.155.
- Dogskin.** *n.* the next gloves that I give her shall be —, III.5.45.
- Dole.** *n.* our — more deadly looks than dying (= *grief*), I.5.3.
- Dominie.** *n.* [*Qo.* Domine] the dainty — the schoolmaster, II.3.40; dear —, III.5.135; III.5.148.
- Don.** *v. t.* our friends — their helmets, I.3.19.
- Doom.** *v. t.* I could — neither (= *condemn*), V.1.156.
- Double.** *v. t.* be —d on her, II.2.242.
- Doubt.** *n.* without —, IV.2.97; V.2.93.
- Doubt.** *v. t.* —ed, III.1.61; IV.3.88.
- Doubtless.** *adv.* I.3.47; IV.2.11; V.3.70.
- Doughty.** *adj.* — duke, III.5.100; — dismal fame, III.5.114.
- Dove.** *n.* a —'s motion when the head's pluckt off, I.1.98; —s, *Stage dir.* p. 88.
- Dovelike.** *adj.* — before the altars of your helpers . . . bow down your stubborn bodies, V.1.11.
- Dowager.** *n.* —s, take hands, I.1.165.
- Down.** *n.* (*refrain of song*) a derry and a —, III.5.140. *Also with suffix* '—a,' the burden on't was —a, IV.3.10.
- Down.** *adv.* set —, I.1.34; tumbled —, I.1.68; I.1.107; II.2.152; let mine honour —, II.2.197; III.2.17; moon is —, III.2.35; III.3.9, 13; III.5.99; IV.1.62, 88; V.1.13, 52; he was kept — with hard meat, V.2.97; V.4.14.
- Downa.** *See* Down. *n.*
- Dowry.** *n.* V.2.64.
- Dowset.** *n.* the ladies eat his —s, III.5.157. *See notes.*
- Dozen.** *n.* death by —s [*Qo.* dussons], III.2.25.
- Drag.** *v. t.* my prize must be —ged out of blood, V.1.43.
- Dram.** *n.* cords, knives, —s, precipitance, I.1.142.
- Draught.** *n.* drink a good hearty —, III.3.17; III.3.19.
- Draw.** *v. t.* — thy feared sword, I.1.48; how to — out, fit to this enterprise, I.1.160; — i' the sequent trace, I.2.60; —'em [*sc.* swords] out like lightning, II.2.24; — up the company (= *arrange in order*), III.5.23; almost —n their spheres, V.1.114.
- Dread.** *adj.* the — eye of holy Phœbus, I.1.45; V.3.10.
- Dread.** *v. t.* most —ed Amazonian, I.1.78.
- Dreadful.** *adj.* I.3.39; a — clap of thunder, III.6.83.
- Dream.** *n.* V.4.48.
- Dream.** *v. i.* I.1.155; II.2.279; II.4.13; —'st upon my fortune, III.1.24; IV.3.4.
- Dregged.** *adj.* when that his action's — with mind assured 'tis bad he goes about [*Qo.* dregd], I.2.97.

- Drift.** *adj.* waters that — winds force to raging, V.3.100.
- Drink.** i. *v. i.* III.3.6; save often —ing, IV.3.4; — to her, IV.3.77.
- ii. *v. t.* — a good hearty draught, III.3.17. See **Drunk**.
- Drive.** *v. i.* the matters too far —n between him, II.3.43; what pushes are we wenchers —n to, II.4.6.
- Drop.** *n.* melts into —s, I.1.108; though I know his ocean needs not my poor —s, I.3.7.
- Drop.** *v. i.* chance to — on such a mistress, III.1.14; IV.1.88.
- Drown.** *v. i.* an eddy where we should turn or —, I.2.11; III.2.30.
- Drum.** *n.* [*Qo. drom*] V.1.57; make Mars spurn his —, I.1.182; Mars's —, V.1.80.
- Drunk.** *adj.* — with his victory, I.1.158.
- Dry.** *n.* neither wet nor —, I.1.121.
- Due.** *n.* as your —, y' are hers (= *right*), II.5.37; receive all —s fit for the honour you have won, II.5.60; let no —s be wanting, V.1.5 (= *fit observances*).
- Due.** *adj.* — audience of the gods, I.2.83; which cannot want — mercy, III.6.209; — justice, V.4.109.
- Duke.** *n.* (*applied to Theseus*) I.1.47, 139; II.1.45; II.2.223, 229; II.3.45, 52, 66; II.6.1; III.1.1; III.3.20; III.5.12, 100, 114, 142; III.6.54, 108, 168, 177, 244, 261, 266, 281; IV.1.9, 75; IV.2.55; V.2.61.
- Dukedom.** *n.* to tread upon thy —, III.6.254; all parts of the —, IV.1.134.
- Dull.** *adj.* keep a little — time from us. *Prolog.* 31; a mere — shadow, IV.2.26 (= *uninteresting*).
- Dumb.** *adj.* sentencing for aye their vigour —, I.1.195 [*Qo. dombe*].
- Dunce.** *n.* —s, III.5.11.
- Dure.** *Qo. for dare, q. v.* I.3.5. See **Out** —, III.6.10.
- Dust.** *n.* — and shadow, I.1.145; to put life into —, V.1.110.
- Dusty.** *adj.* — and old titles, V.1.64.
- Duty.** *n.* III.6.18.
- Dwell.** *v. i.* a note whereon her spirits would sojourn, rather — on, I.3.77; II.3.83; —s fair-eyed honour, II.5.29; II.6.35; her eye will — upon his object, V.3.49.
- Dwelling.** *n.* live in fair —, V.3.55.
- Dying.** *n.* our dole more deadly looks than —, I.5.3.
- Each.** *distr. pron.* III.1.1; III.6.291.
- Each.** *adj.* I.3.47, 54; I.4.11; I.5.16; II.3.9; III.1.104; III.2.34; V.3.4, 121.
- Eagle.** *n.* young —s, II.2.34.
- Ear.** *n.* wealthy —s (*of corn*), II.3.78.
- Ear.** *n.* the — o' the world, I.1.134; —s of heavenly justice, I.2.81; had mine — stolen some new air, I.3.74; III.1.71; stop . . . thy noble — against us, III.6.174; I gave my — (= *listened*), IV.1.57; lend thine —, V.1.146; eye and —, V.3.15; set both thine —s to the business, V.3.92; the — o' the night, V.3.124; give the tidings —, V.4.46.
- Ear.** *v. t.* that I —ed her language (= *gave ear to*), III.1.29.
- Early.** See **Rarely**, IV.1.110; **Dearly**, V.4.47.
- Earn.** *v. t.* —'st a deity, I.1.227.
- Earth.** *n.* thou purger of the —, I.1.48; I.1.114; heaven and —, I.4.1; III.1.80; III.3.45; any piece the — has, III.6.263; heal'st with blood the —, V.1.65. See **Unearthed**, V.1.52.
- Easily.** *adv.* II.6.20.
- East.** *n.* by — and north — to the King of Pigmies, III.4.15.



- East.** *adj.* — wind, II.2.13.
- Eat.** *i. v. t.* I.3.21; II.3.42; III.3.20; III.5.80, 157; V.2.5.
- ii. *v. i.* II.1.37; IV.3.67, 76, 83.  
*See* **Beast-eating**, III.5.131.
- Ebb.** *n.* general of —s and flows, V.1.163.
- Echo.** *n.* the —es of his shame have deaf, I.2.80; that shook the aged forest with their —es (*of baying dogs*), II.2.47.
- Eddy.** *n.* bring us to an —, I.2.10.
- Edict.** *n.* thy own —, III.6.145; III.6.168.
- Edify.** *v. t.* he himself will — the duke, II.3.52; stay and —. We will —, III.5.95, 98 (*used here fantastically* = 'instruct' and 'be instructed').
- Eel.** *n.* an — and woman, III.5.48. *See* **Tail**.
- E'er.** *adv.* *See* **Ever**, I.1.88; where —, I.2.32; II.2.33.
- Effect.** *v. t.* do — rare issues by their operance, I.3.63.
- Eftsoons.** *adv.* might — come between, III.1.12.
- Egg.** *n.* II.3.74.
- Eighteen.** *adj.* she's —, V.2.31.
- Eighty.** *adj.* — winters, V.1.108.
- Either.** *distr. pron.* III.5.50; III.6.23.
- Either.** *adj.* — way I'm happy, II.3.22.
- Either.** *adv.* I.1.194; I.2.58; IV.1.49.
- Eke.** *adv.* (= *also*). the Bavian with long tail and — long tool, III.5.132.
- Election.** *n.* I am guiltless of —, (= *choice*), V.1.154.
- Element.** *n.* like the —s, I.3.61.
- Eleven.** *adj.* when our count was each — [*Qo.* each a —], I.3.54; from — to ninety, V.1.130.
- Else.** *adv.* (= *otherwise*), II.2.200; II.5.61; III.3.38; III.4.9, 26; III.5.77, 106; aught — to say (= *more*), III.6.93; III.6.127; will bear the curses — of after ages, III.6.187; III.6.260, 302; I must be abroad — (= *besides*), IV.1.110; IV.1.113; IV.2.2; V.1.42, 159; V.2.75; I had no end in 't —, V.3.75; V.4.64.
- Elysium.** *n.* thy brave soul seek — [*Qo.* *Elizium*], V.4.95.
- 'Em.** *common contraction for them, which see.* I.1.38; I.4.28, 35, 36, 37; II.1.23, 26, 44; II.2.12, 13, 17, 24, 34, 65, 128, 251, 264, 274; II.3.2; III.5.152; IV.1.89, 100, 125, 126; IV.2.25, 40, 64, 65, 70, 114, 133, 134, 142, 149, 152; V.1.1, 7; V.3.133; V.4.15.
- Emblem.** *n.* it (*sc.* *rose*) is the very — of a maid, II.2.137.
- Emboss.** *v. t.* a charging-staff, — with silver, IV.2.140.
- Embrace.** *n.* sweet —s of a loving wife, II.2.30; my —s, III.6.22.
- Embrace.** *v. t.* I do — you and your offer (2 = *accept*), III.1.93; I — ye, III.6.300; let me — thee, V.1.31.
- Emilia.** *See* **Emily**. *female proper name*, II.5.49; III.1.4, 26; III.6.126, 146, 272; IV.3.11; V.4.90, 94.
- Emily.** *See* **Emilia**. II.5.52; III.1.16, 76; III.3.42, 44; V.3.106, 111; V.4.49.
- Emulous.** *adj.* two — Philomels, V.3.124.
- Enamelled.** *adj.* th' — knacks o' the mead or garden (= *variegated*), III.1.7.
- Enclose.** *v. t.* would — thee, III.1.30.
- Encompass.** *v. t.* IV.1.62.
- Encounter.** *v. t.* —ed yet his better, V.3.123.
- End.** *n. i.* (= *conclusion*), I.3.80; one sure —, I.5.14; have an — of it, II.1.17; III.2.38; — of the world, V.2.72; the — of the combat, V.3.78; miserable —, V.4.86; in whose — (= *at the end of 'a day or two'*), V.4.126.
- ii. (= *purpose, object*) who did



- propound for his bold —s, honour and golden ingots, I.2.17; I had no — in't else, V.3.75; to this — made, V.4.64; we have our —, *Epil.* 15.
- iii. comes on — (*horse rearing*) V.4.67; on his hind hoofs on — he stands, V.4.77.
- iv. (= *death*) the law will have the honour of our —s, III.6.130.
- End.** i. *v. t.* ere you can — this feast, I.1.224; make me, or — my fortunes, II.3.22; II.3.59; — this difference, III.6.278; IV.1.5, 25; — their strife, IV.2.3; to — the quarrel? Yes. Would I might — (*intrans.* = *die*) first, IV.2.57.
- ii. *v. i.* see line above.
- Ending.** *n.* what — could be of more content, V.4.15.
- Endless.** *adj.* it were an — thing *ProL* 22; II.2.79.
- Endowment.** *n.* wise nature, with all her best —s, all those beauties she sows into the births of noble bodies, IV.2.8.
- Endure.** *v. t.* who — [*Qo.* endured] the beaks of ravens, I.1.40; II.6.10.
- Enemy.** *n.* I.2.109; II.2.196; the which, to you being —, cannot to me be kind (? *adj.*), III.1.49; III.6.43, 75; V.1.8, 21; V.3.36.
- Enforce.** *v. t.* — a freedom, II.1.32; till I may — my remedy, III.1.123; — the god snatch up (*omission of 'to'*), IV.2.16.
- Engine.** like an — bent (= *like a gun cocked*), V.3.42.
- Engraff.** *v. t.* 'tis not an —ed madness (= *superinduced by external influences*). See *Intro.* § 62), IV.3.42.
- Enjoy.** *v. t.* I —ed a playfellow, I.3.50; to — her, II.2.165; I would fain — him, II.4.30; III.1.122; I never shall — her, III.6.268; they cannot both — you, III.6.275; he shall — her, III.6.296; may you never more — the light, IV.1.104.
- Enjoying.** *n.* the — of our griefs, II.2.60; the free — of that face, II.3.3.
- Enormous.** *adj.* corrector of — times (= *rank, plethoric, degenerate*), V.1.62.
- Enough.** *adj.* I.3.92; II.2.2, 121, 229; III.3.16; III.6.62; that will never be — (*sc. boiled*), IV.3.33; V.3.7, 60.
- Enquire.** i. *v. t.* when I —d their names, I.4.22.
- ii. *v. i.* run and —, V.3.72.
- Enrich.** *v. t.* she the grave —ed, I.3.51.
- Entangle.** *v. t.* tied, weaved, —d, I.3.42.
- Enter.** i. *v. t.* — your musite, III.1.97.
- ii. *v. i.* V.1.1, 7, 148.
- Enterprise.** *n.* I.1.160.
- Entertain.** *v. t.* —'st a hope to blast my wishes, II.2.171.
- Enthroned.** *v. t.* keep —d in your dear heart, I.3.10.
- Entice.** *v. t.* — a miller's mare, V.2.66.
- Entreat.** *v. i.* [*Qo.* sometimes intreat]. I am —ing of myself to do that, I.1.206; II.5.45; III.3.13; III.6.210; if she —, V.2.17.
- Envious.** *adj.* so — to me, II.2.265; — flint, V.4.61.
- Envy.** *n.* — of ill men crave our acquaintance, II.2.90; V.3.21.
- Envy.** *v. i.* do such a justice thou thyself wilt —, III.6.155.
- Epitaph.** *n.* and had their — the people's curses, II.2.110; soldiers sing my —, III.6.285.
- Equal.** *adj.* — with Mars, I.1.228; his mind, nurse — (= *impartial*), to these so differing twins, I.3.32; your — (= *peer*), III.1.55; of — sweetness, IV.2.53; the gods have been most — (= *impartial*), V.4.115.
- Equal.** *adv.* they are — precious, V.1.155.

**Equally.** *adv.* that — canst poise,  
I.1.86; III.6.224.

**Ere.** *adv.* = (*before*) weep — you  
fail, I.1.95; I.1.224; II.2.17;  
II.3.42; III.1.98; III.5.146;  
III.6.184; IV.1.6; IV.3.54; V.  
1.19; — long, *Epil.* 15.

**Err.** *v. i.* I.4.5; never- — ing, I.2.  
114.

**Errant.** *adj.* each — step beside is  
torment, III.2.34.

**Error.** *n.* (= *defect*) these that we  
count — s. IV.2.31.

**Escape.** *n.* III.2.22; IV.1.2, 50.

**Escape.** *v. i.* he *escapt*, IV.1.20.

**Estate.** *v. t.* I will — your daughter  
in what I've promised, II.1.10.

**Et.** *Lat.* *Et opus exegi quod nec*  
*Jovis ira nec ignis*, III.5.88.  
[*Skeat En opus.*]

**Eternally.** *adv.* II.2.117.

**Eternity.** *n.* constant to — it lives,  
*Prolog.* 14.

**Even.** *n.* good — (= *evening*),  
IV.1.115.

**Even.** *v. t.* — each thing our  
haste does leave (= *smoothe*),  
I.4.11.

**Even.** *adv.* (= *just*) not to be —  
jump (= *exactly*), I.2.40; — as,  
I.3.90; II.2.15, 56, 227; III.5.5;  
IV.1.114; IV.2.47; IV.3.15; V.  
1.29, 80; V.2.87; V.3.24; — he  
that led you, V.4.22; V.4.80; —  
very here, V.4.99; V.4.118.

**Evening.** *n.* II.4.19. *See* **Even.**

**Event.** *n.* let the —, that never-  
erring arbitrator, tell us (= *result*),  
I.2.113.

**Ever.** *adv.* I.1.205; for —, I.3.24;  
I.4.2; II.2.4, 80, 115, 278; II.3.  
83; II.4.10, 13; II.5.3, 33, 58;  
II.6.35; III.1.36, 37, 38; III.6.  
184, 200, 246; where — they shall  
travel — stranger to one another,  
III.6.255; III.6.277; IV.1.25, 81,  
115; as — you heard, IV.1.133;  
IV.2.109; IV.3.11, 47, 54; V.2.  
33; V.3.22, 68, 109, 115; V.4.25.  
*See* **E'er**; **Ever-blinded**; **What**  
—; **Where** —, &c.

**Ever-blinded.** *adj.* — fortune,  
II.2.38.

**Every.** *adj.* I.1.54, 183; I.2.38,  
39; — [*Quo. fury*] innocent, I.3.  
79; II.2.98; II.3.55; II.4.27;  
III.1.99; III.6.38, 220; IV.3.7,  
76; V.2.14; V.3.3. *See* **Thing**.

**Evil.** *n.* I.2.38, 40.

**Eye.** *n.* the dread — of holy  
Phœbus, I.1.45; then weaker  
than your — s [*Quo. cies*], I.1.67;  
our — s, I.1.156; Heaven's good  
— s, I.4.13; to close mine — s,  
II.2.93; beshrew mine — s, II.2.  
158; II.2.169; her bright — s  
shine on ye, II.2.236; bright — s,  
II.3.9; II.4.11; lived in her — s,  
[= *sight*], III.1.29; I have not  
closed mine — s, III.2.27; I'll  
cut my green coat a foot above  
my knee, And I'll clip my yellow  
locks an inch below mine *eye* (= *eye*),  
III.4.20; thy twinkling — s,  
III.5.117; her — s, III.6.169; the  
misadventure of their own — s  
kill 'em, III.6.190; by your own  
— s, III.6.205; as goodly as your  
own — s, III.6.276; an —, of what  
a fiery sparkle and quick sweet-  
ness, IV.2.12; — as heavy as if  
he had lost his mother, IV.2.27;  
the — s, these the bright lamps  
of beauty, IV.2.38; the circle of  
his — s, IV.2.81; his roiling — s,  
IV.2.108; intemperate surfeit of  
her —, IV.3.61; IV.3.70; V.1.21;  
from his globy — s had almost  
drawn their spheres, V.1.113;  
thy rare green —, V.1.144; of  
mine — s were I to lose one, V.1.  
154; mine —, V.3.9; — and ear,  
V.3.15; kindle their valour at  
your —, V.3.30; his — is like an  
engine bent, V.3.41; V.3.48; one  
— of yours conceives a tear, V.3.  
137; four such — s, V.3.145; close  
thine — s, V.4.96. *See* **Black-**  
**eyed**, IV.1.72; **Fair-eyed**, II.  
2.37; II.5.29; IV.1.8; **Gray-**  
**eyed**, IV.2.131; **Great-eyed**,  
IV.2.20; **Quick-eyed**, I.5.8;  
**Red-eyed**, II.2.21.

**Eye-glance.** *n.* even with an — to

- choke Mars' drum and turn th' alarm to whispers, V.1.80.
- Example.** your advice is cried up with —, I.2.13; to take — by her, II.2.147.
- Exceed.** i. *v. t.* the very lees of such, millions of rates, — the wine of others (= *surpass*), I.4.30; that nature ne'er —ed nor ne'er shall, II.3.12.  
ii. *v. i.* wilt thou — (= *excel*) in all, III.6.46.
- Excellent.** *adj.* II.3.53; well I could have wrestled, the best men called it — (? = *excellently well*), II.3.77; III.5.150; so — a beauty, III.6.162; III.6.286.
- Excess.** *n.* — and overflow of power, I.3.4.
- Exclaim.** *v. i.* —ed against the horses of the sun, I.2.86.
- Execute.** *v. t.* (= *perform*) to — their pre-ordained faculties, IV.3.62.
- Execution.** *n.* his sports . . . passed slightly his careless —, I.3.29; let us put it in —, IV.3.88.
- Executioner.** *n.* they (*sc.* the gods) themselves become the —s, V.4.122.
- Exegi.** *Lat.* See **Et**, III.5.88.
- Exercise.** *v. t.* — our arms (= *practise with our weapons*), II.2.18.
- Expectation.** *n.* III.1.14; V.3.105.
- Expel.** *v. t.* —s the seeds of fear, V.1.36.
- Expire.** *v. i.* ere one of us —, V.1.19; we —, V.4.4.
- Express.** *adj.* stand for — will (= *explicit, definitive resolve*), III.6.229.
- Extant.** *adj.* She's all the beauty — (= *in the world*), II.2.148.
- Extinct.** *adj.* V.1.70; I am — (= *without radiance, invisible*), V.3.20.
- Extravagant.** *adj.* a most — vagary, IV.3.63.
- Extreme.** *n.* a settled valour, not tainted with —s (= *violences*), IV.2.101.
- Extremely.** *adv.* II.2.206; — loved him, II.4.15; your teeth will bleed —, III.5.81.
- Extremity.** *n.* — that sharpens sundry wits, makes me a fool (= *dire difficulty or peril*), I.1.118.
- Exulting.** *n.* V.3.89.
- Fable.** *v. i.* to say verity and not to — (= *tell untruth*), III.5.105.
- Face.** *n.* II.3.3; II.5.21; II.6.31; content and anger in me have but one —, III.1.108; III.6.186, 188; what a sweet — has Arcite, IV.2.7; IV.2.77; of a — far sweeter, IV.2.95; IV.2.98, 105; *Epil.* 6. See **Freckle-faced**, IV.2.120; **Round-faced**, IV.2.135.
- Facto.** *Lat.* ipso —, V.2.37.
- Faculty.** *n.* the —ies of other instruments, I.2.68; preordained —ies (*of the senses*), IV.3.63.
- Fail.** *n.* on — of some condition (= *non-fulfilment, failure*), I.2.105.
- Fail.** i. *v. i.* I.1.95; II.3.42; oh state of nature, — together in me, III.2.31; save what I — in, III.2.37; an eel and woman . . . will either —, III.5.50; if he — (*sc.* to come), III.6.3; [*Edd. for fall, which see*], III.6.236.  
ii. *v. t.* that never —ed her master, III.5.27; an she — me, III.5.46; we dare not — thee, III.6.305.
- Fain.** *adv.* I would — enjoy him, II.4.30; you would — be at that fight, III.6.60; you would — be nibbling, V.2.87.
- Faint.** *adj.* maiden pinks, of odour —, I.1.4; III.3.7.
- Faint.** *v. i.* he that —s now, III.6.121; never —ing under the weight of arms, IV.2.129 (= *flag, quail*).
- Fair.** *adj.* bird melodious or bird —, I.1.17; wish your Womb may



- thrive with — ones, I.1.27; you were that time —, I.1.62; not Juno's mantle —er than your tresses, I.1.63; a — boy, II.2.120; II.2.123; she is wondrous —, II.2.148; your — cousin's company, II.2.226; II.2.232, 234; II.3.15; a cousin — as he too, II.4.16; — gentle maid, II.4.24; this — gentleman, II.5.32; her — birthday, II.5.36; her — hand, II.5.37; — coz, III.1.52; the whole week's not — if any day it rain (= *fine*), III.1.65; a — foe (= *just*), III.6.8; III.6.18; these — terms (= *courteous*), III.6.25; the — Emilia, III.6.146; III.6.169; — hand, III.6.197; three — knights, III.6.292; —and knightly strength, III.6.295; Palamon, — Palamon, IV.1.81; — nymph, IV.1.86; O —, O sweet, IV.1.113; the wind is — (= *favourable*), IV.1.145; a — wood (*See Wood*), IV.1.149; two — gawds (= *pretty toys*), IV.2.53; their — knights; now, my — sister, IV.2.67; — hopes, IV.2.99; —er promises, IV.2.118; young — feere, V.1.116; this — token, V.1.133; he's a very — one (= *good*), V.2.46; very — hand (= *skilful*), V.2.58; — hand, V.2.86; so — a choice, V.2.92; in — dwelling, V.3.55; — Emily, V.3.106; — Emilia, V.4.94. *See Fair-eyed.*
- Fair.** *adv.* —er spoken was never gentleman, II.4.20. *Qo.* faire. *Edd.* fire or far, IV.2.81.
- Fair-eyed.** *adj.* the — maids, II.2.37; — honour, II.5.29; — Emilia, IV.1.8.
- Fairly.** *adv.* so we may — carry our cause, III.6.259; suits — granted, IV.1.27.
- Faith.** affect another's gait, which is not catching where there is — (= *self-reliance*), I.2.46; puts — in a fever (= *trust, steadfastness*), I.2.66; I.3.97; seal my vowed —, II.5.39; out with 't, —! (*exclam.* = *in faith!*), III.3.33; III.6.1, 61, 67, 163, 196; make my — reel (= *resolve waver*), III.6.212; my virgin's — has fled me, IV.2.46; —! IV.3.25; in —, I will not, V.3.29.
- Faithfully.** *adv.* II.5.56; III.5.43.
- Fall.** *n.* the — o' the stroke, I.2.113.
- Fall.** *i. v. i.* if we let —, *Prol.* 15; our losses — so thick, *Prol.* 32; *fell* before the wrath of cruel Creon, I.1.39; I.2.73; sometimes here modesty will blow so far she —s for it, II.2.145; — on like fire (= *attack*), II.2.252; three fools *fell* out about an howlet, III.5.67; let — the birch, III.5.110; am I —en much away, III.6.66; that day the three kings *fell*, III.6.71; his weary soul that —s [in battle] may win it, III.6.99; if I —, III.6.104; III.6.178, 225; if I — from that mouth I — with favour (= *die by command of*), III.6.282; a hair shall never — of these men, III.6.287; grudge to — (= *die*), III.6.297; IV.1.102; — for me, IV.2.4; — untimely, IV.2.69; *Stage Dir.* p. 90; V.1.169; V.3.3, 5; *fell* to what disorder, V.4.66; *fell* off his head, V.4.80. *Peculiar use* = *fail*: — I tie ye to your word now, if ye — in it, III.6.236; let it not — again, Sir, III.6.272. (*See Notes.*)
- ii. v. t.* (= *drop*) cherries shall their sweetness — upon thy, I.1.178. *See Crest-fallen*, III.6.7.
- False.** *adj.* II.2.173, 209; —st cousin, III.1.37; III.5.51; —r, III.6.142; Venus I've said is —, V.4.45; —, but never treacherous, V.4.93.
- Falsehood.** *n.* II.2.230; it is a — she is in, which is with —s to be combated (= *delusion*), IV.3.81, 82.
- Fame.** *n.* your — knolls in the ear of the world, I.1.133; doughty dismal —, III.5.114; as noble as



- ever — yet spoke of, III.6.277; — and honour . . . should clap their wings, IV.2.21; their — has fired me so, IV.2.153. *See* Report, II.1.26.
- Fame.** *v. t.* my —d work, *Prol.* 20; they are —d to be a pair of absolute men, II.1.25.
- Family.** *n.* II.2.82.
- Famish.** *v. t.* delay commends us to a —ing hope, I.1.167.
- Famous.** never went more — yet twixt Po and silver Trent, *Prol.* 12.
- Fan.** O — from me the witless chaff, *Prol.* 18. *See* Wind-fanned.
- Fancy.** *n. i.* (= *love*) is gone after his —, III.2.2; the bent of woman's —, IV.2.33; what a mere child is —, IV.2.52; proclaimed your —, V.4.118.
- ii.* (= *imagination*) she continues this —, IV.3.42; our reasons are not prophets when oft our —ies are, V.3.103. *See* After.
- Fantastical.** *adj.* he's as —, IV.3.11.
- Far.** *adv.* II.2.144; II.3.43; II.5.5; III.1.16; III.6.62; so — from what she was, IV.1.39; IV.1.54, 99; from — off, IV.1.100; — worse [*Qo. for*], IV.1.119; IV.2.20, 95; V.2.7, 72. *See* Fair, IV.2.81.
- Farce.** *v. t.* she —s every business withal, IV.3.7.
- Fare.** *v. i.* so it —d long between these kinsmen, V.3.128; how do things —, V.4.45. *See* Farewell.
- Farewell.** I.1.167, 219, 225; I.3.1; II.2.178, 276; II.6.37; III.1.98, 123; III.3.51; III.6.106; V.1.32, 34; V.3.36; V.4.19, 92.
- Farther.** *adv.* the apprehension, which still is — off it [*var. father. See* Notes], V.1.37.
- Fast.** *adv.* — by, II.6.6.
- Fat.** *n.* all the —'s i' the fire, III.5.39.
- Fat.** *adj.* mine host and his — spouse, III.5.128.
- Fat.** *v. i.* I lay —ting like a swine (= *fattening*), III.6.12.
- Fate.** *n.* I.1.165; I.2.102; I.3.41; my stars, my —, IV.3.49.
- Father.** *n.* II.2.36, 81; II.4.3; II.5.6, 8, 22, 58; II.6.9, 26, 37; III.2.22; III.4.16; you —s are fine fools, V.2.28; V.2.33, 80; V.4.3. *See* Farther, V.1.37.
- Fatuus.** *Lat.* we have been —, and laboured vainly, III.5.41.
- Favour.** *n.* hung with the painted —s of their ladies, II.2.11; now and then a — and a frisk, III.5.30; I fall with —, III.6.282; about his head he wears the winner's oak, and in it stuck the — of his lady, IV.2.138.
- Favour.** *v. t.* if you but —, III.5.102.
- Favourite.** *n.* a —'s glass, I.2.55.
- Fear.** *n.* this is the — we bring, *Prol.* 21; II.2.189; III.1.60; hath grief slain —, III.2.5; IV.1.50; the seeds of —, and the apprehension which still is farther off [*var. father of*] it, V.1.36; seasoned with holy —, V.1.149.
- Fear.** *i. v. t.* draw thy —ed sword, I.1.48; I.2.43; one that —s not to do harm, I.2.71; we — the gods in him, I.2.94; II.2.4, 244; III.3.9, 51; III.6.125; only this —s me (= *frightens*), III.6.129. *See* All-feared, V.1.13.
- ii. v. i.* III.3.3; —, he cannot, he shows no such soft temper, IV.2.102.
- Fearful.** *adj.* O grief and time, — consumers, you will all devour (= *terrible*), I.1.70; I am cruel — (= *very frightened*), *Epil.* 3.
- Fearless.** *adj.* IV.2.80.
- Feast.** *n.* keep the — full, I.1.220; the —'s solemnity shall want till your return, I.1.221; I.1.224; V.1.102.
- Feat.** *n.* praise my — in horse-manship, II.5.13; give me language such as thou hast showed me — (= *action*), III.1.45; force and great —, V.1.43.

- Fee.** *n.* that neck which is my —, I.1.198 (= *possession*).
- Feeble.** *adj.* II.2.216.
- Feed.** *i. v. t.* —s the lake with waters, IV.1.87; you talk of —ing me to breed me strength, III.1.119.
- ii. *v. i.* II.2.241; II.3.10; III.2.19.
- Feel.** *v. t.* who cannot — nor see the rain, being in it, I.1.120; what thou —'st, I.1.181; II.2.19, 158, 178; III.3.18; III.6.8, 36; say I *felt* compassion, III.6.212; III.6.271; he has *felt*, IV.2.96.
- Feere.** *n.* his young fair —, V.1.116. *See* **Play-feere**, IV.3.79.
- Fell.** *adj.* might call — things to listen (= *terrible*), III.2.15.
- Fellow.** *n.* a — (*contemptuously*) false as thy title to her, II.2.172; a pretty —, II.3.68; II.3.71; a suing —, IV.3.48. *See* **Play-fellow**.
- Female.** *adj.* [*Qo.* femall] thy — knights, V.1.140.
- Feril.** *See* **Fire**, III.5.52.
- Ferry.** *n.* a piece of silver on the tip of your tongue, or no —, IV.3.17.
- Ferula.** *n.* humble with a — the tall ones, III.5.112.
- Fescue.** *n.* put a — in her fist (*obscene*), II.3.34.
- Fever.** *n.* [*Qo.* feavour], I.2.66; I.4.42.
- Few.** *adj.* III.5.103; he had not so — last night as twenty to despatch, IV.1.135; being so — and well-disposed, IV.2.122.
- Fidius.** *Lat.* medius —, III.5.11.
- Fie.** *interj.* II.2.205; III.5.1.
- Field.** *n.* the foul — of Thebes, I.1.42; I.1.99; in the — to strike a battle, II.2.254; — of corn, II.3.78; — (*of battle*), III.1.21; to you I give the —, IV.2.150; havoc in vast — (*sc.* of battle), V.1.51; — (*of tourney*), V.2.100.
- Fierce.** *adj.* —st tyrant, V.1.78; — sulphur, V.4.64.
- Fierceness.** *n.* (*of tigers*), V.1.40.
- Fiery.** *adj.* [*Qo.* fyry] — horses, II.2.19; — mind, II.5.22; eye, of what a — sparkle, IV.2.13.
- Fifteen.** *adj.* II.4.7.
- Fight.** *n.* —s [*var.* frights], I.4.40; you would fain be at that — (= *mode of fighting*), III.6.60; the loves and —s of gods, IV.2.24; IV.2.111.
- Fight.** *v. i.* *fought*, I.2.19; they have *fought* out together, I.3.40; III.1.68; III.6.12, 63, 101, 154; — about you, III.6.221; what he —s for, IV.2.97; IV.2.143; V.1.15; V.4.99. *See* **Sight**, V.2.103.
- Figure.** *n.* no — of ourselves (= *images*, = *children*), II.2.33; by a — (*sc.* of speech), III.5.5; utter learned things and many —s, III.5.15; sweetly by a — trace and turn boys (*in dancing*), III.5.21; III.5.107; the spoiling of his — (= *body*, see *Introd.* § 65), V.3.59.
- Filch.** *v. t.* to — affection from another, II.2.212.
- File.** *n.* —s, II.6.7; so he had this —, III.2.8; food and —s, III.3.2; III.3.48 (= *instrument for filing*).
- File.** *n.* the — and quality I hold I may continue in thy band (= *rank*), V.1.161.
- File.** *v. t.* these impediments will I — off, III.1.85.
- Filii.** *Lat.* III.5.137.
- Fill.** *v. t.* I.5.5.
- Find.** *v. t.* we shall —, I.1.213; I.2.32; go and — out, I.4.6; II.2.28, 99, 108, 184; II.4.7; II.5.57, 58; II.6.14; III.1.45; III.4.12; III.6.21, 49, 109, 111, 182, 189; IV.1.47, 69; IV.2.33, 133; V.2.29, 40, 77; V.3.26; which superstition here —s allowance (= *is believed in*), V.4.54.
- Fine.** *adj.* a — frog, III.4.12; a — song? Oh, a very — one, IV.1.105; a — young gentleman, IV.1.117; a — man, IV.1.119;

- great and — art in nature, IV.2.123; — fools, V.2.28; V.2.50, 70.
- Finely.** *adv.* V.2.48; perfume me —, V.2.89; V.2.95.
- Finger.** *n.* I.3.43; gout had knit his —s into knots, V.1.112.
- Finish.** *v. i.* V.1.18.
- Fire.** *n.* fall on like —, II.2.252; all the fat's i' the —, III.5.39; a — ill take her (*See Notes*), III.5.52; the circle of his eyes show — [*Qo. faire*], within him (= *spirit, courage*), IV.2.81; stand in —, IV.3.36; IV.3.46; new —, V.1.69; V.1.91; — in flax, V.3.98; — malevolent, V.4.63; hot horse, full of —, V.4.65.
- Fire.** *v. t.* their fame has —d me so (= *excited*), IV.2.153.
- First.** *adj. Prol.* 6, 16; — nature (= *primæval*), I.1.82; your — thought, I.1.135; II.2.161, 162; II.4.22; III.3.9, 45; III.5.122; III.6.53; IV.2.76, 90; V.3.126.
- First.** *adv.* I.2.14; II.2.168, 169, 196; III.6.82, 209; IV.2.57; V.2.20, 22; V.4.50, 99, 117. *See First-born.*
- First-born.** *adj.* Primrose, — child of Ver, I.1.7.
- Fish.** *n.* as asprays do the —, I.1.138.
- Fish.** *v. i.* he that will — for my least minnow, let him lead his line to catch, I.1.115.
- Fisherman.** *n.* [*Qo. fisher men*], IV.1.64.
- Fist.** *n.* II.3.34.
- Fit.** *n.* her ancient — of jealousy, I.2.22; V.2.10, 11.
- Fit.** *adj.* none — for the dead, I.1.141; —t'st time, I.1.169; II.2.241; all dues — for the honour, II.5.61; III.6.34; — to kill thee, III.6.44; III.6.171; anything — for my modest suit, III.6.235; red lips, after fights, are — for ladies, IV.2.111.
- Fit.** *v. t.* I'll — thee, III.5.58; if you feel yourself not —ting yet, III.6.36; IV.2.151; —s it to every question, IV.3.7; well she knew what hour my fit would take me . . . And when your fit comes, — her home, and presently, V.2.11.
- Fit.** *adv.* Artesius, that best knowest how to draw out — to this enterprise the primest for this proceeding . . . forth any levy our worthiest instruments, I.1.160 [*Dyce reads draw out, fit, &c., making fit an imperative, but the true construction would rather appear to be as in the text; fit to = suitably for*].
- Five.** *adj.* IV.2.116.
- Fix.** *v. t.* I —t my note (= *observed*), I.4.19; had —ed her liking on this, IV.3.56; should be so —ed on one, V.3.145.
- Flame.** *n.* skipt thy —, V.1.87; —s, V.1.91.
- Flame.** *v. i.* whom —ing War doth scorch, I.1.91; to blow the nearness out that —s between ye, V.1.10.
- Flavina.** [*Qo. Flavia*], *fem. name*, I.3.54, 84.
- Flax.** *n.* fire in —, V.3.98.
- Flee.** *v. i.* my virgin's faith has fled me, IV.2.46.
- Flesh.** *n.* the way of — (= *carnally*), V.2.35.
- Flinch.** *v. i.* does she — now, III.5.52.
- Fling.** *v. t.* II.2.239; III.5.17.
- Flint.** *n.* envious —, V.4.61.
- Flinty.** *adj.* — pavement, V.4.59.
- Flirt.** *See Flurt.*
- Float.** *v. i.* a vessel 't is that —s but for the surge that next approaches, V.4.83.
- Flood.** *n.* sought the — (= *water*), IV.1.95.
- Flourish.** *n.* [*Qo. florish*] (*sc. of trumpets*), *Stage Dir. Prol.* 1; V.4.137; *Epil.* 18.
- Flourish.** *v. i.* make a cripple — with his crutch, V.1.82.



**Flow.** *n.* our general of ebbs and —s (i.e. *the moon*), V.1.163.

**Flow.** *See* O'er—.

**Flower.** *n.* I.3.66; II.2.119; work such —s in silk, II.2.127; II.2.135, 149, 235; III.1.9; —s to bury you, IV.1.78; IV.1.85; pick —s with Proserpine, IV.3.21; IV.3.72; queen of —s. V.1.45; I, a virgin —, must grow alone, unplucked, V.1.167; the — is fallen, V.1.169. *See* Fresh —s, IV.1.85.

**Flowery.** *adj.* — May, II.5.51.

**Fluently.** *adv.* — persuade her to a peace, III.5.87.

**Flurt.** *v. t.* now —ed by Peace for whom he fought, I.2.18.

**Flutter.** *v. i.* *Stage Dir.* p. 88.

**Fly.** *n.* a wren hawk at a —, V.3.2.

**Fly.** *v. i.* but from it —, I.1.24; clamours through the wild air —ing, I.5.6; the angry swine *flies*, II.2.50; wind upon a field of corn, curling the wealthy ears, never *flew* (*sc.* *swifter*), II.3.79; would — were they not tied, III.1.68; III.6.30; I must not — from it, III.6.42; *flew* the lightning, III.6.84.

**Foe.** *n.* quick-eyed pleasure's —s, I.5.8; a fair —, III.6.8; a beneficial —, III.6.22; royal german —s, V.1.9.

**Foil.** *n.* P. is but his — (= *contrast*), IV.2.26.

**Foison.** *n.* the teeming Ceres' —, V.1.53.

**Fold.** *n.* forty thousand —, I.4.36.

**Follow.** *v. t.* *Prol.* 2; I.1.211, 221; I.2.9, 115 (= '*imitate, obey*'; *quibbling*). I.2.50, 51, 52; how his longing —s his friend, I.3.27, 73; —s thy sister (= *attends on*), III.6.145; he should — his rash oath (= *execute, fulfil*), IV.1.10; mothers —ing the dead cold ashes, IV.2.5; V.4.39.

**Follower.** *n.* — of thy drum, V.1.57.

**Folly.** *n.* III.4.3; III.6.107.

**Fond.** *adj.* to be — upon another's way of speech, I.2.46.

**Food.** *n.* valiant uses, the — and nourishment of noble minds, II.2.52; II.6.7; III.2.26; III.3.2.

**Fool.** *n.* Extremity, that sharpens sundry wits, makes me a —, I.1.119; II.2.120, 216; III.3.12, 42; III.5.67, 79, 131; IV.2.34; V.2.28. *See* Innocent, IV.1.40.

**Foolish.** *adj.* nice and —, V.2.79.

**Foot.** *n.* lie 'fore bride and bridegroom's *feet*, I.1.14; set — upon this kingdom, II.2.248; a — above my knee, III.4.19; whose great *feet*, III.5.124; screwed his square *feet* round, V.1.111. *See* Leaden-footed.

**Foot.** *v. t.* come forth and — it (= *dance*), III.5.137.

**For.** *prep.* *Prol.* 2; — pity's sake, I.1.25; I.1.26; now — the love of him, 29, 30, 32, 38; take some note that — our crowned heads we have no roof, I.1.52, 58; who is a servant — the tenor of thy speech [*S. C. W. read to*], I.1.89, 97, 116; none fit — the dead, I.1.141, 161, 170, 181, 184, 195, 200, 209, 214; I.2.19; peace might purge — (= *because of*) her repletion, I.2.24, 38, 84, 99, 110; laid out — purchase, I.2.111; I.3.12; — ever, 24, 35, 74, 91, 93; I.4.2; — our sake, 39, 45 [*Qo. for, Edd. fore*]; I.4.49; II.1.3, 20; II.2.4, 10, 39, 108, 158; would I were, — all the fortune of my life hereafter, yon little tree (= *in exchange for*), II.2.37; II.2.227, 241, 254, 261, 266; II.3.2, 3, 41, 48, 49, 72, 76; II.4.30; II.5.28, 61, 64; II.6.2, 14, 22, 37; III.1.93, 104, 118; III.2.5, 6, 8, 19; III.3.12, 23, 35, 42, 44, 53; III.4.22, 25; III.5.12, 145, 150; III.6.16, 48, 58, 92, 99, 110, 114, 115, 168, 175, 183, 184, 188, 211, 229, 235, 241, 245, 247, 251, 261, 269, 287; I keep close — all this (= *in spite of*).



- IV.1.128; be all gelt — musicians (= *to make*), IV.1.131; — the tackling (= *with regard to*), IV.1.143; IV.2.2; fall — me (= *because of*), IV.2.4; run mad — this man (= *on account of*), IV.2.12; IV.2.154; IV.3.16; V.1.11, 153; — honesty (= *because of*), V.2.21; — the subdued (= *with reference to*), V.3.131; the scene's not — our seeing (= *fit for*), V.3.134; V.4.14, 25, 83, 117, 128, 132, 135; *Epil.* 13, 14.
- For.** *conj.* *Prol.* 9, 22; I.1.218, 228; I.2.7, 54; I.3.61; II.1.30; II.2.138, 145, 272; II.6.7; III.1.118; III.2.22; III.4.16, 19; III.6.105, 180, 181, 184, 238, 271; IV.1.4, 7, 36, 63, 112, 122, 123; IV.2.47, 92, 107, 154; IV.3.12, 68; V.1.99, 117; V.2.8, 79, 122; V.4.13, 60.
- Forbid.** *v. t.* Heaven —, man, IV.1.138.
- Force.** *n.* at once subduing thy — and thy affection (= *military prowess*), I.1.85; I.1.194; if you grant not my sister her petition in that —, I.1.201; the —s you can raise, I.1.213; V.1.43.
- Force.** *v. t.* III.6.21; can — his cousin, III.6.294; V.1.83, 100.
- Fore.** *prep.* = Afore or Before. I.1.14, 146 [*Qo. for*]; I.4.49; III.5.108; IV.1.75; V.1.143; V.3.37.
- Forego.** *v. t.* all the actions that I have *foregone* (= *performed hitherto*), or futurely can cope, I.1.173.
- Forehorse.** the — in the team, I.2.59.
- Forest.** II.2.47.
- Forfeit.** *v. t.* — an offence (= *neglect to act on the offensive*), V.3.63.
- Forget.** *v. t.* III.6.223, 257; IV.3.9; V.4.68.
- Forgive.** III.1.76; III.6.98; V.4.93, 120.
- Form.** *n.* O my petition was set down in ice, which by hot grief uncandied, melts into drops; so sorrow, wanting —, is pressed with deeper matter (= *definite expression*), I.1.108; take —, I.1.152.
- Form.** *v. t.* to — me like your blazon, III.1.47.
- Former.** *adj.* IV.3.84.
- Forth.** *adv.* press you —, our undertaker, I.1.73; — and levy, I.1.162; cull —, I.1.169; III.3.3; III.4.22; III.5.137; IV.3.89; from — blue clouds (*sc. forth from*), V.1.54.
- Fortunate.** *adj.* that — bright star, III.6.146.
- Fortune.** *n.* I have heard the — (= *misfortunes*), I.1.56; — at you dimpled her cheek with smiles, I.1.65; ill-dealing —, I.3.5; I.3.93; I.4.36; II.2.38, 57, 63, 209, 237, 252; II.3.22; III.1.15, 24; III.4.16; tell your —, III.5.78; III.6.16, 125; —, whose title is as momentary, as to us death is certain, V.4.17; tott'ring —, who at her certain'st, reels, V.4.20; V.4.112.
- Forward.** *adv.* I.1.130, 131, 217; II.2.122, 126; III.5.16, 98.
- Foul.** *adj.* the — fields of Thebes [*Qo. fowle*], I.1.42; before the street be —, I.2.58; III.5.51; all — means, V.4.71; the —est way (= *most indecent*), V.1.123.
- Foul-mouthed.** *adj.* — against thy law, V.1.98.
- Found.** *See* Well-found, II.5.27.
- Founder.** *v. t.* — the best hobby-horse (= *cause to break down*), V.2.52.
- Four.** *adj.* IV.1.99, 128; V.2.104; V.3.145.
- Fourteen.** *adj.* a lass of — (*sc. winters*), V.1.109.
- Frame.** *n.* this machine or this — (= *design*), III.5.113.
- Frampall.** *adj.* now to be — (= *froward*) [*Qo. Generally written frampold*], III.5.57.

- Freckled.** *adj.* — Nell, III.5.27.  
**Freckle-faced.** *adj.* IV.2.120.  
**Free.** *adj.* as worthy and as — a lover, II.2.180; II.3.3; II.4.31; III.1.27; III.6.235; V.1.73.  
**Free.** *v. t.* —d of this plight, I.4.34.  
**Freedom.** *n.* enforce a — out of bondage, II.1.52; use thy —, II.2.200; gave me — once, V.4.24.  
**Freely.** *adv.* I — lend, I.1.198.  
**Freeman.** *n.* to become a — (= *be at liberty*), II.6.24.  
**Freeze.** *v. i.* — in my saddle (= *stick closely*), II.5.48; the deceiving part —s, IV.3.38.  
**Fresh.** *adj.* — water flowers [*the compound seems to be fresh-water flowers, not fresh water-flowers*], IV.1.85. *Comp.* —er, III.1.5.  
**Fret.** *v. i.* the sharp rowell, which he —s at rather [*Qo. freats*], V.4.70.  
**Friend.** *n.* I.3.19, 27; —s' behests, I.4.40; — (= *lover*), II.1.15; II.2.8, 81, 183, 189, 209, 231; II.3.60, 63; II.5.49; III.5.34, 80; your person I am —s with, III.6.39; III.6.142, 297; I am —s again, III.6.300; III.6.306; soldier's — (= *sword*), IV.2.88; IV.2.91, 149, 154; IV.3.57; young sir, her — (= *lover*), IV.3.66; V.4.23; call your lovers . . . whom I adopt my —s, V.4.124. *See* **Unfriended**, V.3.141.  
**Friend.** *v. t.* both Heaven and earth — thee for ever (= *be friend*), I.4.2.  
**Friendship.** *n.* II.2.114, 173; III.6.103, 202.  
**Frieze.** *adj.* most coarse — capacities (= *a kind of coarse cloth: thence, common*), III.5.8.  
**Fright.** *n.* —s, fury [*See Notes*], I.4.40.  
**Frisk.** *n.* a favour and a —, III.5.30.  
**Friskin.** *n.* the pranks and —s of her madness (= *vagaries*), IV.3.70.  
**Friz.** *n.* name of country-girl, III.5.25.  
**Frog.** *n.* would I could find a fine —, III.4.12.  
**From.** *prep.* *Prol.* 18, 19, 31; I.1.24, 45, 176, 203, 223; I.2.56, 73; I.3.76, 92; I.4.4, 38; II.1.40; II.2.50, 56, 57, 72, 76, 85, 95, 212, 263; III.1.80; III.4.13; III.5.59, 60, 115; III.6.30, 84, 282; IV.1.54, 88; IV.2.22; V.1.24; you must not — her [*ellipsis of verb*], V.2.105; this miserable prince, that cuts away A life more worthy — him than all women, V.3.143, &c.  
**Frown.** *n.* IV.2.86.  
**Frown.** *v. i.* IV.2.136; to bury what it —s on, V.3.46.  
**Fruit.** *n.* II.2.235; bring her —, II.2.240.  
**Frustrate.** *v. t.* to — striving (= *to prevent swimming*), I.2.9.  
**Frying.** *n.* —, boiling, IV.3.27.  
**Full.** *adj.* — of bread and slot<sup>h</sup>, I.1.158; keep the feast —, I.1.220; world's a city — of straying streets, I.5.15; a — promise, II.1.12; II.2.128; — of fire, V.4.65; her — poise, V.4.81.  
**Fully.** *adv.* IV.1.5.  
**Funeral.** *n.* the — of Arcite, V.4.126.  
**Funeral.** *adj.* — songs, III.6.247.  
**Furnish.** *v. t.* I'll see you —d (= *supplied*), II.5.44; —t with your old strength, III.6.37.  
**Further.** *adj.* beyond — requiring, I.3.26.  
**Further.** *adv.* I.2.4; I.3.1; talk — with you, III.3.7; IV.3.24; V.3.1, 11.  
**Fury.** *Fights.* — [*See Notes*], I.4.40; let your —, like meeting of two tides, III.6.29.  
**Futurely.** *adv.* actions that I have foregone, or — can cope, I.1.174.

- Gain.** *n.* our — but life and weakness, I.2.12; the — o' th' martialist, I.2.16; I.3.29.
- 'Gainst.** *See* **Against.** II.3.9; III.6.163; perfume me finely — the wedding (= *by the time the wedding takes place*), V.2.89; V.3.8.
- Gait.** *n.* another's — (= *manner of walking*), I.2.45.
- Gall.** *n.* suffer the — of hazard [*Qo. gaule*], II.2.66; the —ed traveller, III.5.129.
- Gallant.** *n.* brave —s of war (*perhaps = men-of-war*), III.5.61; you jolly —s, III.5.63.
- Gallop.** *v. i.* —s to the tune of, V.2.54.
- Gambol.** *n.* she'll do the rarest —s, III.5.75.
- Game.** *n. i.* —s of honour, II.2.10; II.3.63, 65; fortune did play a subtler —, V.4.113 (= *contest of skill*).
- ii. we in herds thy — (= *quarry*), V.1.132.
- Gammon.** *n.* — of bacon, IV.3.32.
- Ganymede.** *pr. n.* wanton —, IV.2.15.
- Gap.** *n.* rather than a — (= *hitch*) should be i' the business, I.4.8.
- Garden.** *n.* II.2.118, 218, 234, 270; III.1.7; her — house (= *arbour*), IV.3.48.
- Garden-house.** *See* **Garden.** IV.3.48.
- Garland.** *n.* won the —s, II.2.16; II.3.81; V.1.43; my wheaten — [*Qo. gerland*], V.1.159; the price and — to crown, V.3.16; wear the — (*sc. Emilia*), V.3.130.
- Garment.** *n.* his baser —s, II.5.24; III.1.85.
- Gather.** *v. t. i.* to — mulberries, IV.1.68; IV.1.78; I shall be —ed (= *wedded*), V.1.170.
- ii. — how I should tender you (= *infer*), V.1.24.
- Gaud.** *n.* having two fair —s (= *toys*) of equal sweetness, IV.2.53.
- Gaudy.** *adj.* — shadow, II.2.103.
- Gauntlet.** *n.* use your —s, III.6.64.
- Gaze.** *v. i.* to — against bright arms, II.2.35; to — upon my mistress, III.1.117.
- Geld.** *v. t.* they must be all *gelt* for musicians, IV.1.131.
- General.** *n.* our — of ebbs and flows (= *Moon*), V.1.163.
- General.** *adj.* the cry was —, V.3.81.
- Generous.** *adj.* — bond (= *honourable*), I.2.50; in — terms, III.1.54.
- Gentility.** *n.* for pity's sake and true —s, I.1.25.
- Gentle.** *adj.* — cousin, II.2.70; II.2.136; II.3.15; fair — maid, II.4.24; — uses (= *gentlemanly accomplishments*), II.5.7; the void'st of honour that e'er bore — token (= *looked like a nobly born man*), III.1.37; III.6.112; V.2.43; V.4.24.
- Gentleman.** *n.* II.2.222; II.4.1.21; II.5.6, 32; III.1.57; III.6.303; IV.1.117; IV.3.57; V.2.44; *Epil.* 18.
- Gentleness.** *n.* III.1.48.
- Gently.** *adv.* II.2.138; III.1.36; IV.2.28; A. is — visaged, V.3.41.
- George.** (*name of a ship: spoken of as 'he'*), III.5.59.
- Geraldo.** *pr. n.* —, Emilia's school-master, IV.3.10. *See* **Gerrold.**
- German.** *adj.* you royal — foes (= *kindred*), V.1.9.
- Gerrold.** *pr. n.* Master —, III.5.22. *See* **Geraldo.**
- Get.** i. *v. i.* — you and pray the gods, I.1.208.
- ii. *v. t.* to — the soldier work, I.2.23; II.2.232; II.4.25; III.1.80; III.3.52; if we can — her dance, III.5.74; where *got'st* thou this, III.6.54; I'll — mercy, III.6.192; *got* your pardon, IV.1.19; to be *got* away (= *persuaded to go away*), IV.1.102; let's — her



- in, IV.1.147; V.2.107; — herself some part, V.3.36 (= *procure*, *obtain*); He's well got, sure (= *begotten*, *born*), II.5.24; — many more such prisoners and such daughters (*in double sense*: = 'obtain' and 'beget'), II.6.38; have got maids with child, IV.3.35.
- Gift.** *n.* —s, I.3.15.
- Gipsy.** *n.* a changeling to him, a mere —, IV.2.43.
- Gird.** *v. t.* girt with garlands, II.3.81.
- Girl.** *n.* III.6.34; V.1.79.
- Girth.** *n.* the stony —s of cities, V.1.55 (= *fortifications*); — break, V.4.74 (*of a horse's saddle*).
- Give.** *v. t.* *Pro.* 2, 13; — us the bones, I.1.49; —s me such lamenting, I.1.57, 148, 149; I.4.26; I am —n out (= *reported*) to be, II.1.4; II.1.41; *gave* me life [*perhaps we should read gave my = dedicated*], II.5.7; II.5.33; III.1.44, 72, 98, 104; III.3.28; III.5.43, 45, 78, 93, 144; *gave* his faith, III.6.1 (= *promised*); III.6.69, 101, 181, 197; I — consent, III.6.279, 305; IV.1.23; I *gave* my ear, IV.1.57 (= *listened*); IV.2.150; IV.3.59; V.1.47, 60, 71, 127, 132; V.2.29, 45; V.3.32; —s the prejudice of disparity, V.3.87, 108, 109, 132; V.4.12, 24, 27, 46, 67, 88, 98, 106, 107, 125.
- Giver.** *n.* y' are a noble —, II.5.38.
- Glad.** *adj.* III.3.20; V.2.91; most — on 't, V.4.29, 33, 130. *Comp.* **Gladder**, III.3.21.
- Glad.** *v. t.* to — our age, II.2.34.
- Glade.** *n.* a small — cut by the fishermen, IV.1.64.
- Glance.** *n.* See **Eye** —, V.1.80.
- Glance.** *v. t.* — their eyes, V.3.61.
- Glass.** *n.* i. (= *mirror*) dear — of ladies, I.1.90 [*Qo. glasse, see Glassy, I.1.112*]; scissor'd just to such a favourite's —, I.2.55.
- ii. (= *hour-glass*) the — is running now, V.1.18.
- Glassy.** *adj.* [*Qo. glasse*] — stream, I.1.112.
- Glisten.** *v. i.* our stars must — with new fire, V.1.69.
- Globy.** *adj.* his — eyes, V.1.113 (*said of the swollen eyes of an old man*).
- Glory.** *n.* boot and —, I.2.70; V.4.43.
- Gloss.** *n.* — of youth, I.2.5 (= *freshness, brightness*).
- Glove.** *n.* the next —s that I give her shall be dogskin, III.5.45.
- Glue.** *v. t.* which being —d together (= *joined*), III.5.119.
- Go.** *v. i.* a poet never went more famous yet, *Pro.* 4; I.1.1, 103, 104, 152, 171; we are —ing about, I.1.196; I will see you —ne, I.1.218; I.2.14; to — tiptoe, I.2.57; I.2.98; I.4.6; — to! leave your pointing, II.1.51; — forward (= *continue speaking*), II.2.126; II.2.269, 271, 275; II.3.20, 31, 42, 60; — along (= *accompany*), II.3.69, 74; his face, methinks, —es that way (= *resembles that*), II.5.21; II.5.53, 59; III.1.117, 120; III.2.1, 21; III.3.40; III.4.11, 23; III.5.16, 39, 58, 86, 98; you swore I went beyond (= *excelled*) all women, III.6.206; IV.1.65, 67, 68, 123; I may — look (= *I don't know*), IV.2.52; IV.2.152, 154; may — upon 's legs, IV.3.12; IV.3.25, 29; V.1.37, 41, 68, 157; V.2.27, 73, 102, 107; V.3.28, 71; — to law with (= *contend against*), V.3.99; V.3.134; V.4.58, 136; *Epil.* 5.
- God.** *n.* Oh, I hope some —, I.1.71, 72; I.1.208; I.2.83, 94; th' impartial —s, I.4.4; a —'s view, I.4.21; red-eyed — of war, II.2.21; temples of the —s, II.2.23; II.2.59, 94, 108; fit for the —s to feed on, II.2.241; near —s in nature, II.2.244; II.3.13, 58; III.6.98, 257; IV.1.48; IV.2.16, 25; V.1.1; the all fear'd —s, V.1.13; V.1.15; the — of our profession (= *Mars*), V.1.38; V.3.



- 38; —'s lid, V.3.96; V.3.107, 116; V.4.9, 11, 36, 43, 86, 100, 115; the —s my justice take from my hands, V.4.120.
- Goddess.** *n.* II.2.134, 135, 164; V.1.71, 74; soft sweet —, V.1.126; bow before the —, V.1.135.
- Godlike.** *adj.* — honours, I.1.30; (= *divine*) power, V.1.89; show i' th' world too —, V.3.118.
- Gold.** *n.* the staff of —, IV.2.115.
- Gold.** *adj.* — buttons on the boughs, III.1.6.
- Golden.** *adj.* — ingots, I.2.17.
- Good.** *adj.* — play, *Prolog.* 3; — man, *Prolog.* 17; I.1.32; sword that does — turns to the world, I.1.49; this — action, I.1.102; I.1.129, 147, 170, 226, 233; I.2.71; I.3.6; I.4.2, 13; II.2.20, 124, 143, 211, 266, 273; II.3.13, 35; II.4.24; III.1.65, 75, 112; sit down, and — now (= *good friend*), III.3.9; III.3.17, 21, 22; III.4.11; III.5.77, 143; III.6.3, 16, 17, 54, 61, 65, 72, 77, 232; IV.1.3, 17, 18, 24, 25, 30, 31, 43, 115; IV.2.6, 154; IV.3.45, 76; done any — upon her (subst. = *benefit to her*), V.2.1; V.3.10, 27, 101, 108, 122, 129; V.4.6; — night, — creature, V.4.34; V.4.97; *Epil.* 18.
- Goodly.** *adj.* (= *handsome*), II.2.228; II.4.8; — mothers, III.6.245; III.6.276.
- Goodness.** *n.* and of thy boundless — take some note, I.1.51; a main — (= *benefit*), II.2.63; II.4.24; II.5.35; III.6.138; IV.1.22; many will not buy his — with this note (= *this defect causes many to refuse to buy such a horse, though otherwise excellent*), V.4.53.
- Gout.** *n.* the — had knit his fingers into knots, V.1.112; — and rheum, V.4.8.
- Governor.** *n.* store never hurts good —s (= *managers*), I.3.6.
- Gown.** *n.* II.2.128; my wedding —, IV.1.109.
- Grace.** *n.* human —, I.1.144; the —s of our youths shall wither, II.2.27; thy noble —, III.5.123; petition of —, IV.3.7; V.1.94; he looked all — and success, V.3.69; the — of the contention (= *victory*), V.4.108; give — unto the funeral, V.4.125.
- Grace.** *v. t.* —d her altar, V.4.105.
- Gracious.** *adj.* her signs were —, V.1.173.
- Grain.** *n.* a — of honour they not o'erweigh us (= *gold*), V.4.18.
- Grand.** *adj.* I.1.164; — decider, V.1.63.
- Grandguard.** *n.* You care not for a —? No, no, we'll use no horses, III.6.58.
- Grant.** *v. t.* I.1.200; III.6.180, 235; IV.1.27; V.1.71, 159.
- Grape.** *n.* is as a ripe —, ruddy, IV.2.96.
- Grasp.** *v. t.* — our good swords in our hands, II.2.210.
- Grateful.** *adj.* odours which are — to the sense, IV.3.74.
- Grave.** *n.* I.1.149; she the — enriched, I.3.51; your household's —, I.5.11; the next way to a —, III.2.33; III.6.284.
- Grave.** *v. t.* his brow is —d, and seems to *bury* what it frowns on (= *furrowed*). Word-play on *grave* and *bury*, V.3.46. *And see Grave.*
- Gravity.** *n.* a bold —, IV.2.21; induce stale — to dance, V.1.85.
- Gray.** *adj.* attend for — approachers (= *aged*), V.4.9.
- Gray-eyed.** He's —, which yields compassion where he conquers, IV.2.131.
- Grease.** *n.* usurer's —, IV.3.31.
- Great.** *adj.* I.2.21, 85; I.3.2, 13, 34, 94; I.4.14, 46; II.1.3; II.2.107; III.5.124; III.6.119, 152; IV.1.6, 53; IV.2.89, 118, 123; IV.3.56, 58, 86; V.1.43, 60, 62, 102, 129; V.4.46. *Comp.* —er, I.1.172; IV.2.62, 92. *Superl.* —est, II.5.14.

- Great-eyed.** *adj.* — Juno, IV.2.20.
- Greatness.** *n.* of such a virtuous —, II.2.259.
- Green.** *adj.* — tree, II.3.39; III.4.19; — songs of love (= *youthful*), IV.3.71; turned — Neptune into purple, V.1.50; thy rare — eye, V.1.144.
- Greise.** *n.* they stand a — above the reach of report, II.1.27. *See* Notes.
- Grey.** *See* Gray.
- Grief.** *n.* O — and Time, Fearful consumers, you will all devour, I.1.69; hot — (= *warm tears*), I.1.107; I.1.109, 123; a capital —, I.1.123; what —s our beds, I.1.140; I.1.168; — and Ignorance, II.2.55; our —s, II.2.60, 189; your —s (= *grievances*), III.1.54; in me hath — slain fear, III.2.5.
- Grieve.** *v. i.* II.4.27.
- Grievous.** *adj.* — punishment, IV.3.38.
- Grin.** *v. i.* showing the sun his teeth, —ning at the moon, I.1.100.
- Groan.** *v. i.* — under such a mastery, I.1.231; III.3.35; mothers that have —ed for them, III.6.245.
- Groom.** *n.* I met your — (= *husband*), I.1.61. *And see* Bridegroom, V.4.127.
- Gross.** *adj.* III.1.46.
- Ground.** *n.* i. (= *earth*) cry from under —, *Prol.* 18; but touch the — for us no longer time, I.1.97; a patch of —, II.6.33; trod thy — (= *territory*); knees shall grow to the —, III.6.192.  
ii. (= *basis*) theirs has more —, I.3.56.
- Ground-piece.** *n.* the — of some painter, I.1.122. *See* Notes.
- Grow.** *v. i.* oxlips in their cradles —ing, I.1.10; II.2.43, 66, 149; III.6.6; my knees shall — to the ground but I'll get mercy, III.6.192; IV.1.89; V.1.168; Lord, how y' are —n! my Palamon I hope will — too, V.2.94, 95; love that —s while you decay, V.3.111; *grew* (*sc.* to the saddle), V.4.75.
- Grudge.** *v. t.* nor shall he — to fall, III.6.297.
- Guard.** *n.* both upon our —s, III.6.29; III.6.122. *And see* Grand-guard, III.6.58.
- Guard.** *v. t.* my cause and honour — me, III.6.92.
- Guess.** *v. t.* III.1.109 [*Qo. ghesse*]; IV.2.91.
- Guide.** *v. t.* —s his arm, IV.2.102.
- Guiltless.** *adj.* — on't, III.1.15; I am — of election (= *innocent of choice*), V.1.154.
- Guilty.** *adj.* bear a — business, III.1.90; murder whereto she's —, V.3.28.
- Gum.** *n.* balms and —s, I.5.4.
- Gyve.** *n.* quit me of these cold —s, III.1.72; the jingling of his —s, III.2.14.
- Ha.** *interj.* II.2.134; ye know what wenches, —! II.3.39; —, boys, heigh for the weavers, II.3.49.
- Habit.** *v. t.* *See* Bride-habited, V.1.150.
- Hail.** *n.* all —! . . . a cold beginning, III.5.100; V.1.77.
- Hail.** *v. i.* well —'d, III.5.63.
- Hair.** *n.* a — shall never fall of these men, III.6.287; his — hangs long behind him, IV.2.83. *See* Black-haired, III.3.31; Hard-haired, IV.2.104; White-haired, IV.2.123.
- Hairbell** [*Skeat*, for her bells of other *Edd.* In his *Etym. Dict.* *Skeat* gives the other spelling, Harebell, remarking that "the spelling Hairbell savours of modern science, but certainly not of the principles of English etymology"]. —s dim, I.1.9.

- Hairworth.** *n.* a black one, owing not a — of white, V.4.51 (= *jot*; *the worth of a hair*).
- Half.** *pron.* — his own heart, IV.1.14; IV.3.39.
- Half.** *adj.* this — hour, V.2.4; — sights saw that A. was no babe (= *half-blind, sand-blind people*), V.3.95.
- Half.** *adv.* IV.1.47; V.2.3.
- Half-sight.** *See* **Half**, *adj.* V.3.95.
- Halloa.** *v. i.* (= *shout*), II.2.48; III.2.8, 9 [*Qo. hallowd*].
- Hallow.** *v. t.* —ed clouds [*sc. of incense*], V.1.4.
- Hallowing.** *n.* (= *shouting*), III.1. *St. dir.*
- Halt.** *v. i.* (= *walking lamely*), not —ing under crimes, V.4.10.
- Hand.** *n. i.* hold out your helping —s, *Prol.* 26; I.1.165; I.2.57, 92; our —s advanced before our hearts, I.2.112; I.3.31; II.2.24, 87, 93, 211; II.5.57; III.1.32, 39, 75, 98; III.5.78; III.6.97, 101, 102, 197, 302; IV.1.93; if his — be in (= *if he be in practice*), IV.1.137; IV.2.139; V.1.6, 54; V.2.86; V.3.84, 109; V.4.91, 121.
- ii. (= *handwriting*) a very fair —, V.2.58.
- Handsome.** *adj.* a young — man, II.4.14; a wondrous — woman, II.5.20; — pity, IV.1.9; the house made —, IV.1.79; young — men, IV.2.3; a young — wench, *Epil.* 6.
- Hang.** *v. t.* — your shield afore your heart, I.1.196; youths *hung* with the painted favours, II.2.11; — for't afterwards, II.2.266; I'll be —ed, II.3.72; — him, II.3.73; to be —ed for his escape, III.2.22; III.2.30; thereby —s a tale, III.3.41; his hair —s long behind him, IV.2.83; sword *hung* by a curious baldrick, IV.2.86; —, or drown themselves, IV.3.29; must be —ed to-morrow, V.2.80; seemed with strange art to —, V.4.79.
- Hanging.** *n.* by night that seek out silent — (= *tapestry, arras*), III.5.127.
- Haply.** *adv.* I.2.51 [*Qo. happely*], I.3.73.
- Happen.** *v. i.* V.3.8.
- Happiness.** *n.* II.3.13 (= *good luck*), II.3.82.
- Happy.** *adj.* II.3.22; II.4.25; II.5.9. *Comp.* **Happier**, III.1.25.
- Harbinger.** *n.* [*Qo. Herbinger*] spring-time's —, with her bells dim, I.1.8.
- Hard.** *adj.* heart, now — and harsher, I.2.25; — oppressor, II.2.84; — language, III.1.106; III.6.76, kept down with — meat and ill lodging (= *insufficient*), V.2.97.
- Hard.** *adv.* it goes —, I see, *Epil.* 5.
- Hard-haired.** *adj.* — and curled, thick twined, IV.2.104.
- Hard-hearted.** *adj.* II.2.122.
- Hardly.** *adv.* make — one the winner (= *with difficulty*), V.3.130.
- Hardy.** *adj.* nor be so — ever to take a husband, I.1.204; — youths, II.2.10; IV.2.80.
- Hare.** *n.* mad as a March —, III.5.73.
- Hark.** *interj.* III.1.108; III.2.4; V.3.56, 93.
- Harm.** *n.* to do —, I.2.71; V.3.66.
- Harmless.** *adj.* a — distemper, IV.3.2.
- Harsh.** *adj.* — to large confessors (= *severe*), V.1.104. *Comp.* —er than strife or war, I.2.25.
- Haste.** *n.* since that our theme is —, I.1.215; our — does leave imperfect, I.4.12; IV.1.51; a cursed — [*Qo. hast*] you make, V.4.41.
- Hasten.** *v. t.* — the success, IV.3.88.



**Hate.** *v. t.* II.2.23, 70; cursed man that —s his country, II.2.201; my father ever —d, II.5.58.

**Have.** *v. t. and aux. Prol.* 10; I.1.29, 52, 56, 72, 78, 87, 88; I *had* as lief, I.1.102; I.1.129, 140, 141, 143, 194, 207; I.2.18, 39, 82, 90; I.3.41, 69, 74, 80; I.4.28, 36; II.1.7, 12, 14, 17; II.2.128, 157, 181, 215, 252, 262, 267; II.3.16, 20; II.3.30, 71; II.4.9, 16; II.5.54, 62; III.1.85, 108, 110, 112, 121; III.2.8, 13, 15; III.3.11, 16, 20, 21, 22, 24, 37; III.5.24, 96; III.6.77, 87, 116, 130, 172, 179, 197, 219, 230, 263; IV.1.28, 120, 121; IV.2.7, 10, 14, 35, 53; I *had* rather both (= *I would*), IV.2.68; IV.2.142; IV.3.19, 26, 28, 51, 58, 71, 86; V.1.6, 77, 79; youth . . . *have* [*sing. subj. and plur. verb. See Notes*], V.1.86; V.1.106, 116, 120, 158; V.2.12, 23; you — me (= *understand*), V.2.35; V.2.55, 61, 64, 65, 83, 85, 92, 94; V.3.2, 45, 75, 79; gods would — him die a bachelor, V.3.117; V.4.4, 6, 16, 85, 114; *Epil.* 10, 12, 15.

ii. *seemingly intrans. use of have*: — with ye, boys, II.3.27; — at thy life! III.6.131.

**Havoc.** *n.* whose — in vast field, V.1.51.

**Hawk.** *n.* I could have kept a — (*mark of a gentleman*), II.5.11; a —, and her bells were cut away, III.5.70.

**Hawk.** *v. i.* see a wren — at a fly (= *pursue like a hawk*), V.3.2.

**Hawthorn.** *adj.* your — house, III.1.82.

**Hay.** *n.* — and provender, V.2.59.

**Hazard.** *n.* the gall of —, II.2.66; your personal — (= *risk*), V.1.74.

**Hazard.** *v. t.* if I — thee, and take thy life (= *put thee in danger*), II.2.204.

**He.** *pron. Prol.* 17, 23, 28, 29; I.1.29, 43, 60, 67, 68, 69, 72, 73,

87, 88, 89, 91, 92, 93, 99, 100, 105, 109, 114, 115, 116, 154, 157, 158, 182; I.2.18, 62, 72, 85, *et passim. See His, Himself.*

**Head.** *n.* our crowned —s, I.1.52; advance it [*sc. sword*] o'er our —s, I.1.93; a dove's motion when the —'s pluckt off, I.1.98; I.3.32, 71; wished upon thy —, I.4.3; II.2.214, 217; lose his — (= *be decapitated*), III.6.296; chaplets on their —s, IV.1.73; lose your — to-morrow morning, IV.1.77; his —'s yellow (= *hair*), IV.2.103; IV.2.137; as ever struck at —, V.3.109; V.4.78, 80.

**Heal.** *v. t.* —'st with blood, V.1.64.

**Health.** *n.* I.2.110; to your —, III.3.12; III.6.38; IV.1.34.

**Heap.** *n.* a — of ruins, II.3.19.

**Hear.** *i. v. t.* this child — be a hiss, *Prol.* 16; you shall —, *Prol.* 27; — and respect me, I.1.26; I.1.28, 56; I —d them reported to be, II.1.28; II.2.42, 111; II.4.18; III.1.61, 96; III.2.11; III.3.32, 53; III.5.93; III.6.83, 210; IV.1.1, 3, 15, 56, 66, 115, 133; IV.3.44; which never —d scurril term, V.1.147; V.3.9, 123; V.4.26.

ii. *v. i.* III.5.15; IV.1.29.

**Hearing.** *n.* when it came to — (= *to be heard*), III.6.11; my — will be punished (= *sense of hearing*), V.3.7.

**Heart.** *n.* my lord is taken — deep with your distress, I.1.105 [*Probably we should read Heart-deep, adverb*]; I.1.117, 128; hang your shield afore your —, I.1.197; charitable —, I.1.25; I.2.62; our hands advanced before (= *further than*) our —s, I.2.112; your dear —, I.3.11; I.3.16; the high throne in his —, I.3.96; II.4.17; II.5.62; pay it to the — of ceremony (= *utmost*), III.1.4; honest —, III.6.197; half his own —, IV.1.14; come, weigh, my hearts, cheerily (*nautical expression* = *comrades*), IV.1.144; IV.3.37;



- the —s of lions (= *courage*), V.1.39; mine innocent true —, V.1.134; on the sinister side the — lies, V.3.76; thy worthy manly —, V.4.86, 87. *See Sweetheart*, III.5.148; *Stout-hearted*, II.6.9; IV.2.130; *Honest-hearted*, II.6.15; *Soft-hearted*, IV.2.147; *Strong-hearted*, V.1.8; *Maiden-hearted*, V.1.151; *Hard-hearted*, II.2.122; *Merry-hearted*, II.2.151.
- Hearty.** *adj.* a good — draught, III.3.17.
- Heat.** *n.* the —s are gone to-morrow (= *the incitements to do the deed*), I.1.152.
- Heat.** *v. t.* a —ed lion, IV.2.82.
- Heaven.** *n.* I.2.64; I.4.1; —'s good eyes, I.4.13; II.2.134; II.4.19; III.1.111; III.3.45; III.4.4; III.6.156; for —'s sake, III.6.251; pray — it hold so, IV.1.16; IV.1.88; — forbid man, IV.1.113; IV.2.6; a promontory pointed in —, IV.2.23; dew of —, V.4.102. *Often in plural*, Heavens: the —s (= *gods*), I.3.9; the mounted —s, I.4.4; —s lend a thousand differing ways to one sure end, I.5.13; oh you —s, III.1.89; till —s did make hardly one the winner, V.3.129.
- Heavenly.** *adj.* — justice, I.2.81; II.2.164, 243; a sad boy, but a —, IV.2.32; V.1.30, 91; — powers, V.3.139; you — charm-ers (= *the gods*), V.4.131.
- Heavy.** *adj.* — cheers (= *sad faces*), I.5.4; III.6.56; an eye as — (= *sad*) as if he had lost his mother, IV.2.27; *comp.* heavier; — than lead, V.1.96; *superl.* heaviest, II.2.29.
- Heed.** *n.* take — to your kindness, II.2.125; good —, III.6.232; take —, III.6.303; IV.3.28.
- Heel.** *n.* I'll follow you at —s, I.1.221. *See Lark's-heel.*
- Heigh.** *interj.* ha, boys, — for the weavers, II.3.49. (*Sometimes spelt Hey.*)
- Heigh-ho.** *interj.* III.3.42.
- Heir.** *n.* II.2.83; are you his —? his youngest, sir, II.5.8.
- Helm.** *n.* don their —s (= *helmets*), I.3.19; — of Mars, I.4.17.
- Helmeted.** *adj.* the — Bellona, I.1.75.
- Help.** *n.* your — (= *support*), V.1.14.
- Help.** *i. v. t.* your —ing hands, *Prolog.* 26. III.5.116; III.6.193.
- ii. v. i.* I.1.199.
- Helper.** *n.* the holy altars of your —s, V.1.12.
- Hence.** *adv.* be absent —, I.1.18; I.1.211; II.2.95; II.6.4; III.3.49; IV.2.22; V.3.134; V.4.109, 120.
- Henceforth.** *adv.* I.1.203.
- Hercules.** *n.* I.1.66; II.5.2.
- Herd.** *n.* mortal — (= *human race*), I.4.5; we in —s thy game [*Qo.* heards], V.1.132.
- Here.** *adv.* *Seward's conj.* for there, I.1.111; I.1.193; I.2.6, 41; I.3.24; II.1.14, 15; II.2.26, 27, 28, 41, 45, 53, 59, 78, 85, 87, 99; II.3.47, 48; II.6.19; III.1.83; III.3.3, 6, 23, 28; III.5.3, 12, 24, 25, 38, 44, 96, 103, 113, 152; III.6.91, 102, 164, 170, 183, 223, 294, 299, 307; IV.1.103, 141, 148; IV.2.10, 14; V.1.142, 170; V.2.69, 79, 99, 101; V.3.6, 133; V.4.54, even very —, V.4.99; *Epil.* 7.
- Hereafter.** *adv.* II.2.237; III.3.5.
- Herself.** *pr.* V.3.26, &c. *See She.*
- Hether.** *Qo. for Hither*, III.5.120; IV.1.103.
- Hey.** *interj.* —, nonny nonny nonny, III.4.21, 24. *See Heigh.*
- Hide.** *n.* Nemean — (*of a lion*), I.1.68.
- Hide.** *v. t.* a hidden sun, II.5.23, III.6.118; be hid in him, V.3.98.
- High.** *adj.* — throne, I.3.96; the sun grows —, II.2.149; *Compar.* —er, II.6.5; V.3.125; V.4.78.

- High.** *adv.* his nose stands —, IV. 2.110.
- Highspeeded.** *adj.* this — pace, I. 3.83.
- Hilding.** *n.* that scurvy —, III.5. 42.
- Himself.** *pr.* I.3.45; II.2.121; IV. 2.14; casts — th' accounts, V.2. 58, &c. See **He**.
- Hind.** *n.* a silver — (= *deer*). *Stage dir.* V.1. p. 88.
- Hind.** *adj.* his — hoofs, V.4.76.
- Hip.** *n.* I.2.56; a vengeance trick o' the (= *wrestling*), II.3.71.
- Hippolyta.** *n.* I.1.77; III.1.1; IV. 1.7; V.3.136.
- His.** *pron.* used for *its*, *Prol.* 4, 5; his eye will dwell upon — (*sc.* the eye's?) object, V.3.49. See **He**, and **Its**.
- Hiss.** *n.* the first sound this child hear be a —, *Prol.* 16.
- Hiss.** *v. i.* let him —, and kill our market, *Epil.* 8.
- Hissing.** *n.* —, howling, IV.3.27.
- Hither.** *adv.* See **Hether**, III.5. 120; IV.1.103; IV.1.138.
- Ho.** *interj.* [*Qo. ho*], III.3.1; III. 5.81; V.2.18; V.4.40.
- Hoar.** *adj.* chough — [*Seward's* conj. for *Qo. clough hee*], I.1.20.
- Hoarse.** *adj.* — throat, V.1.88.
- Hobby-horse.** *n.* the best — in all the parish, V.2.52.
- Hoist.** *v. t.* — we the sails, V.1.28.
- Hold.** *i. v. t.* do but you — out, *Prol.* 25; we should — you here for ever, I.3.24; II.2.59; do we all — against the Maying (= *keep our appointment*), II.3.35; away boys, and — (*see keep touch*), II.3.59; III.1.47; pray — your promise, III.1.100; III.5. 50; I — it better (= *deem*), III. 6.89; your reason will not — it (= *maintain it*), III.6.228; — thy word (= *keep your promise*), III.6.136; — your course, III.6. 304; not to be held ungrateful, IV.1.22; the file and quality I —, V.1.161; —, oh, V.4.40, 41.
- ii. *seemingly intransitive use*: that sword he refuses, if it but —, I kill him with (= *stand firm*), III.6.15; if it but — (*stand firm*), III.6.91; pray Heaven it — so (= *continue*), IV.1.16.
- Hole.** *n.* III.5.83.
- Holiday.** *n.* It is a — to look on them, II.1.53.
- Holla.** *v. i.* well have —ed to a deep cry of dogs, II.5.11. See **Halloa**.
- Holy.** *adj.* the dread eye of — Phœbus, I.1.46; I.1.156; — sanctuary, II.2.71; V.1.2, 12, 149, 164.
- Home.** *adv.* strike —, III.6.68; urge it —, III.6.233; IV.1.4; fit her —, and presently, V.2.11; do it —, V.2.37.
- Honest.** *adj.* II.2.222; II.2.233; II.3.60; III.3.4, 46; III.6.50, 197; V.2.22, 30; *Epil.* 14.
- Honest-hearted.** *adj.* some — maids, II.6.15.
- Honesty.** *n.* honour and —, III.1. 50; III.3.14; in the way of —. Never cast your child away for — (= *virtue*), V.2.20, 21, 22, 28, 70.
- Honour.** *n.* shake to lose his —, *Prol.* 5; the — of your bed, I.1. 30; I.1.82; to godlike —s, I. 1.230; I.2.17; if we will keep our —s, I.2.37; that — which his enemy come in, I.2.108; games of —, II.2.10; like twins of —, II.2.18; the curse of —, II.2.54; the ways of —, II.2.73; II.2.146; let mine — down (= *lower*), II.2.197; fair-eyed —, II.5.29; the — you have won, II.5.61; III.1.36; — and honesty, III.1.50; III.3.14; III.6. 18; my cause and — guard me, III.6.92; a place prepared for those that sleep in —, III.6.99; for —'s sake, III.6.110; the law will have the — of our ends, III. 6.130; your own spotless —, III. 6.196; III.6.221, 226; main your — (= *fair name*), III.6.237;

- preserve the — of affection, III. 6.269; by mine —, III.6.289; fame and —, IV.2.21; the ornament of —, IV.2.93 (= *nobility*), IV.2.110; sons of —, IV.2.141; — crown the worthiest, V.1.17; deeds of — in their kind, V.3.12; a grain of — they not o'erweigh us, V.4.18; V.4.98.
- Honour.** *v. t.* —ed Hippolyta, I. 1.77; I.4.7; II.5.36; IV.2.149; V.1.6. See **Humour**, V.2.40.
- Honourable.** *adj.* III.6.27; IV.1.30.
- Hood.** *n.* Robin —, *Prolog.* 21.
- Hoof.** *n.* —s, V.4.60, 76.
- Hope.** *n.* a famishing —, I.1.167; II.2.26, 171; II.5.52; II.6.26; III.6.92; IV.2.99; IV.3.56, 86.
- Hope.** *v. t.* I.1.71; II.5.64; IV. 1.14, 30; V.1.172; V.2.95.
- Hopeless.** *adj.* to marry him is —, to be his whore is witless, II.4.4.
- Horn.** *n.* you hear the —s (= *bugles*), III.1.96; III.5.93.
- Hornbook.** *n.* He'll eat a — ere he fail, II.3.42.
- Horribly.** *adv.* She's — in love, V.2.62.
- Horrid.** *adj.* I.1.144.
- Horror.** *n.* Darkness . . . the dam of —, V.3.23.
- Horse.** *n.* our fiery —s like proud seas under us, II.2.19; II.5.54; III.1.20, 107; III.6.59, 77; V.2.45, 55; V.4.54, 56; the hot — full of fire, V.4.65. See **Hobbyhorse**, V.2.52.
- Horseman.** *n.* II.5.45.
- Horsemanship.** *n.* my feat in —, II.5.13.
- Host.** *n.* mine — and his fat spouse, III.5.127.
- Hostage.** *n.* take — of thee for, I. 1.184.
- Hostler.** *n.* V.2.59.
- Hot.** *adj.* — grief (= *warm tears*), I.1.107; the — horse (= *fiery*), V.4.65; *Comp.* —ter, V.1.91.
- Hotly.** *adv.* (= *angrily*), V.1.105.
- Hound.** *n.* our Theban —s, II.2.46.
- Hour.** *n.* two —s travel, *Prolog.* 29; I.1.183; bate not an —, I.1.220; my — to come (= *rest of my life*), II.2.6; II.2.210; II.6.35; III.3.49; III.6.112, 123, 300, 304; IV.1.124; IV.2.43; in two —s, IV.1.137; V.1.11; half —, V.2.4; V.2.10, 42; twenty mile an —, V.2.51; in lag —s, V.4.8; V.4.92, 128, 129.
- Hourly.** *adv.* III.6.221.
- House.** *n.* your hawthorn —, III. 1.82 (= *arbour*), IV.1.79. See **Gardenhouse**, IV.3.48.
- House.** *adj.* these — clogs away (*boot worn in the house*; here = *fetters*), III.1.43.
- Household.** *n.* —'s grave, I.5.11.
- How.** *adv.* *Prolog.* 17; I.1.160; I.2.37; I.3.26; II.1.31; II.2.1, 70, 131, 139, 150, 239, 245, 256, 279; II.3.72; II.5.17, 23; III.1.16, 60; III.2.20; III.3.24; III.4.5, 8; III.5.7, 148; III.6.66, 213, 237, 239; IV.1.19, 25, 33; IV.2.55; IV.3.24, 34, 42, 85; V.1.18, 25; V.2.25, 31, 46, 70, 72, 94, 103; V.3.56, 71; V.4.25, 45; *Epil.* 1.
- Howl.** *n.* strange —s, III.2.12.
- Howl.** *v. i.* III.2.18; IV.3.45, 48.
- Howlet.** *n.* three fools fell out about an —, III.5.67.
- Howling.** *n.* —, chattering, IV.3.27.
- Howsoever.** *adv.* III.1.51.
- Hubbub.** *n.* II.6.36. See **Whoo-bub**.
- Hue.** *n.* (= *colour*), I.1.3.
- Hum.** *i. v. t.* —med one, I.3.75.
- ii. v. i.* he hears and nods and — (= *says 'hum'*), III.5.15.
- Human.** *adj.* [*Qu.* humane and humane], I.1.144; — title, I.1.233.
- Humble.** *adj.* — banks can go to law with waters, V.3.99.
- Humble.** *v. t.* — with a ferula the tall ones, III.5.112; am —d fore thine altar, V.1.143.



- Humour.** *n.* the melancholy — that infects her, V.2.38; those darker —s that, V.3.53.
- Humour.** *v. t.* pray — her [*Qo.* honour], V.2.40.
- Hundred.** *n.* I.1.184; IV.1.72, 127; V.2.64, 109.
- Hunger.** *n.* your — needs no sauce I see, III.3.25.
- Hungry.** *adj.* III.4.11.
- Hunt.** *v. t.* may the stag thou —'st stand long, III.5.154; went —ing, III.3.40; this is the duke a —ing as I told you, III.6.108.
- Huntress.** *n.* the — (*Diana*), V.1.92.
- Hurry.** *n.* the court — (= *confused or hasty preparations*), II.1.17.
- Hurt.** *n.* last —s, I.4.26; I might do —, V.3.61.
- Hurt.** *v. t.* store never —s good governors, I.3.6; hand of war —s none here, II.2.87; II.2.277; III.6.87; V.2.111.
- Husband.** *n.* *Prol.* 8; I.1.205; II.4.25; III.6.274; V.1.151; V.3.37.
- Hypocrisy.** *n.* III.1.95.
- I.** *pron.* *Prol.* 9, 19, 20, 21; I.1.26, 28, 35, 36, 37, 55, 56, 57, 58, 61, 71, 76, 77, 87, 101, 103, 104, 106, 111, 117, 119, 122, 123, 126, 128, 148, 171, 173, 193. *et passim.* raise me a devil, III.5.85; I laid me down, IV.1.62. See **Me-thinks, Me, My, Mine, &c.**
- I.** *adv.* spelling of *Qo.* for **Ay**, which see, II.3.33; say 'I'. I, I by any means, III.5.134, 135; V.2.109.
- Ice.** *n.* my petition was set down in —, which by hot grief uncandied, melts into drops, I.1.107; — to cool 'em, I.2.34; in — up to the heart [*Qo.* yce], IV.3.37.
- If.** *conj.* *Prol.* 3, 15, 30; I.1.99, 121, 182, 200, 228; I.2.11, 29, 37; I.3.22, 91; II.2.59, 62, 170, 175, 176, 178, 195, 198, 200, 204, 231, 243, 253, 255, 257, 278; II.3.15, 20, 73; II.4.10; II.5.19, 42, 56, 57, 63; II.6.13, 20; III.1.27, 30, 66; III.2.7, 8, 11, 23; III.3.26; III.5.102, 138; III.6.15, 36, 47, 91, 97, 98, 104, 109, 113, 114, 147, 151, 161, 170, 173, 217, 228, 236, 247, 273, 278, 282, 284; IV.1.40, 123; IV.2.7, 47, 74, 92, 109; IV.3.18, 81; V.1.71, 106, 166; V.2.33, 53, 112; V.3.18, 52, 60, 120; V.4.42.
- Ignis.** *Latin, see Et.* III.5.58.
- Ignorance.** *n.* children of grief and —, II.2.55; lust and —, II.2.106.
- Ignorant.** *adj.* III.6.132.
- Ill.** *n.* her kind of — gave me some sorrow (= *ailment*), V.4.26.
- Ill.** *adj.* envy of — men (= *bad*), II.2.90; — old men, unwept, II.2.109; a fire — take her (*See Notes*), III.5.52; V.2.13; hard meat and — lodging, V.2.97.
- Ill-dealing.** *adj.* — fortune, I.3.5.
- Illustrate.** *v. t.* his body and fiery mind — a brave father, II.5.22 (= *indicate*).
- Imagination.** *n.* —s, II.2.77; a death beyond —, II.3.5.
- Imitation.** *n.* III.6.81.
- Impartial.** *adj.* th' — gods, I.4.4.
- Impatient.** *adj.* rude and — (*sc.* wind), II.2.141.
- Impediment.** *n.* —s (= *fetters*), III.1.84.
- Imperfect.** *adj.* our haste does leave —, I.4.12.
- Implore.** *v. t.* — her power unto our party, V.1.75.
- Import.** *v. t.* it more — me (= *is of more importance to me*), I.1.172.
- Importment.** *n.* like old —'s bastard (*See Notes*), I.3.80.
- Imposition.** *n.* (*See Notes*), I.4.44.
- In.** *adv.* II.2.149, 240; II.4.21; III.5.119; IV.1.147; IV.2.64; V.2.24, 107; I will now — and kneel (= *go in*), I.3.94; stuck — as sweet flowers (= *covered with, adorned with*), IV.3.72.
- In.** *prep.* *Prol.* 25; I.1.2, 3, 10, 42,



- 64, 72, 82, 94, 107, 109, 112, 120, 134, 156, 165, 183, 201, 203, 209; I.2.1, 2, 4, 6, 7, 8, 15, 27, 42, 57, 59, 66, 70; I.3.14, 17, 21, 36, 71, 78, 79, 82, 87, 96; I.4.6, 9, 11, 17, 19, 25, 31, 34, 44, 45; II.1.10, 21, 23, 28, 45; II.2.15, 38, 53, 65, 105, 118, 127, 132, 142, 169, 179, 204, 211, 213, 244, 254; II.3.34, 46, 53, 67, 80, 83; II.4.9, 17, 22; II.5.13, 28, 48, 51; III.1.11, 21, 29, 33, 39, 41, 45, 54, 62, 63, 75, 78, 88, 92, 108; *et passim*. *Peculiar uses*: but that we fear the gods — him (= *represented by him*), I.2.94; sing — an evening (= of), II.4.19. *In the often contracted i' th'*, as I.1.99, I.2.60; II.1.17; II.3.47, 50; III.5.73.
- Incense**. *n.* V.1. *stage dir.* *p.* 88; swelling —, V.1.4.
- Inch**. *n.* III.4.20; within an — of, V.3.80.
- Incite**. *v. t.* hark how yon spurs to spirit do — the princes, V.3.56.
- Incline**. *v. i.* they — to treachery, III.1.67; her mood —ing that way, V.2.34.
- Incontinence**. *n.* in abstinence we shame as in —, I.2.7.
- Indebted**. *adj.* we are much — to your travel, II.5.30.
- Indeed**. *adv.* I.1.123; II.2.270; III.6.77; V.2.50.
- Indifferent**. *adj.* I am —, III.6.60.
- Individual**. *see* **Dividual**, I.3.82.
- Induce**. *v. t.* — stale Gravity to dance, V.1.84.
- Infamy**. *n.* his loud —, I.2.76.
- Infant**. *n.* sod their —s, I.3.21.
- Infect**. *v. t.* but —s the winds with stench of our slain lords, I.1.46; the melancholy humour that —s her, V.2.38.
- Infinite**. *adj.* your own virtues —, III.6.199; — pity, V.3.144.
- Infinitely**. *adv.* — loved him, II.4.15.
- Inflame**. *v. t.* informs the tapster to — the reckoning, III.5.130.
- Inflict**. *v. t.* Fortune can — upon us, II.2.57.
- Inform**. *v. t.* —s the tapster to inflame the reckoning, III.5.130.
- Infuse**. *v. t.* whereto she'll — power, I.1.73; affections that the Heavens — in their best-tempered pieces, I.3.9.
- Ingot**. *n.* honour and golden —s, I.2.17.
- Inhabit**. *v. i.* winter must — here still, II.2.45.
- Inheritance**. *n.* II.2.84.
- Injury**. *n.* the true decider of all —ies, III.6.153.
- Innocent**. *n.* (= *simpleton*), every — wots well, I.3.79; so childishly, so sillily, as if she were a fool, an —, IV.1.41.
- Innocent**. *adj.* were things —, I.3.60; — cradle, I.3.71; — true heart, V.1.134.
- Insert**. *v. t.* that are —ed, IV.3.69.
- Inspire**. *v. t.* Pallas — me, III.5.94; if well —d (= *if I interpret aright*), V.1.66.
- Instant**. *n.* in the — with (= *at the same moment*), I.2.106; together, at one —, III.6.177; at this —, V.3.83.
- Instantly**. *adv.* III.6.113.
- Instruct**. *v. t.* I.1.123; V.1.57.
- Instrument**. *n.* —s (= *soldiers*), I.1.163; I.2.68; V.1. *stage dir.* *p.* 90; wind —s, V.3.95.
- Intelligence**. *n.* the — of state came in the instant with the defier (*perhaps* = *intelligencer*), I.2.106.
- Intemperate**. *adj.* that — surfeit of her eye, IV.3.61.
- Intercession**. *n.* (= *prayer*), V.1.45.
- Interest**. *n.* with — in this lady (= *legal title to*), III.6.298.
- Intermingle**. *v. t.* — your petition, IV.3.77.
- Intertangle**. *v. t.* their —d roots of love, I.3.59.

- Into.** *prep.* I.1.83, 108; I.2.82; I.3.46; I.4.47; let in life — thee, II.3.10; III.5.20; III.6.38, 111; IV.3.78, 84; V.1.50, 110, 147; V.3.85; V.4.58.
- Intrate.** *Latin.* III.5.137.
- Intreat.** *See* Entreat, V.2.17.
- Invent.** *v. t.* — a way safer, III.6.217; any death thou canst —, III.6.281.
- Invest.** *v. t.* — you in your dignities, I.4.10.
- Invite.** *v. t.* a bold gravity, and yet —ing, IV.2.41.
- Ipso facto.** *Lat.* V.2.37.
- Irae.** *Lat.* *See* Et, III.5.88.
- Ire.** *n.* V.1.14.
- Iris.** *n.* — newly dropt down from heaven, IV.1.87.
- Iron.** *n.* cold —, II.6.10; from — came music's origin, V.4.60.
- Iron.** *adj.* — bracelets (= *hand-cuffs*), II.6.8.
- Irons.** *n.* clap more — on him (= *prison-chains*), II.2.273.
- Is.** *second syllable of Morr-is*, III.5.119.
- Issue.** *n.* effect rare —s by their operance, I.3.63 (= *results*); II.2.32 (= *children*).
- It.** *pron.* Prol. 10, 14, 17, 22; I.1.24, 61, 80, 83, 111, 113, 120, 127, 128, 129, 147, 172; I.2.49, 70; I.3.69, 76; II.1.17, 46; II.2.43, 46, 78; women 't were (*grammat. subject followed by plural verb*), V.1.107; that which perished should go to it (*sc. death*) unsentenced, V.1.157; *etc. Sometimes written 't*, I.1.94, 152, 183, &c.
- Its.** *adj.* [*Qo.* It's], with — own sweat, I.1.154; I.2.65.
- Itself.** [*Qo.* sometimes It self], I.1.151, 153; II.1.23; V.1.97.
- Ivy-tod.** *n.* [*Qo.* &c., ivy tops; H. L. conj. tods], like —s, not to undo with thunder, IV.2.104.
- Jade.** *n.* (= *horse*), the —s' tails, II.3.29; the — comes o'er, V.4.81.
- Jadry.** *n.* [*Qo.* jadrie], boistrous and rough — (= *conduct like a jade's*), V.4.72.
- Jane, Jave.** *See* Jean, III.5.8.
- Javelin.** *n.* shake our pointed —s, II.2.49.
- Jaw.** *v. t.* I reckon not if the wolves would — me, so he had this file, III.2.7.
- Jealous.** *adj.* — as a turkey, II.3.30.
- Jealousy.** *n.* her ancient fit of —, I.2.22.
- Jean.** *n.* [*Qo.* jave], ye — judgments, III.5.8. *See* Notes.
- Jest.** *v. i.* a toy to — at, II.1.34.
- Jewel.** *n.* O — o' the wood, o' the world, III.1.9; your stolen —, V.4.119.
- Jig.** *n.* for a —, V.2.49.
- Jingling.** *n.* [*Qo.* jengling], the — of his gyves, III.2.14.
- Jolly.** *adj.* You — gallants, III.5.63.
- Jot.** *n.* leave not out a — of the sacred ceremony, I.1.130; a — of terror, I.2.95; any —, V.4.71.
- Journey.** *n.* [*Qo.* jorney], a day's —, V.2.73.
- Jove.** *n.* whom — hath marked the honour of your bed, I.1.29; I.1.137, 176; set — afire with [*Sympson's conj. for Qo. Love*], IV.2.16.
- Jovis.** *Lat.* *See* Et, III.5.88.
- Joy.** *n.* I.1.189; — seize on you again, I.5.12; II.2.189; V.3.131; world's —, V.4.91.
- Joy.** *v. i.* made mothers —, IV.2.63 (= *rejoice*) [*or* ? mothers' joy].
- Joyful.** *adj.* right —, V.3.135.
- Judge.** *n.* could not be — between 'em, V.3.128.
- Judge.** *v. t.* may be —d, I.4.14; if we — by the outside, IV.2.74.
- Judgment.** *n.* as unpanged — can (= *power of selection*), I.1.169; I.3.57; ye jean —s (= *ye common fools*), III.5.8; do it with —, III.5.37.

- Jump.** *adv.* where not to be even — (= *exactly equal*), I.2.40.
- Juno.** *n.* not —'s mantle fairer than your tresses, I.1.63; great —, I.2.21; great-eyed —'s (*sc.* brow), IV.2.20.
- Jupiter.** *n.* — bless us! IV.3.30.
- Just.** *adj.* II.2.181; these — trials, III.6.105; III.6.174.
- Just.** *adv.* I.2.54; IV.2.15 (= *exactly*).
- Justice.** *n.* the ear of heavenly —, I.2.81; I.3.47; II.2.106; the — of my love, III.1.34; III.6.15; the — of affection, III.6.51; do such a — (= *act of justice*), III.6.155; V.1.15; give them our present —, V.3.132; V.4.109, 120.
- Justify.** *v. t.* III.1.64; —ing my love, III.6.42.
- Justly.** *adv.* II.2.208; III.6.148.
- Keep.** *i. v. t.* if this play do not — a little dull time from us, *Prol.* 30; I.1.217; I.2.6, 37; II.1.2; II.2.72, 149; — touch (= *come to the rendezvous*), II.3.41; what a coil he —s (= *continues making*); kept a hawk, II.5.11; you may — yourself (= *maintain*), II.6.39; if he — touch, III.3.53; III.6.90; *kept* her company, V.2.2; — our wedding then (= *celebrate*), V.2.76; he was *kept* down with hard meat and lodging (= *reduced in health by*), V.2.97; V.4.73, 76.
- ii. v. i.** I.1.220; I.3.10; II.6.6; IV.1.128.
- Keeper.** *n.* (= *jailor*), II.2.200, 222, 224, 245, 273; II.4.3.
- Ken.** *v. t.* what —'st thou, IV.1.149; had I —ned all that were (= *known*), V.1.100.
- Key.** *n.* speak 't in a woman's — like such a woman as any of us three, I.1.94.
- Kill.** *v. t.* II.2.265, 267; perfumes to — the smell of the prison, III.1.86; III.5.156; III.6.15, 44, 97, 166 (*See Misadventure*); III.6.190; III.6.220, 261; — our market, *Epil.* 8.
- Killing.** *n.* at —'em, I.3.22.
- Kin.** *adj.* that ever blood made —, III.1.38.
- Kind.** *n.* of many —s, I.2.29; II.2.276; in this —, III.1.92; a — of mirth, V.3.51; her — of ill, V.4.26 (= *sort*); deeds of honour in their — (*See Note*), V.3.12; still are children in some —, V.4.134.
- Kind.** *adj.* bear 'em speedily from our — air, to them unkind, I.4.38; III.1.50; III.6.21; V.2.44; — manage (= *good training*), V.4.69.
- Kindle.** *v. t.* — their valour at your eye, V.3.29.
- Kindly.** *adv.* II.6.29; III.6.67.
- Kindness.** *n.* 2.125.
- Kindred.** *n.* where are our friends and —s, II.2.8; II.4.32 (= *relationship*); V.1.26.
- King.** *n.* I.1.50; — Capaneus, I.1.59; I.1.140, 147, 180; I.2.84, 107; I.4.16; III.1.21; — of Pigmies, III.4.15; III.6.71; V.1.83.
- Kingdom.** *n.* II.2.249; II.3.1, 18; IV.2.145; V.3.33.
- Kinsman.** *n.* Hercules our —, I.1.66; I.2.78; a noble —, II.2.192; traitor —, III.1.30, 69; III.6.17, 21; V.1.34; V.3.129; my dear —en, V.4.13; V.4.116.
- Kiss.** *n.* I.1.216; II.2.31; V.2.88.
- Kiss.** *i. v. t.* II.4.25; II.5.37; II.6.22, 30; II.6.37; IV.1.93; V.2.56; I'll — him up again, V.2.98; V.4.94.
- ii. v. i.** shall we — too, V.2.108.
- Kite.** *n.* talons of the —s [*Qu.* kights], I.1.41.
- Knack.** *n.* th' enamelled —s o' the mead and garden, III.1.7.
- Knee.** *n.* no —s to me, I.1.35; suffered your —s to wrong themselves, I.1.56; oh, no —s, none, widow, I.1.74; lend us a —, I.1.96; our cause calls for your —, I.1.200; III.4.19; my —s shall



- grow to the ground, III.6.192; IV.1.8; IV.2.36.
- Knee-deep.** *adv.* — where she sat (= *water up to the knees*), IV.1.83.
- Kneel.** *v. i.* pray you, — not, I.1.54; I.1.207; I.3.94.
- Knife.** *n.* Cords, *knives*, drams, precipitance, I.1.142.
- Knight.** *n.* a good — and a bold, III.1.65; —s appointed, III.6.134; three fair —s, III.6.292; the —s are come, IV.2.56; fair —s, IV.2.67, 71, 94; V.1.34; thy female —s, V.1.140; brave —s, V.1.167; V.3.29, 108, 115.
- Knightly.** *adj.* — strength, III.6.295.
- Knit.** *v. t.* the gout had — his fingers into knots, V.1.112.
- Knock.** *v. t.* — thy brains out, II.2.221.
- Knoll.** *v. i.* remember that your fame —s [*Qo. knowles*] in the ear o' the world, I.1.134.
- Knot.** *n.* — of love, I.3.41; *see* **Knit**, V.1.112.
- Know.** *v. t.* I.1.87; he that will all the treasure — of the earth, must — the centre too, I.1.114, 115; —s neither wet nor dry, I.1.121; that best —'st how to draw out, I.1.159; I.2.52, 115; I.3.6, 62, 88; I.4.40; II.1.46; II.2.32, 41, 92, 224; II.3.16, 19, 39, 41, 58, 63, 64, 80; II.4.29; II.5.13, 55; II.6.12; III.1.28, 111; III.2.16; III.3.7, 29; III.5.82; III.6.120, 125, 128, 253; IV.1.28, 31, 43, 101, 116, 122, 139; IV.2.51; IV.3.85; V.1.42, 99, 107, 152, 171; V.2.9, 60; do you not — me, V.2.82; V.3.30, 37, 39, 74, 101, 132, 136.
- Labour.** *n.* I.3.34; whose twelve strong —s (*sc. Hercules*), III.6.176; prone to — (*perhaps a reference to new-conceived*), IV.2.129; I am in — to push, V.1.25.
- Labour.** *v. i.* —ed meditative, I.1.136; if — through, I.2.11; —ed, III.5.4, 41; all was vainly —ed, III.6.79.
- Lack.** *v. t.* for what we —, we laugh, V.4.132.
- Lad.** *n.* II.3.38, 74.
- Lady.** *n.* I.1.35; dear glass of —ies, I.1.90; I.1.101, 113, 170; all —ies' scandal (= *reproach*), I.1.192; I.1.233; favours of their —ies, II.2.11; II.2.259, 277; II.3.57; IV.5.17, 34; — Fortune, III.1.15; III.5.35, 99, 100; — bright, III.5.125; IV.5.138, 157; III.6.41, 168, 203, 233, 298; IV.1.12; IV.2.111; the favour of his —, IV.2.138; IV.2.143; a proud — and a proud city-wife, IV.3.44; V.3.89; V.4.122.
- Lag.** *adj.* in — hours (= *late old age*), V.4.8.
- Lake.** *n.* IV.1.53, 87 (*See Nymph*).
- Lament.** *v. t.* each stroke —s the place whereon it falls (= *sorrows for*), V.3.4.
- Lamenting.** *n.* gives me such — as wakes my vengeance (= *lamentation, sorrow*), I.1.58.
- Lamp.** *n.* the eyes, these the bright —s of beauty, IV.2.39.
- Lance.** *n.* [*Qo. launce*], babes broached on the —, I.3.20.
- Land.** *n.* *See* **Laund**. Each took a several —, III.1.2 (= *glade in the forest*).
- Land.** *n.* safe to —, IV.1.96.
- Lane.** *n.* make —s in troops aghast, I.4.19.
- Language.** *n.* I eared her —, III.1.29; III.1.44, 103; pardon me hard —, III.1.106; V.1.124.
- Lard.** *v. t.* the name Palamon —s it (= *fills it, occurs in it: lit. is rubbed into it like lard*), IV.3.6.
- Large.** *adj.* IV.1.24; — confessors (= *boasters of immorality*), V.1.105.
- Lark's-heel.** *n.* —s trim, I.1.12.
- Lass.** *n.* III.5.89; a — of fourteen, V.1.109.



- Last.** *adj.* our — minute, I.2.103; — hurts, I.4.26; II.5.14; III.6.14; — night, IV.1.135; my — of vestal office, V.1.149; — words, V.4.88; V.4.92.
- Last.** *adv.* —, let me intreat, sir, III.6.210.
- Last.** *v. i.* this celebration will longer —, I.1.132.
- Lastly.** *adv.* (*See Lazily*), II.2.54.
- Late.** *adv.* IV.1.52.
- Latest.** *adj.* the — thing I shall be glad of (= *last*), V.4.30.
- Laud.** *n.* that to thy — I may advance (= *praise, honour*), V.1.58.
- Laugh.** *v. i.* — at misery, II.2.2; II.2.151; III.5.147; IV.1.125; for what we lack, we —, V.4.133.
- Laund.** [*Dyce's spelling of O. Edd. Land*], III.1.2 (= *glade, lawn*).
- Law.** *n.* II.4.31, 32; II.6.13; III.6.130; the tenour of my —s, III.6.133; fall by the —, III.6.225; — and regiment, IV.3.84; V.1.98; go to — with waters, V.3.99.
- Lawfully.** *adv.* II.2.89.
- Lay.** *n.* young —s of love (= *songs*), V.1.89.
- Lay.** *v. t.* Hercules . . . *laid* by his club, I.1.67; rather *laid out* for purchase, I.2.111; have patiently *laid up* (= *resigned*) my hour to come, II.2.6; III.5.6; I *laid* me down, IV.1.62; — by your anger, V.1.11; which being *laid* unto mine . . . heart, V.1.133; I prithee, — attention to the cry (*perhaps we should read pay; if not, the phrase is noticeable*), V.3.91; whose lives . . . are *laid* down, V.4.14.
- Lazily.** *adv.* [*Seward's conj. for O. Edd. Lastly*], II.2.54.
- Lazy.** *adj.* like — clouds, II.2.14.
- Lead.** *n.* a cauldron of — and usurer's grease, IV.3.31; heavier than — itself, V.1.97; a sow of —, V.3.120.
- Lead.** *v. t.* let him — his line (= *weight as with lead*), I.1.116.
- Lead.** *v. t.* — on the bride, I.1.208; I.4.47; shall be *led*, II.2.116; — the way, II.5.59; — her in, III.5.89; I'll — (*sc.* the way), III.5.90; he that — you to, V.4.22; — (*sc.* us, *or* the way) courageous cousin, V.4.38; a life that thou art yet to —, V.4.44; V.4.122.
- Lead-en-footed.** *adj.* (= *slow*), I.2.84.
- Leak.** *v.* there's a — sprung (*sc.* in the ship), III.4.8.
- Leap.** *v. i.* — (*sc.* into) the garden, II.2.218.
- Learn.** *v. t.* IV.3.78.
- Learned.** *adj.* *Prol.* 11; III.5.14, 40, 49.
- Learning.** *n.* our thing of — says so (= *our learned man*), II.3.51; II.3.54.
- Least.** *adj.* I.1.116; I.2.9; I.3.39; II.1.42; those are o' the —, III.6.64; IV.1.127.
- Leave.** *n.* took — o' the moon (= *died: cf. 'revisit't the glimpses of the Moon' Hamlet*, I.4.53), I.3.52; by your —, II.2.222; by your —s, honest friends, II.3.60; III.6.135; V.2.20.
- Leave.** *See Notes: perhaps for 'believe,'* I.4.22.
- Leave.** *i. v. t.* I.1.130; I.2.75, 98; — imperfect, I.4.12; — your pointing (= *cease from*), II.1.51; — 'em all behind us, II.2.13; 115, 143; II.3.18; II.6.19; III.3.46; III.6.4; IV.1.59; she *left* me far behind her, IV.1.99; IV.1.102; V.1.16; V.2.102; with you — dispute (= *cease arguing*), V.4.135.
- ii. apparently intransitive use:** we must needs —, *Prol.* 32; let us —, I.2.3.
- Leave-taking.** *n.* as short as my —, V.4.38.
- Leech.** *n.* blood . . . sucked from me with —es, I.2.73.

- Lees. n.** the very — (= *drags*) of such . . . exceed the wine of others, I.4.29.
- Left. adj.** — wing, III.6.75; the — (*sc. side*), V.3.74.
- Leg. n.** a wanton —, II.2.15; little Luce with the white —s, III.5.26; go upon 's legs, IV.3.12; V.4.76, 78.
- Lend. v. t.** — us a knee, I.1.96; I freely —, I.1.193; Heavens — a thousand differing ways to one sure end, I.5.13; the charity of one meal — me (= *give*), III.1.74; — thine ear, V.1.146.
- Length. n.** at —, III.5.16; would make his — a mile (= *stride of a horse*), V.4.56.
- Lengthen. v. t.** your day is —ed, V.4.102.
- Leprous. adj.** marry a — witch, IV.3.40.
- Less. adv.** III.6.125; IV.1.44.
- Lessen. v. t.** II.3.35.
- Lest. adv.** [*Qo. least*], III.1.97; III.2.30; V.3.118.
- Let. n.** may they kill him without —s (= *hindrances*), III.5.156.
- Let. v. t.** if we — fall, *Prol.* 15; — him consider (= *give him time to*), I.1.105, 116; — us be widows to our woes, I.1.166; I.2.3, 52; — the blood of mine that 's sibbe to him be sucked from me with leeches, I.2.71, 73; —'s leave, I.2.75; — him approach, I.2.93; — us to the king, I.2.107; — the event, I.2.113; — us follow, I.2.115; — me perish if, II.2.61; II.2.65, 71, 149, 185; — mine honour down (= *allow myself to be dishonoured*), II.2.197; II.2.199, 233; — in life unto thee, II.3.10; II.3.28, 31; to — slip now, II.3.44; II.3.57, 74; II.5.39, 55, 58; II.6.1, 28; III.2.29; III.3.10; III.5.9, 10; — us alone, III.5.31, 65, 85, 89, 110; III.6.29; — me say, III.6.161; III.6.167, 177, 210, 272; — 'em all alone, IV.1.126; IV.1.144, 147; IV.3.22, &c.
- Levy. v. t.** forth, and — our worthiest instruments, I.1.162 (= *collect*).
- Lewdly. adv.** lied so — (= *basely*), IV.2.35.
- Liabable. adj.** am not I — to those affections, II.2.188.
- Libel. n.** the —s read of liberal wits, V.1.101.
- Liberal. adj.** nor would the libels read of — wits (= *licentious*), V.1.102.
- Liberty. n.** I.4.35; desire of —, I.4.42; II.2.74, 88, 160, 210, 247, 258; II.6.2; V.2.96.
- Lid. n.** (= eyelid) not closed mine eyes, save when my —s scoured off their brine, III.2.28; God's —! (*Emilid's oath*), V.3.96.
- Lie. v. i.** all dear nature's children sweet, — fore bride and bridegroom's feet, I.1.14; tell him if he i' the bloodstained field lay swollen, I.1.99; — blistering fore the visitating sun, I.1.146; I could — down (*allusion to game at cards called 'Laugh and lay down'*), II.2.152; if the lives of all my name lay on it (= *depended*), II.2.176; a rock —s watching, III.4.6; where the credit of our town lay on it (= *depended*), III.5.56; III.6.12; your life —s on it (= *depends*), III.6.90; to — unburied, III.6.171; lake that —s behind the palace, IV.1.53; —s (= *reclines, or is*), IV.1.143; — there, Arcite, IV.2.43; there the cure —s mainly (= *consists*), V.2.8; — with her, V.2.18; the heart —s (= *is*), V.3.76; the right o' the lady did — in you, V.4.117.
- Lie. v. i.** that thou —st (= *tellest lies*), III.1.40; I —, III.2.21; I have —d so lewdly, IV.2.35.
- Lief. adv.** I had as — trace this good action, I.1.102.
- Life. n.** I.1.164; I.2.12; I.4.25;

- lives*, I.4.32; the *lives* of all my name, II.2.176; II.2.205, 215, 227, 237; upon his oath and —, II.2.248; not worthy —, II.2.269; gave me —, II.5.7; III.1.77; III.2.23, 29; III.3.42; III.5.97; III.6.90, 131, 156, 164, 214, 217; their *lives* (= *loss of life*) might breed the ruin of my name, opinion, III.6.239; III.6.251, 261, 267; IV.1.28; IV.2.61; a sore — (= *sorry, painful*) they have i' the other place (*i. e.* Hell), IV.3.26; to put — into dust, V.1.110; — in him seemed torture, V.1.114; a brave —, V.3.4; their *lives* but pinch 'em, V.3.133; V.3.142; V.4.14, 28, 37, 43.
- Light.** *n.* I.1.143; II.2.266; IV.1.104; Cynthia with her borrowed —, IV.1.150; IV.3.65; V.3.21. *See* Moonlight.
- Light.** *adj. Compar.* Makes —er than (= *more contemptible*), *Prolog.* 20; a —er (*sc.* armour), III.6.56; III.6.71.
- Lightning.** *n.* like —, II.2.24; the — of your valour, III.6.85.
- Light-o'-Love.** *n.* the tune of — [*Qo.* Light a love], V.2.54.
- Like.** *adj. Prolog.* 5; — such a woman as, I.1.94; I.1.112; each side — justice (= *equal*), I.3.47; — the elements, I.3.61; to the — innocent cradle (= *same*), I.3.71 (*See* Phoenix); — old Importment's bastard, I.3.80; I.3.84; I.4.18; then — men use 'em, I.4.28; II.2.12, 14, 18, 20, 22, 24, 28, 34, 50, 75, 99, 141, 252; II.5.23; II.6.5; — a shadow, II.6.34; III.1.47, 68; III.4.2, 25, 26; III.5.19; III.6.12, 30, 70, 134, 150; usage — to princes, III.6.306; IV.1.86; IV.2.20, 84, 104; — a trumpet, IV.2.113; — women new-conceived, IV.2.128; IV.3.32; V.1.86; V.2.50, 63; V.3.5, 42; V.4.62; bear us — the time, V.4.137. *See* Figlike, V.4.69.
- Like.** *v. t.* she —s, I.3.16; I.3.64; II.5.17, 47; how did you — him, V.2.46; how do you — her (*to* Doctor: = *what think you of her state*), V.2.103; *Epil.* 1.
- Like.** *adv.* — enough (= *likely*), II.2.229; I am — to know your husband, V.3.37.
- Likely.** *adv.* II.1.30; IV.1.51; 't was ever —, V.3.68.
- Likelihood.** *n.* a great — of both their pardons, IV.1.6.
- Likewise.** *adv.* III.1.10.
- Liking.** *n.* fixed her — on this gentleman (= *affection*), IV.3.56.
- Limit.** *n.* the heavenly — (= *dispenser*), V.1.30.
- Line.** *n.* let him lead his — (*See* Lead), I.1.116.
- Lined.** *p. p.* (= *furnished*) better —, II.1.51; his arms are brawny, — with strong sinews, IV.2.127.
- Lineament.** *n.* all his —s are as a man would wish 'em, strong and clean, IV.2.113.
- Lion.** *n.* this which is the —s and the bear's, I.1.52; a pair of —s, smeared with prey, I.4.18; a heated —, IV.2.82; hearts of —s, V.1.39.
- Lip.** *n.* thy tasteful —s, I.1.179; thy currant — (*play on* current, — currant), I.1.216; I loved my —s the better, II.4.26; cherry —s, IV.1.74; red —s, IV.2.111.
- Lisp.** *v. i.* he —s in 's neighing, able to entice a miller's mare, V.2.66.
- List.** *v. i.* —, then (= *hearken*), V.4.48.
- Listen.** *v. i.* III.2.15; IV.1.63.
- Little.** *n.* II.5.10.
- Little.** *adj. Prolog.* 31; II.1.1; II.2.85, 238; II.6.3; III.1.24; III.4.2; III.5.26; III.6.67; III.6.80, 85, 178; IV.2.117.
- Little.** *adv.* IV.3.4, 24.
- Live.** *v. i.* constant to eternity it —s, *Prolog.* 14; I.1.147; II.1.1; II.2.86; to — abroad, II.2.98; II.2.200; III.1.29; III.6.218; V.3.55, 141; V.4.5, 82, 99, 101.
- Livelong.** *adj.* this — night, III.2.12.



- Liver.** *n.* our —s perished, cracked to pieces with love, IV.3.19.
- Livery.** *n.* in 's face, the — of the warlike maid appears, IV.2.106.
- Living.** *n.* any —, that is a man's son (= *any living creature*), II.2.182.
- Lo.** *interj.* III.2.34; III.6.107; V.3.105; V.4.85.
- Load.** *n.* the rider's —, V.4.82.
- Load.** *v. t.* [*Qo. loden* (? *laden*) =] *loaden* with kisses, II.2.31.
- Loathe.** *v. i.* that —s e'en as it longs, I.3.90.
- Loathsome.** *adj.* the — misery of age, V.4.7.
- Loathsomeness.** *n.* th' offence of mortal — (= *corruption, decomposition*), I.1.45.
- Lock.** *n.* clip my yellow —s, III.4.20.
- Lock.** *v. t.* able to — Jove from a synod, I.1.176 (= *grapple, restrain*); she —s her beauties in her bud again (= *shuts*), II.2.142.
- Lodge.** *v. t.* where death's self was —d, I.3.40.
- Lodging.** *n.* is 't not mad — here in the wild woods, cousin, III.3.22; hard meat and ill —, V.2.97.
- Long.** *adj.* I.3.42; III.5.4, 132, 154; IV.2.85; this — hour, V.2.42; cut and — tail, V.2.49; *Compar.* —er time, V.3.48; no —er time than, I.1.97. *See* **Livelong**, III.2.12.
- Long.** *v. i.* she would — till she had, I.3.69; loathes e'en as it —s, I.3.90; all the —ing maids that ever loved, III.6.246; Pal. lies —ing, for me, IV.1.143; I — to see 'em, IV.2.65, 142.
- Long.** *adv.* will —er last [*O. Edd. long*; *Seward conj. longer*], I.1.132; I.2.51; II.2.86; —er, III.6.10; his hair hangs — behind him, IV.2.83; all day —, IV.3.15, 21; ere —, *Epil.* 15.
- Longing.** *n.* a deeper —, I.1.190; how his — follows his friend, I.3.26.
- Look.** *n.* his very —s, IV.2.78.
- Look.** *v. i.* (= *appear*), for a business [*that*] more bigger —t, I.1.215; —t pale with parting, I.3.53; I.4.13; our dole more deadly —s than dying, I.5.3; — tenderly to the two prisoners (= *attend carefully*), II.1.18; how they would have —t (= *appeared*), II.1.31; II.1.37; —! yonder they are; that's Arcite, II.1.47; 'tis a holiday to — on them, II.1.53; eyes yet —t on, II.4.11; the man they — for (= *search*), II.6.37; most perfidious that ever gently —t (= *appeared*), II.1.36; III.1.120, 121; III.4.2; with thy twinkling eyes — right and straight, III.5.117; how do I —, III.6.66; III.6.131, 277; IV.1.33; y' had best — to her (= *take care of her*), IV.1.122; I may go — (= *I don't know*), IV.2.52; so he —s, IV.2.82; yet I never —t on, IV.2.119; — here! IV.3.7; — on thy virgin, V.1.145; he —t all grace and success, V.3.69; his costliness of spirit —t through him, V.3.97; — sadly, V.4.125; *Epil.* 4.
- Loose.** *v. t.* this you may —, not me (*perhaps* = *lose*), IV.1.91. *See* **Lose**, IV.1.112.
- Lord.** *n.* our slain —s (= *husbands*), I.1.47; your dead —s, I.1.57; King Capaneus was your —, I.1.59; my — is taken heart-deep with your distress, I.1.104; I.1.141; our —s lie blistering, I.1.145; I.1.149; I.3.2, 34; I.4.7; — Arcite . . . prince Palamon, II.2.223–225; my —, II.2.261; II.2.267, 270; a chaffy —, III.1.41; darkness — of the world (? *astrological term like 'Lord of the ascendant'*), III.2.4; the — steward's daughter, III.3.29; — of May, III.5.125; my —, IV.2.120, 144; —s and courtiers, IV.3.35; the — of the day, V.1.60; Sir, my good —, V.3.10; to dis-



- seat his — (= *rider, master*), V. 4.73. *Exclamatory use*: —! the difference of men, II.1.53; —! what a coil he keeps, II.4.18; —! how y' are grown, V.2.94.
- Lordship.** *n.* II.2.263.
- Lose.** *v. t.* [*Qo. almost always spells it 'loose'*] shake to — (= *at losing*) *Prol.* 5; we — our humane title, I.1.233; a man will — himself, II.2.156; if that will — ye, farewell (= *deprive me of you*), II.2.178; II.2.255; II.5.31; III.1.1, 67; III.4.9; my *lost* strength, III.6.5; these *lost* cousins, III.6.188; — his head (= *be beheaded*), III.6.296; who —s, III.6.308; IV.1.77, 91; I must — my maidenhead by cocklight, IV.1.112; she 's *lost* past all cure, IV.1.137; as if he had *lost* his mother, IV.2.28; IV.2.34, 46 (= *ruined*); —s a noble cousin, IV.2.154; of mine eyes were I to — one, V.1.155; you — the noblest sight, V.2.99; not — the sight, V.2.103; will you — this sight, V.3.1; I have *lost* what 's dearest to me, V.3.112; V.3.72, 122, 136.
- Loss.** *n.* our —es fall so thick, *Prol.* 32; nor gain made him regard or — consider, I.3.30; cost us the — of our desire . . . — of dear love, V.4.111, 112, 114.
- Lot.** *n.* I pray them he be made your —, V.3.40.
- Loth.** *adj.* would be — to take example, II.2.146.
- Loud.** *adj.* his — infamy, I.2.76.
- Loudness.** *n.* the — of his fury, I.2.88.
- Love.** *n.* now for the — of him whom Jove hath marked, I.1.29; I.1.89; dearer in — than blood, I.2.1; I.3.41, 56, 59, 81; —'s provocations, I.4.41; I.4.45; new births of —, II.2.81; Oh, —, what a stout-hearted child thou art (= *Cupid*), II.6.8; II.6.27; a very thief in —, III.1.41; III.1.102; — has used you kindly, III.6.67; III.6.16, 42, 93, 161; the agony of —, III.6.219; of more authority; I 'm sure more —, III.6.231; III.6.261; her — to Palamon (= *for*), IV.1.49; true —, IV.1.90; it is, — (= *darling*), IV.1.117; in — with him, IV.1.125; — himself sits smiling (*see Jove*), IV.2.14; the —s and fights of gods, IV.2.24; command and threaten —, IV.2.40; IV.2.42, 146; out of — with Æneas, IV.3.13; our livers perished, cracked to pieces with —, IV.3.20; IV.3.68; V.1.26, 70; true —'s merit, V.1.128; your —, Palamon, V.2.41; Light o' Love (*name of tune*), V.2.54; horribly in — with him, V.2.62; your — comes, V.2.69; V.2.112; a — that grows as you decay, V.3.111; V.4.2; your —, V.4.106; that nought could buy dear — but loss of dear —, V.4.112; your old —s to (= *for*) us, *Epil.* 17.
- Love.** *i. v. t.* I did — him for 't, I.3.35; he —s best, I.3.47; I.3.85; II.2.30, 108, 112, 121, 156, 159, 162, 165, 170, 175, 177; I — (*sc.* her? *See Notes*), II.2.179; II.2.206, 245; II.4.1, 14, 15, 26, 29, 33; II.5.57; I — him beyond love and beyond reason, III.1.102; III.3.31; III.6.27, 40, 126, 139, 170, 203, 241, 257; IV.1.44; IV.2.48, 68; V.1.7, 122, 158; —d sister, V.3.114; V.4.90; —d a young handsome wench, *Epil.* 6.
- ii. v. i.* —d, for we did, I.3.61; II.2.117, 166, 167, 193, 233; — with all the justice of affection, III.6.50; as I — most, III.6.163; maids that ever —d, III.6.246; III.6.261, 278; IV.1.72.
- Lovely.** *adj.* — boy, IV.2.17.
- Lover.** *n.* II.2.180, 253; III.5.19; III.6.150; —s yet unborn, III.6.283; lives of —s, IV.2.61; IV.2.66; he shews a —, IV.2.136; V.1.34; — never yet made sigh, V.1.125; your —s (= *friends*). *See Friend*, V.4.123.

- Loving.** *n.* I love; and in — her maintain, II.2.179.
- Loving.** *adv.* we shall live long and — (= *lovingly*), II.2.86.
- Low.** *adj. Compar.* Arcite is the —er of the twain, II.1.49.
- Luce.** *n.* (name of country girl), III.5.26.
- Lust.** *n.* — and ignorance, II.2.106.
- Lusty.** *adj.* shall we be — (= *merry*), II.3.46; venison . . . 't is a — meat (= *strengthening*), III.3.27; I am well and —, III.6.45.
- Machine.** *n.* (See Note = *contrivance*), III.5.113.
- Maculate.** *adj.* never yet beheld thing — (= *unclean*), V.1.145.
- Mad.** *adj.* men are — things, II.2.126; II.2.202; is 't not — lodging, III.3.22; my — boys, III.5.24; a dainty — woman, III.5.72; as — as a March hare, III.5.73; a — woman, III.5.76, 77; you are not —? III.6.122; — malicious traitors, III.6.132; IV.1.46; she would run — for this man, IV.2.12; run — for Arcite, IV.2.48; if one be —, or hang, or drown themselves, IV.3.29.
- Madam.** *n.* II.2.119, 124, 125, 130, 136, 143, 153; IV.2.56.
- Madness.** *n.* I.4.42; II.2.204; an engrafted —, IV.3.43; IV.3.70.
- Maid.** *n.* more of the — to sight, *Prol.* 8; my precious —, I.3.8; I.3.81, 84; II.2.37, 121; emblem of a —, II.2.137; II.4.145; fair gentle —, II.4.24; II.6.20; III.5.28; a blushing —, III.6.205; the longing —s, III.6.246; black-eyed —s, IV.1.72; to call the —s, IV.1.111; IV.1.124; the coy denials of young —s, IV.2.11; IV.2.40; the livery of the warlike — (= *Diana*), IV.2.106; we —s, that have our livers perished, crackt to pieces with love, IV.3.19; —s with child, IV.3.35; IV.3.78; V.2.2, 70; is it a —, V.4.33.
- Maidenhead.** *n. Prol.* 1; vowed her — to a young handsome man, II.4.13; lose my — by cocklight, IV.1.112.
- Maiden-hearted.** *adj.* I am bride-habited, but —, V.1.151.
- Maiden-pink.** *n.* —s of odour faint, I.1.4.
- Maim.** *v. t.* think how you — your honour (= *tarnish*), III.6.237.
- Main.** *adj.* a — goodness, II.2.63; out with the — sail, IV.1.146.
- Mainly.** *adv.* there the cure lies —, V.2.8.
- Maintain.** *v. t.* in loving her — I am as worthy, II.2.179; III.1.53.
- Majesty.** *n.* a spacious — (*sc.* of brow), IV.2.19.
- Make.** *v. t.* — him cry from underground, *Prol.* 17; —s lighter, *Prol.* 20; near to — . . . captive, I.1.80; —s me a fool, I.1.119; — a counter-reflect 'gainst my brother's heart, I.1.127; *made* of stone, I.1.129; I.1.150; to — petition clear, I.1.157; I.1.182; — trial of, I.1.193; she —s it in, I.1.203; I.1.225; — good (= *justify*) the tongue of the world, I.1.226; I.1.229; — pursuit, I.2.52; I.2.64; — any timorous (= *express*), I.3.3; I.3.30, 52; I.4.19; II.1.22, 33, 51; II.2.69, 78, 95, 243, 253, 275; — the wild rocks wanton, II.3.17; another shape shall — me, or end my fortunes, II.3.21; all 's *made* up (= *reconciled*) again, II.3.33; II.3.72; II.4.29; II.5.25; II.6.12.25; III.1.9, 18, 34; ever blood *made* kin, III.1.38; *made* prey of him, III.2.13; III.3.12, 35, 47, III.4.13; we're *made* again . . . *made* boys, III.5.74, 76, 77; our country pastime *made* is, III.5.102 (= *prospered*); III.5.120, 133, 147; we're all *made*, III.5.158; III.6.11; to — me spare thee, III.6.47; III.6.57, 123; are — ing battle, III.6.134; — my faith reel, III.6.212; III.6.227,

- 232, 253; — death a devil, III. 6.270; — choice, III.6.285; IV. 1.37; *made* the sound, IV.1.61; see the house *made* handsome, IV.1.79; IV.1.88; I *made* in to her (*sc.* unto the lake), IV.1.94; she to the city *made* (= *ran*), IV. 1.97; *made* the altar, IV.2.61; *made* mothers joy, IV.2.63; IV. 2.98, 134; IV.3.22, 54, 73; to — the matter more, IV.3.85; V.1. 46; —'st and break'st, V.1.55; V.1.73, 81, 88, 125, 141; V.2.16; — courtesy, V.2.69; has *made* so fair a choice, V.2.92; — her right, V.2.105; nature now shall — and act the story, V.3.13; V.3.40, 52, 82, 130; V.4.36, 41; would — his length a mile, V.4.56; V.4. 60, 64, 132.
- Male.** *adj.* to make the — to thy sex captive, I.1.81.
- Malevolent.** *adj.* fire —, V.4.63.
- Malicious.** *adj.* mad — traitors, III.6.132.
- Man.** *n.* ProI. 17; I.1.231; I.2.69, 95; love any that's called —, I. 3.85; I.4.14, 28, 39; II.1.25; 54; a willing — dies sleeping, II.2.68; II.2.70, 72, 90, 109; *men* are mad things, II.2.126; what's the matter, —! II.2.133; II.2.156, 183, 201, 233, 249, 251; II.3.55, 77; II.4.8; a young handsome —, II.4.14; II.5.2, 18; II.6.21, 31, 37; III.1.12, 67; III. 2.16; III.3.17, 31, 40; III.5.10; III.6.4, 28, 44, 50, 142; what more than — is this, III.6.157; III.6.160, 207, 242, 265, 287; IV. 1.17, 24; fisher *men* (*separate words in Qo.*), IV.1.64; IV.1.82, 115, 119, 138, 139; IV.2.3, 12, 25, 77, 112, 114, 117, 143; IV.3. 10; V.1.47, 101, 107; the prim'st of *men*, V.3.70; V.3.86; V.4.1, 5, 97; no — smile, *Epil.* 4. See **Free man**, II.6.24; **Serving man**, III.5.126.
- Manage.** *n.* [*Qo.* mannadge], kind — (= *training in obedience*), V. 4.69.
- Manhood.** *n.* Oh I hope some god . . . has put his mercy in your —, I.1.72; take — to her (= *upon her: become like a man*), II.2.260; III.1.64; III.5.36.
- Mankind.** *n.* II.2.170.
- Manly.** *adj.* brown — face, IV.2. 42; IV.2.124; — courage, V.3. 43; thy worthy — heart, V.4.88.
- Manly.** *adv.* (= *like men, bravely*), III.1.79.
- Manner.** *n.* masters of our —s, I. 2.44; reason has no —s, I.3.48; in —s this was false position, III. 5.51.
- Mantle.** *n.* Juno's —, I.1.63; darkness . . . by casting her black — over both, V.3.25.
- Many.** *adj.* I.2.29; in — as dangerous as poor a corner, I.3.36; II.1.38; — more such, II.6.38; III.2.18; III.5.15; III.6.112; IV.3.85; — a one, IV.1.91; — children, V.2.94; V.3.24; — a murder, V.3.27; — a man, V.4.1, 3; crimes — and stale, V.4.11; V.4.52; *Epil.* 16.
- March.** *n.* mad as a — hare, III.5 73.
- March.** *v. i.* V.1.68.
- Mare.** *n.* chestnut —, V.2.61; able to entice a miller's —, V.2.67 (*Cf. Schiller, Wall. Lager*, p. 20: Wie des Färber's Gaul, nur im Ring herum).
- Marigold.** *n.* [*Qo.* Mary golds], —s on death-beds blowing, I.1. 11 (*See Preface, N. S. S. reprint of Spalding's Letter*, p. vi).
- Mark.** *n.* they were a — worth a god's view (= *object*), I.4.20; I.4.43.
- Mark.** *v. t.* whom Jove hath —t the honour of your bed, I.1.29; II.3.72; — how his virtue, II.5. 23; — there, III.5.17; — your cue, III.5.94; — me, IV.3.22 (= *observe*).
- Market.** *n.* kill our —, *Epil.* 9.
- Market-place.** *n.* Death's the — where each one meets, I.5.16.
- Marriage.** *n.* III.6.195; IV.1.23.



- Marriage-day.** *n.* blush on his —, *Prol.* 4.
- Marrow.** *n.* plumbroth and — of my understanding, III.5.6.
- Marry.** *v. t.* II.2.228; II.4.4; — a leprous witch, IV.3.40; venture to — us (= *perform the marriage-ceremony*), V.2.79; to be —ed shortly, V.4.28.
- Marry.** *interj.* (= *by Mary*), II.1.7; yes, —, are there, II.3.65; yes, —, will we, V.2.111.
- Mars.** *n.* I met your groom by —'s altar, I.1.62; — spurn his drum, I.1.182; equal with —, I.1.228; to —'s so-scorned altar, I.2.20; helm of —, I.4.17; V.1.35, 60; —'s drum, V.1.80; our master —, V.4.106.
- Marshal.** *n.* the —'s sister, III.3.35.
- Martialist.** *n.* scars and bare weeds the gain o' the —, who did propound to his bold ends honour and golden ingots, I.2.16.
- Martyr.** *n.* II.6.17.
- Martyr.** *v. t.* a divided sigh, —ed as 't were i' the deliverance, II.1.39.
- Marvel.** *n.* [*Qo.* mervaille], II.1.31.
- Mason.** *v. t.* the —ed turrets (= *built of stone*), V.1.55.
- Master.** *n.* —s of our manners, I.2.44; my —s (= *Sirs*), II.3.24; — (*as opposed to servant*), II.5.63; — Gerrold (= *Mr.*), III.5.22; III.5.27, 72; — of a ship, IV.1.140, 147, 149; V.2.63, 72; our — Mars, V.4.106. *See Schoolmaster*, III.5.141, 151.
- Mastery.** *n.* groan under such a —, I.1.231.
- Match.** *n.* (= *contest*), III.1.97.
- Matchless.** *adj.* II.2.155.
- Matter.** *n.* so sorrow, wanting form, is pressed with deeper — (= *business*), I.1.109; I.2.89; II.2.133; no —, III.2.3; III.3.4; broken piece of — (= *fitful, incoherent task*), IV.3.6; to make the — more (= *amount, number*), IV.3.85.
- Maturely.** *adv.* I.3.56.
- Maudlin.** (*country-girl's name*), III.5.25.
- May.** *n.* (= *name of month*), do observance to flowery —, II.5.51; bloom'd —, III.1.3; fresher than —, III.1.5; the lord of — and lady bright (*See Notes*), III.5.125.
- May.** *v. aux.*; *past t. might*, *Prol.* 28; I.1.22, 27, 36, 50, 92, 113, 157; I.2.75; I.3.43; II.1.50; II.2.75, *et passim*.
- Maying.** *n.* do we all hold against the — (= *mayday merrymaking*), II.3.35.
- Maypole.** *n.* III.5.145.
- Mead.** *n.* (= *meadow*), III.1.7.
- Meagre.** *adj.* he is swarth and —, IV.2.27.
- Meal.** *n.* the charity of one — lend me, III.1.74.
- Mean.** *n.* by any — (= *by all means*), II.3.51; by no —, IV.1.118. *Usually in plural*, by any —s, II.3.56; by any —s (= *by all means*), III.5.135; III.6.58; by whose — she escaped ... which was ('*which*' singular rel. pron.; its antecedent being '*means*', plural), IV.1.20; by any —s, IV.2.65; all foul —s, V.4.71.
- Mean.** *adj.* i' the — time, II.1.18; my father the — (= *lowly*) keeper of his prison, II.4.3.
- Mean.** *v. t.* the brake I —t, III.2.1; as if she ever —t [*Qo.* ment], IV.2.109; V.1.41; *Epil.* 14.
- Meat.** *n.* (= *food*), III.3.22; venison . . . 't is a lusty —, III.3.27; hard — and ill lodging, V.2.97.
- Medicine.** *n.* that craves a present —, I.1.191.
- Meditance.** *n.* your first thought is more than others' laboured —, I.1.136.
- Meditation.** *n.* give me some — (= *time for some* —), III.5.93.
- Medius.** *Lat.* Proh deum, —fidius! III.5.11.



- Meed.** *n.* the victor's —, the price and garland, V.3.16.
- Meet.** *v. t.* I *met* your groom, I.1.61; I.1.212; I.2.21, 27, 29; the market-place where each one —s, I.5.16; lest this match between 's be crost ere *met*, III.1.98; III.3.33; III.5.13, 61.
- Meeting.** *n.* fury, like — of two tides, III.6.30.
- Melancholy.** *n.* thick and profound —, IV.3.43; V.3.49.
- Melancholy.** *adj.* the — humour, V.2.38.
- Meleager.** *n.* — and the boar [*of Caledon*], III.5.18.
- Melodious.** *adj.* bird — or bird fair, I.1.17.
- Melt.** *v. i.* —s into drops, I.1.108.
- Memory.** *n.* tell to — my death was noble, II.6.16; Hercules . . . whosetwelve stronglabours crown his—, III.6.176; my — (= *mind*), V.1.27.
- Menacing.** *adj.* a most — aspect, V.3.45.
- Mention.** *n.* III.3.15.
- Mercy.** *n.* some God hath put his — in your manhood, I.1.72; II.3.2; thy breath of —, III.6.158, 182, 192, 211; — and manly courage, V.3.43, 139.
- Mere.** *adj.* — monsters, I.2.42; two — (= *absolute*) blessings, II.2.58; a — dull shadow, IV.2.26; a — gipsy, IV.2.43; a — child is fancy, IV.2.52.
- Merit.** *n.* (= *reward*) true love's —, V.1.128.
- Merrily.** *adv.* II.1.38.
- Merry.** *adj.* — springtime's har-binger, I.1.8; III.5.106, 138; V.3.53.
- Merry-hearted.** *adj.* I am won-drous —, II.2.151.
- Metamorphose.** *v. t.* were they —d both into one, V.3.84.
- Me thinks.** [*Qo. me thinkes*], II.2.99, 136; II.5.21; II.5.21; II.6.23; III.6.70; *methought*, III.6.83; IV.1.10; IV.2.22, 90, 121; V.2.27; — Alcides was to him a sow of lead, V.3.119. *See Think.*
- Mickle.** *adj.* of — weight (= *much*), III.5.118.
- Might.** *n.* V.1.79; we and all our —, *Epil.* 17 (= *strength*).
- Might.** *v. aux.* *See May.*
- Mighty.** *adj.* III.5.118; V.1.49; the gods are —, V.4.86.
- Mile.** *n.* a — hence, II.6.4; twenty — an hour, V.2.51; V.4.57.
- Military.** *n.* — skill, V.1.58.
- Milk.** *n.* our — will relish of the pasture, I.2.76.
- Milk.** *v. i.* —ed unto ye, III.5.4.
- Miller.** *n.* a —'s mare, V.2.67.
- Million.** *n.* —s of rates, I.4.29; a whole — of cutpurses, IV.3.31; many mortal —s, V.3.24.
- Mind.** *n.* with — assured, I.2.97; I.3.32; noble —s, II.2.52; II.3.70; II.5.22; the — and sword of a true gentleman, III.1.56; a perturbed —, which I cannot minister to, IV.3.51; IV.3.68, 69; I am of your —, V.2.39.
- Mind.** *v. t.* (= *remember*) now you make me — her, IV.1.37.
- Mine.** *n.* an endless — to one another (= *source of delight*), II.2.79.
- Mine.** *adj.* — own, I.2.47, 53, 72; I.3.74, 97; II.2.158, 169; V.1.21, 72, 134; V.3.9, etc.
- Mingle.** *v. t.* so —d, V.3.52.
- Minister.** *i. v. t.* — what man to man may do, I.4.39 (= *sup-ply*).
- ii. v. i.* a perturbed mind, which I cannot — to, IV.4.52; better never born than — to such harm, V.3.66 (= *assist*).
- Minnow.** *n.* he that will fish for my least —, I.1.116; a number of —s, II.1.4.
- Minstrel.** *n.* pay the —s (*at a wedding*), IV.1.111.
- Minute.** *n.* our last —, I.2.103.
- Mirth.** *n.* making misery their —,

- II.1.33; away with this strained —, III.3.43; V.3.50, 51, 52.
- Misadventure.** *n.* the — of their own eyes kill 'em, III.6.190.
- Misbecomingly.** *adv.* the darker humours, that stick — on others, V.3.54.
- Miscarry.** *v. i.* else both — (= *suffer misfortune*), III.6.302; V.3.101.
- Miscarrying.** *n.* fear of my — on his 'scape, IV.1.50 (= *getting into trouble*).
- Miserable.** *adj.* this unfriended, this — prince, V.3.142; — end, V.4.86.
- Misery.** *n.* making — their mirth, II.1.33; II.2.2, 56, 97; II.4.28; V.4.7.
- Misgive.** *v. t.* my mind —s me, II.3.70.
- Mislike.** *v. t.* thy banishment I not —, III.6.257.
- Mistake.** *v. i.* 'tis your passion that thus —s, III.1.49; he has *mis-took* the brake, III.2.1; — me not, *Epil.* 11.
- Mistress.** *n.* [*Qo. mistris*] a — task, I.4.41; II.5.52, 57; III.1.14, 28, 117; III.6.26; flowers as the season is — of, IV.3.73; sacred silver — (= *Diana*), V.1.146, 169.
- Modest.** *adj.* — scenes, *Prol.* 4; III.6.82; — suit, III.6.235; V.1.157.
- Modestly.** *adv.* II.2.139.
- Modesty.** *n.* yet still is — (= *bashfulness*), *Prol.* 7; II.2.144.
- Moiety.** *n.* the — of a number (= *portion*), I.2.214.
- Moist.** *adj.* the huntress all — and cold (= *Diana*), V.1.93.
- Momentary.** *adj.* Fortune, whose title is as — as to us death is certain, V.4.17.
- Money.** *n.* IV.1.23.
- Monster.** *n.* mere —s, I.2.42.
- Month.** *n.* III.3.35; III.6.291.
- Mood.** *n.* perceive her — inclining that way, V.2.34.
- Moon.** *n.* showing the sun his teeth, grinning at the —, I.1.100; took leave o' the —, I.3.52; III.2.35; some time of the —, IV.3.1.
- Moonlight.** *n.* warranting —, I.1.177.
- Mope.** *v. t.* I am —d [*Qo. mop't*], III.2.25.
- More.** *adj. Compar.* *Prol.* 8; I.1.64, 87, 101, 135, 137; the — proclaiming, I.1.175; I.3.66, 82; I.4.39; II.1.9, 11, 16, 36; II.2.25, 100, 111, 200, 233, 235, 247, 273; II.3.23; II.6.27, 28, 38; III.1.96, 116; III.3.10, 19, 20, 28, 53; III.6.26, 81, 83, 91, 94, 102, 106, 118, 149, 157, 160, 183, 231, 252; IV.1.1, 104, 106; IV.3.1, 85; V.1.14, 141; of — content, V.4.16.
- More.** *adv.* *Prol.* 12; I.1.132, 172, 185; — bigger, I.1.215; I.1.225; I.3.56, 57, 87, 95; I.4.33; I.5.3; II.2.8, 48; put but thy head out of this window — (= *again*), II.2.214; III.6.181, 182; IV.2.49; V.1.97; V.3.5, 89, 98, 142; V.4.13, 34.
- Morn.** *n.* this beauteous —, III.1.18.
- Morning.** *n.* II.3.9; II.4.22; III.2.2; III.4.18; III.6.13; IV.1.34, 77.
- Morning.** *adj.* their — state, I.4.34.
- Morr.** *first syllable of Morris.* See **Is**, III.5.118.
- Morris.** *n.* make ye a new — (*dance*), II.2.275; fore thy dignity we'll dance a —, III.5.108; III.5.120; he'll dance the — twenty mile an hour (*alluding to a dancing horse*), V.2.51.
- Morrow.** *n.* good —, II.4.24; III.6.16, 17. See **Tomorrow**, IV.1.69.
- Mortal.** *adj.* th' offence of — (= *decaying*) loathsomeness, I.1.45; thou being but —, I.1.229; their (*sc. the gods*) — herd, I.4.5; a — woman, IV.2.10; your ire is more than —, so your help be,

- V.1.14; the heavenly fires did scorch his — son, V.1.92; — bosoms, V.1.131; many — (= *human*) millions, V.3.24.
- Most.** *adv.* smell-less yet — quaint, I.1.5; — dreaded Amazonian, I.1.78; — horrid, I.1.144; I.2.33, 63; I.3.74; II.1.30; II.2.64; II.3.53; II.5.34, 40; — guiltless on 't, III.1.15; III.1.35, 101; III.5.8; III.6.150, 163, 167, 195, 203, 208; IV.3.43, 63; V.1.126, 157; V.3.45; V.4.29, 47, 115.
- Mother.** *n.* I.1.26; II.5.20; III.6.245; IV.2.4, 28, 63; V.1.106.
- Motion.** *n.* a dove's — when the head's plucked off, I.1.98; this war is in —, I.2.105; in that — (*sc.* of glancing the eyes), V.3.62.
- Mount.** *v. i.* gods who from the —ed heavens (= *exalted*), I.4.4; —ed upon a steed, V.4.49.
- Mouth.** *n.* III.6.282; with 'Palamon' in their —s, IV.3.80. *See* Foul-mouthed, V.1.98.
- Move.** *v. t.* I.1.138; why are you —d thus, II.2.184; III.1.63; no more —d, III.6.160.
- Much.** *adj.* *Prol.* 2; I.3.34; II.1.2; II.4.9, 31; II.6.22; III.1.59; III.2.19; III.3.25; III.6.18, 66, 161; IV.1.66.
- Much.** *adv.* *Prol.* 2; I.1.87, 186, 187; I.4.33; II.2.70; II.4.27, 28; II.5.30; V.2.2, 44; V.3.64; V.4.84.
- Muddy.** *adj.* rude and raw and —, III.5.122.
- Mulberry.** *n.* —ies, IV.1.68.
- Multis.** *Lat.* Cum — aliis, III.5.133.
- Murder.** *n.* [*Qo.* murder], many a —, V.3.27.
- Murther.** *See* Murder, V.3.27.
- Muse.** *See* Musit, III.1.97.
- Music.** *n.* still — (= *low music*), *stage dir.* p.88; where's the rest of the — (= *musicians*), III.5.31; the — his own hoofs made, V.4.59; from iron came —'s origin, V.4.61; *see* Musit, III.1.97.
- Musical.** *adj.* — coinage, I.3.76.
- Musician.** *n.* they must be all gelt for —s, IV.1.131.
- Musit.** *n.* [*Qo.* musicke, *Dyce Conj.* musit], enter your —, III.1.97. *See* Notes.
- Must.** *v. aux.* we — needs leave, *Prol.* 32; I.115, 150, 153; I.2.77, 101, 103; I.3.8; I — no more believe thee, I.3.87; never more — we behold (= *shall we be permitted to*), II.2.9; II.2.22, 27; — inhabit here, II.2.45; — we halloa, II.2.48; II.2.47, 177; I —, I ought to do so, and I dare, II.2.207; you — presently (*sc.* go) to the duke, II.2.223; II.2.270, 271, 275; IV.2.112; V.3.11, 140, *etc.*
- Mute.** *adj.* —, contemplative, V.1.138.
- Mutual.** *adj.* that blood we desire to shed is —, in me thine, and in thee mine, III.6.95.
- My.** *adj.* I.1.116, 189; I.3.1, 7, 8, 71, 90; II.1.7, 8, 26; II.2.6, *et passim*.
- Myself.** *pr.* [*Qo. gen.* my selfe], I.1.206; II.1.42; V.1.24, *et passim*.
- Mystery.** *n.* unclasp thy —, V.1.172.
- Nail.** *v. t.* I'll — thy life to 't, II.2.215 (= *crucify thee?*).
- Name.** *n.* enquired their —s, I.4.22, 28; II.2.176; to purchase — (= *gain renown*), II.5.26; III.1.42; the ruin of my — (*my 'good name'*), opinion, III.6.240; IV.1.16; IV.3.6, 66; V.1.26, 67; some part of a —, V.3.27.
- Name.** *v. t.* to — you (= *mention*), II.1.15; —s concealments, V.1.123.
- Narcissus.** *n.* (*name of flower*), II.2.119; — was a sad boy, but a heavenly, IV.2.32.
- Natural.** *adj.* a — sister of our sex, I.1.125.
- Nature.** *n.* all dear —'s children sweet (= *flowers*), I.1.13; born



- to uphold Creation in that honour first — styled it in, I.1.83; that celerity and —, I.1.202; the crimes of — (= *natural vices of humanity*), I.2.3; I.4.43; II.3.12; youth and —, II.2.40; near the gods in —, II.2.244; state of — fail together in me, since thy best props are warped, III.2.31; wise —, IV.2.7; great and fine art in —, IV.2.123; — now shall make and act the story, V.3.13.
- Navel.** *n.* stand in fire up to the —, IV.3.37.
- Nay.** *adv.* II.1.30; III.1.118; III.5.46, 69; — then, I'll in too, III.6.201; V.2.102; V.3.90; —, let's be off'ers all, V.4.32.
- Near.** *adj.* II.2.140, 244; II.3.23; III.1.18, 26; III.3.1; III.6.103; IV.2.25, —er, IV.2.79.
- Near.** *adv. Prol.* 1; wast — to make the male to thy sex captive, I.1.80; see how — art can come — their colours, II.2.150; IV.1.60.
- Nearness.** *n.* to blow that — out that flames between ye, V.1.10 (*see Notes*).
- Nec.** *Lat. see Et*, III. 5. 88.
- Necessary.** *n.* I'll presently provide him —ies (? *pronounced necessities*), II.6.32.
- Neck.** *n.* hang your shield . . . about that —, I.1.97; II.2.32.
- Nectar.** *n.* please the gods . . . to give us — with 'em, V.4.12.
- Need.** *n.* their —s (= *necessities*), I.3.57.
- Need.** *v. t.* I.2.44, 61; his ocean —s not my poor drops, I.3.7; hunger —s no sauce, III.3.25.
- Needful.** *adj.* III.1.99; III.3.48.
- Needs.** *adv.* we must — leave, *Prol.* 32; must — entreat you, II.5.45; V.3.31, 146.
- Neglect.** *v. t.* our suit shall be —ed, I.1.175.
- Neighing.** *n.* he lisps in —s, V.2.66.
- Neither.** *pron.* III.6.173; IV.2.69; I could doom —, V.1.156; that — could find other, V.3.26.
- Neither.** *conj.* — wet nor dry, I.1.121; III.6.4; not . . ., III.6.232; IV.1.15; V.4.74.
- Nell.** *name of girl*, III.5.27.
- Nemean.** *adj.* [*O. Edd. nenuan corr. Seward*], Hercules our kinsman, then weaker than your eyes, laid by his club; he tumbled down upon his — hide, and swore his sinews thawed, I.1.68.
- Nenuan.** *See Nemean*, I.1.68.
- Nephew.** *n.* sisters' children, —s to the king, I.4.16.
- Neptune.** *n.* turned green — into purple, V.1.50.
- Nerve.** *n.* his own —s and act, I.2.50.
- Nettle.** now to be frampall, now to piss o' (= *on*) the —, III.5.57 (*the note "nettle" is wrong: Halliwell, Arch. Dict., s.v. Nettle, p. 575: "An ill-tempered person was said to have [watered] on a nettle"*); stings more than —s, V.1.97.
- Neutral.** *adj.* to be — were dishonour, I.2.100.
- Never.** *adv. Prol.* 11; I.1.103; I.3.6, 84; II.1.44; II.2.8, 17, 21, 24, 32, 43, 67, 92, 132, 197, *ne'er*, II.2.233; II.2.247, 277; II.3.7, 8; *ne'er* exceeded, nor *ne'er* shall, II.3.12; II.3.66, 79; II.4.2, 21; — a word, III.4.18; III.5.27, 149, 151; III.6.74, 102, 141, 142; now or —, III.6.185; III.6.234, 252; — trifle (= *do not trifle*), III.6.260; III.6.266, 268; IV.1.26, 104, 113, 121; IV.2.4, 6, 62, 75, 88, 119, 129; IV.3.32; V.1.32, 99, 100, 102, 125, 144, 147, 148; V.2.21, 45, 47, 65; V.4.93, 112.
- Never-erring.** *adj.* I.2.114.
- New.** *adj.* — plays, *Prol.* 1; I.3.75; II.2.81, 275; II.3.35; IV.1.29; V.1.69.
- New.** *adv.* like women — (= *newly*) conceived, IV.2.128.



- Newly.** *adv.* IV.1.88.
- News.** *n.* pelting scurvy —, II.2.268; some — from earth, III.1.80; — from all parts, III.4.13; IV.1.17, 18; y'are a good man, and ever bring good —, IV.1.25; I bring you —, IV.2.56.
- Next.** *adj.* II.4.11; III.1.16; the — way to a grave, III.2.33; III.5.45, 125, 131; the — world, IV.3.12; — to an auburn, IV.2.125.
- Next.** *adv.* II.2.218; III.6.210; V.4.84.
- Nibble.** *v. i.* you would fain be — ing, V.2.87 (*see* Notes).
- Nice.** *adj.* here they're — and foolish (= *particular, exacting, fastidious*), V.2.79.
- Niceness.** *n.* that's but a — (= *fastidious scruple*), V.2.20.
- Nick.** *n.* comes i' the —, III.5.73.
- Niggard.** *v. t.* our richest balms, rather than —, waste (= *economise, spare*), I.4.32.
- Nigh.** *See* Well-nigh, III.2.2.
- Night.** *n.* first —'s stir, *Prolog.* 6; I.1.183; II.1.45; II.3.32; II.4.33; with counsel of the —, III.1.83; III.2.3; this livelong —, III.2.12; III.4.11; III.5.126; all the chaste —s, III.6.200; IV.1.135; V.3.19; the ear of the —, V.3.124; *Epil.* 18.
- Nightingale.** *n.* Oh for a prick now, like a —, to put my breast against, III.4.25.
- Nimble.** *adj. compar.* we shall be the —, III.6.63.
- Nimble-set.** *adj.* tough and — (= *agile*), IV.2.125.
- Ninety.** *adj.* from eleven to —, V.1.130.
- No.** *adj.* — knees to me, I.1.35; I.1.52, 74, 97, 101, 225; I.2.27, 36; I.3.1, 48, 66, 71; II.1.9, 16, 49; II.2.25, 32, 33, 84, 86, 194, 220, 263, 271, 276; II.3.20, 23, 54; II.6.22, 31; III.1.116; III.2.3, 13, 21; III.3.3, 4, 10, 15, 25, 53; III.4.4; III.5.10, 80, 83, 121, 141; III.6.26, 44, 59, 90, 91, 94, 118, 160, 183; anger to 'em nor — ruin, III.6.189; III.6.266; IV.1.1, 66; by — mean, IV.1.117; IV.1.133, 140; IV.2.29, 35, 103, 107; he does — wrong, nor takes none, IV.2.134; IV.3.10, 17; V.1.119, 141; V.2.13; V.3.9, 11, 75, 85, 96, 98; *Epil.* 4, 12, 13.
- No.** *adv.* I.3.87; II.1.36; II.2.48; III.6.55, 59, 86, 117; IV.1.45; V.2.47.
- Nobility.** *n.* II.1.32.
- Noble.** *adj.* a — breeder, *Prolog.* 10; the all — Theseus, I.3.93; II.1.30; II.2.1, 7, 52, 65; noble hand, II.2.93; a — kinsman, II.2.192; II.2.232; — Arcite, II.2.257; a — beauty, II.3.11; his — body, II.4.23; II.5.10, 18, 25, 34, 38; II.6.16; III.1.81; dares any so — bear a guilty business (*Skeat's conj. nobly probably is right*), III.1.90; III.5.123; III.6.17, 24, 101, 116, 174, 208, 226, 276; IV.1.13; — bodies, IV.2.9, 45; IV.2.55, 79, 154; V.1.6; V.3.116; V.4.42. *Superl.* the — st sight, V.2.99.
- Nobleness.** *n.* let fall the — of this, *Prolog.* 115; whose free — do make my cause, V.1.73; their — peculiar to them, V.3.87.
- Nobly.** *adv.* V.3.50.
- Nod.** *v. i.* III.5.15.
- Noise.** *n.* make a —, V.2.16.
- None.** *pron.* oh, no knees, —, widow, I.1.74; — fit for the dead, I.1.141; I.2.30, 59; II.2.87; III.1.80, 90, 91; III.2.26; III.3.4; III.6.105, 183; he does no wrong, nor takes —, IV.2.135; V.1.99; *Epil.* 7.
- Nonny.** *interj.* Hey, —, —, —, III.4.21, 24.
- Nor.** *conj.* I.1.19, 20, 21, 44, 64, 65; who cannot feel — see the rain, I.1.120; I.1.121, 155, 204; — ... or, I.3.29; know not what — why, I.3.62; I.4.25; II.2.87; — ne'er shall, II.3.12; II.5.31; III.1.42; III.2.10; — none so honest, III.3.4; III.6.4, 80, 118, 189, 297,

- 298; never saw — read of, IV.2.75; does no wrongs — takes none, IV.2.135; never . . . —, V.1.101; not . . . —, V.1.123. *See* Neither, V.4.74.
- North.** *adj.* the — wind, II.2.140; set it to the — (*of a compass*), IV.1.141.
- North-east,** *adj.* III.4.15.
- Nose.** *n.* his — stands high, a character of honour, IV.2.110.
- Nosegay.** *n.* IV.3.22.
- Not.** *adv. Prol.* 30; I.1.2, 16, 43, 54, 63, 111, 120, 130, 155, 181, 189, 200, 203, 209, 220, 223, 228; I.2.7, 18, 26, 34, 40, 45, 54, 61, 71, 76, 82, 94, 99, 110; I.3.2, 7, 14, 18, 45, 49, 62, 65, 85, 96; I.4.24, 43; II.1.2, 46, 51, 67, 113, 115, 121, 123, 124, 127, 129, 156, 157, 159, 162, 163, 166, 167, 185, 188, 216, 224, 243, 269, 271, 274; *and in one hundred and eighteen subsequent passages.*
- Note.** *n. i.* (*of music*), I.3.76.
- ii. (= *peculiarity, defect*) many will not buy his goodness with this —, V.4.53.
- iii. (= *notice*) take some — that, I.1.52; I fixed my — (= *attention*) constantly on them, I.4.19; takes strong — of me, III.1.17.
- Note.** *v. t.* for — you, III.1.118; — her a little further (= *observe*), IV.3.24.
- Nothing.** *n.* I.1.19, 185; I.2.65; that we may — share, I.2.75; I.2.79; II.1.38, 41, 42, 161, 162; III.2.6; III.3.46; III.5.53; III.6.87, 250; IV.1.1, 2; — but my pity, IV.1.42; IV.1.80, 133; IV.3.21; — to our purpose, V.2.32; that's —, V.2.57; V.2.83.
- Notice.** *n.* duke hath taken — both of his blood and body, II.2.229.
- Nought.** *n.* III.3.52; when — served . . . but, V.4.73; — could buy, V.4.111.
- Nourishment.** *n.* food and —, II.2.52.
- Now.** *adv.* — for the love of him, I.1.29; I.1.61, 87, 152, 154, 157, 199, 234; I.2.18, 25, 99; I.3.86; II.1.16; II.2.7, 20, 48, 102, 132, 151, 158, 208, 222; how —, keeper, II.2.245; II.2.279; II.3.8, 44; II.6.390; III.1.117, 120; III.2.2, 32; III.3.8, 9, 20, 47, 51; III.4.4, 7, 16, 25; III.5.30, 52, 56, 57, 64, 85, 119, 153; III.6.62, 69, 88, 121, 151; — or never, III.6.185; III.6.236, 238, 271, 306; IV.1.36, 119, 127, 142; IV.2.47, 49, 50, 51, 55, 59, 67, 142, 143; IV.3.16, 19, 63, 83; V.1.1; V.2.72, — (*sc.* that) he's at liberty, V.2.96; V.3.13, 24, 90, 115; — . . . anon . . . then, V.3.125; V.4.25, 37, 130; *Epil.* 1, 10.
- Nullity.** *n.* our business is become a —, yea, and a woful and a piteous —, III.5.54, 55.
- Number.** *n.* I.1.61, 214; a — of minnows, II.1.4.
- Nurse.** *n.* his mind, — equal to these so-differing twins, I.3.32.
- Nymph.** *n.* III.1.8; the fair — that feeds the lake with waters, IV.1.86.
- O.** *interj. Prol.* 18; I.1.47, 69, 71, 74, 106, 109, 117, 131, 137, 177; I.3.67; III.6.156, 172, 226, 244, 257; IV.1.33, 113; V.4.86, 109, 131. *See* Oh.
- O'** *contraction for of, before* the, I.1.33; etc. *See* Of.
- O'** *contraction for on*, — my conscience, IV.2.87; etc. *See* Of.
- Oak.** *n.* about his head he wears the winner's —, IV.2.137.
- Oat.** *n.* twenty strike of —s, V.2.65.
- Oath.** *n.* upon his — and life, II.2.248; all —s in one, III.1.33; III.6.224, 227, 230, 257; IV.1.11.
- Obey.** *v. t.* any jot —s, V.4.71.
- Object.** *n.* they would not make us their — (*sc.* of observance), II.1.52; other —s, IV.3.69; his eye will dwell upon his —, V.3.49.
- Observance.** *n.* to do — to flowery May, II.5.50.

- Observe.** *v. t.* have you —d him, I.3.33; — (*perhaps should be deserve*) her goodness, II.5.35 (= *payobservance to*); you should — (= *humour*) her every way, V.2.14.
- Obtain.** *v. t.* —ed his liberty, II.2.247.
- Ocean.** *n.* I.3.7.
- Odds.** *n.* 'tis — he never will affect me, II.4.1.
- Odour.** *n.* maiden pinks of — faint, I.1.4; urns and —s, I.5.1; compounded —s which are grateful to the sense, IV.3.74; *stage dir.*, p. 88.
- O'er.** *prep.* for **Over.** advance it — our heads, I.1.93.
- O'erflow.** for **Overflow.** the bound thou wast —ing, I.1.84.
- O'er-rank.** for **Over-rank.** shaker of — states (= *too luxurious kingdoms*), V.1.63.
- O'er-weigh.** for **Over-weigh.** a grain of honour they not — us, V.4.19.
- Of.** *prep.* *Prolog.* 8, 15, 17, 19; I.1.7, 16, 29, 30, 31, 40, 41, 42, 45, 46, 47, 48, 50, 57, 90, 92, 95, 122, 125, 129, 134, 143, 159, 164, 165, 180, 214, 224; I.2.3, 5, 8, 16, 22, 28, 29, 35, 36, 44, 47, 72, 83, 87, 116; I.3.2, 20, 43, 55, 60, 82, 93; I.4.7, 14, 15, 17, 18, 25, 26, 29, 30, 34, 42; I.5.15, etc. etc. *Peculiar uses.* i. *contracted o' before the:* I.1.33, 114, 131, 227; I.2.113; III.1.10, 86; III.2.4; III.5.31; III.6.64.
- ii. (= *by*) — all admired, *Prolog.* 13; — me approved I.3.65; — another you would not have me doubted, III.1.60.
- iii. (= *possessing*) — odour faint, I.1.4; — an eye as heavy, IV.2.27; — a face far sweeter, IV.2.95.
- iv. (= *belonging to*) we — the blessed, IV.3.26.
- v. (= *out of*) — thy boundless goodness take some note, I.1.51; — all this sprightly sharpness not a smile, IV.2.30.
- vi. to see — us such spinsters, I.3.23.
- vii. (= *concerning*) talk more — this, II.1.11; IV.3.67.
- viii. (= *from*) have you a full promise — her, II.1.12; I am entreating — myself, I.1.206.
- ix. (= *on*) have pity — us both, III.6.172.
- x. (= *for*) petition — grace, IV.3.78; glad — Arcite, V.4.130.
- Off.** *adv.* I.1.98; I.3.41; II.5.5; II.6.8; III.1.32; III.2.28; III.3.52, 85; III.6.89, 118; IV.1.100; V.1.159; V.2.88; V.3.28, 103; V.4.122, 136.
- Off.** *prep.* I.2.74; till his great rage be — him, I.2.85; V.1.37; V.4.80.
- Offence.** *n.* to take th' — of mortal loathsomeness from the dread eye of holy Phœbus (= *offensiveness*), I.1.44; III.5.34; III.6.182; omit a ward or forfeit an — (= *movement of attack*), V.3.63.
- Offend.** *v. t.* II.5.40; had ten times more —ed, III.6.181; the —ing part burns, IV.3.37.
- Offender.** *n.* I would destroy the —, V.1.23.
- Offer.** *n.* I do embrace your —, III.1.93, 94; take her —, V.2.110.
- Offer.** *v. t.* — to Mars's so-scorned altar, I.2.19; I.3.15; II.1.9; an —ed opportunity, II.3.75; — up my penner, III.5.124.
- Offerer.** *n.* let's be —s all, V.4.32.
- Office.** *n.* i. (= *service, duty*) I have an — there, III.1.110, 111; vestal —, V.1.150; could wish their — to, V.3.35.
- ii. (= *natural works*) all —s are done, III.2.36.
- iii. tells close —s the foulest way (= *speaks indecently*), V.1.122.
- Officer.** *n.* —s of arms (= *heralds*), III.6.135.
- Oft.** *adv.* V.3.103.
- Often.** *adv.* IV.1.67; IV.3.4; V.2.47.



- Oh.** *interj.* I.1.182, 199; II.2.6, 17, 208, 277; II.3.4, 50; II.6.8; III.1.4, 9, 15, 29, 35, 89; III.2.31; III.4.25; III.6.16, 109; IV.1.120; IV.2.33, 42, 120, 147; IV.3.28, 46, 47; V.1.62, 126, 130, 137, 143, 169; V.2.2, 87; V.3.11, 59, 65, 85, 114, 139. *See* O.
- Oil** *n.* pour this — out of your language (= *gentleness*), III.1.103.
- Old.** *adj.* II.1.16; II.2.104, 105, 109; II.3.6; III.6.37; at ten years —, IV.1.130; V.1.64; V.2.31; — Saturn, V.4.62; your — loves to us, *Epil.* 17. *Peculiar use* (= *great*) like — Importment's bastard, I.3.80. (*See* Notes.)
- Omit.** *v. t.* — not anything, I.1.209; — a ward or forfeit an offence, V.3.63.
- Omnes.** *Lat.* III.5.158.
- On.** *pron.* *See* One, I.3.75.
- On.** *adv.* lead — the bride, I.1.208; II.1.117, 241, 252; IV.1.65; V.1.41, 43, 135; V.4.127.
- On.** *prep.* *Prol.* 4; I.1.11, 22; power — him (= *over*), I.1.87, 88; I.1.192; — fail of some condition, I.2.105; I.3.20, 71; whereon her spirits would sojourn (rather dwell —) (*redundant after 'whereon'*), I.3.77; I.4.13, 20; I.5.12; to look — them (= *at*), II.1.53; II.2.176, 242, 273; II.4.11, *o'* my conscience, II.4.12; III.1.6, 13, 14, 28, 96; III.2.19; play *o'* the virginals, III.3.34; III.5.56, *o'* the, 57; III.5.86; III.6.90, 211, 252, 263; IV.1.50, 73; IV.2.36; V.3.46, 54.
- On** = *of*. bate not an hour — 't, I.1.220; II.3.47, 58; most guiltless —'t, III.1.15; he has the trick —'t, IV.1.130; the burthen —'t was, IV.3.9; rid —'t, IV.3.40; IV.3.59; most glad —'t, 'tis the latest thing I shall be glad of, V.4.29.
- Once.** *adv.* at —, I.1.84; — more, I.1.225; — with a time, I.3.50; II.2.175, 233; II.3.59; II.4.7, 25; III.5.18, 46; III.6.9, 106, 289; IV.1.123; IV.3.56; V.4.24.
- One.** *pron.* fair —s, I.1.27, 183; — [*Qo. on.* *See* Notes] that fears not to do harm, I.2.70; playing — [*Qo. ore*] business, I.3.31; the — of the other, I.3.58; — another, I.3.64; hummed — [*Qo. on.* *See* Notes], I.3.75; great —, II.1.3; — one of them, II.1.40; II.2.41, 79, 80, 82; great —s, II.2.107; II.2.123; take — with you, II.2.152, 154, 155, 198, 199, 234; II.3.14; that's all — (= *all alike*), II.3.31; sad —s, II.4.20; all oaths in —, III.1.33; III.1.116; III.2.5; III.4.8, 17; III.5.62, 68, 111, 112; — see 'em all rewarded (= *let some one*), III.5.152; a very good —, III.6.72; III.6.91, 220, 225, 256, 273; IV.1.15, 56; 'twas — (= *a person*) that sung, IV.1.58; IV.1.100, 105; IV.2.68, 121; if — be mad, or hang, or drown *themselves*, IV.3.28; IV.3.39, 40, 46, 47; V.1.19, 49, 106; such a — I am, V.1.124; V.1.153, 155; that's all —, V.2.16; that's all —, 'tis nothing to our purpose, V.2.32; a very fair —, V.2.46; V.2.85, 88; V.3.22, 85, 108, 125, 145; a black —, V.4.50; V.4.89.
- One.** *adj.* — sure end, I.5.14; — person, I.5.16; — hour, II.2.210; III.1.74, 108; III.6.177; of — young Palamon (= *a certain*), IV.1.116; V.1.21, 32, 165; — eye of yours, V.3.137; V.4.94, 129.
- Only.** *adj.* [*Qo. onely*] the — doers, II.1.28; IV.2.42; the — star to shine, V.3.20.
- Only.** *adv.* [*Qo. onely*] I.2.67; II.5.28; — Arcite, III.1.91; III.1.94; III.6.94, 129, 178; IV.1.66; IV.2.38.
- Open.** *adj.* the windows are too — (= *easy to get out of*), II.2.264.
- Open.** *v. t.* bind those wounds up that must — and bleed to death, IV.2.1.
- Operance.** *n.* effect rare issues by their — (= *operation*), I.3.63.



- Opinion.** *n.* (= *disrepute*) their lives might breed the ruin of my name, —, III.6.240.
- Opportunity.** *n.* an offered —, II. 3.75.
- Oppose.** *v. t.* I.2.101.
- Oppress.** *v. t.* arm —ed by arm, V.1.22.
- Oppressor.** *n.* II.2.84.
- Opus.** *Lat.* See **Et**, III.5.88.
- Or.** *conj.* I.1.17, 22, 23, 174, 180, 195; I.2.11, 26, 46, 52, 57, 59, 78, 104; I.3.19, 20; nor . . . —, I.3.30; I.3.75; I.4.45; II.1.42; II. 2.89, 94, 122, 171, 182; II.3.22, 23; II.4.13, 33; II.6.12, 30; III. 1.6; III.3.19, 36; III.4.10; III. 5.35, 84, 106, 107, 113, 144; III. 6.35, 36, 46, 123, 129, 185, 290; whether . . . —, IV.1.11; IV.1. 16, 50, 51, etc. etc.
- Oracle.** *n.* vouched his —, V.4.107.
- Ordain.** *v. t.* III.6.288.
- Order.** *n.* their —'s robe (*of female knighthood*), V.1.142.
- Order.** *v. t.* pray — it (*arrange, regulate, the field of fight*), IV.2. 150.
- Origin.** *n.* came music's —, V.4.61.
- Ornament.** *n.* — of honour, IV.2. 93.
- Ostler.** *n.* See **Hostler**, V.2.59.
- Other.** *pron.* —'s laboured meditation, I.1.136; I.3.58; I.4.30; one . . . —, II.1.41 [*Qo.* another]; II.2.195; II.3.21; III.5.69; III. 6.274, 296; that neither could find —, V.3.26; V.3.54, 126; no — (= *nothing else*), *Epil.* 14; th' — [*O. Edd.* another], IV.3. 46, 48.
- Other.** *adj.* I.2.68; — some, IV.3. 2; the — place (= *Hell*), IV.3. 26; IV.3.26; IV.3.62, 69, 73.
- Ought.** *v. aux.* I must, I — to do so, and I dare, II.2.207; women — to beat me, IV.2.36.
- Our.** *adj.* I.2.42, 76, 99, 102, 103, 110, 116; I.3.2, 12, 14, 16, 19; — great lord (= *my*), I.3.34; I. 3.53, 63; I.4.12, 30, 31, 38, 45, 46, 49; I.5.3; II.2.8; 19, 37, 40, 42, 46, 49, 50, 51, 53, 60, 62, 63, 77; III.6.195, 202; IV.1.125; V. 1.38, 45, 69; — sister (*regal use of 'we' = 'I', 'our' = 'my'*), V.3.105. See **We**.
- Ours.** *pron.* to wish 'em —, II.2.17; II.2.78. See **We**.
- Ourselves.** *pron.* I.2.115; II.2.33.
- Out.** *adv.* hold — your helping hands, *Prol.* 25; raise you — of the book of trespasses, I.1.33; I.1.130; to draw —, I.1.160; are you not — (= *mistaken*), I.2.26; fought — together, I.3.40; — of breath, I.3.82; find —, I.4.6; given — (= *reported*), II.1.5; II.1.21, 32, 48, 52; II.2.24, 214, 217, 221; II.3.28, 35; — upon it, II.4.5; II.6.3; III.1.62, 103; — with it, III.3.33; the stars are — too (= *hidden, extinguished*), III.4.1; III.5.19; fall —, III.5. 67; III.5.127, 146; IV.1.69, 146; — of love with Aeneas (*opposite of 'in love'*), IV.3.13; — of square, IV.3.83; V.1.10, 27, 43, 152, 164; — of (= *outside*) itself, V.3.34.
- Outbreasted.** *adj.* (= *outsung, surpassed in singing: said of a nightingale*), V.3.127.
- Out-do.** *v. t.* you outdid me, III.6. 73.
- Outdure.** *v. t.* to — danger (= *overcome, face resolutely*), III.6.10.
- Outgo.** *v. t.* you outwent me (= *surpassed*), III.6.79.
- Outlive.** *v. t.* hath —d the love of the people, V.4.1.
- Outside.** *n.* judge by the —, IV.2. 74.
- Outstrip.** *v. t.* —t the people's praises, II.2.16.
- Outwear.** *v. t.* may be outworn, never undone (= *worn out*), I.3. 44.
- Over.** *prep.* II.6.36; III.1.122; V. 3.25; V.4.16. See **O'er**.
- Over.** *adv.* is — (= *ended*), II.1.17; V.4.81. See **O'er**.

- Overflow.** *n.* excess and — of power, I.3.4.
- Owe.** *v. t. i.* (= *possess*) who —st his strength and his love too, I.1.88; a black one, —ing not a hair-worth of white, V.4.50.
- ii. (*be under obligation to*), this is a solemn rite they — bloom'd May, III.1.3.
- Owgh.** *interj.* thrice repeated (= 'Yo heave ho!') in weighing anchor), IV.1.145.
- Owl.** *n.* III.5.68. See **Screech-Owl**, III.2.35.
- Owlet.** *n.* See **Howlet**, III.5.67.
- Own.** *adj.* its —, I.1.154; I.2.47, 53, 69, 96; II.1.9, 38; II.3.19, 70; III.1.56; mine —, III.6.124; III.6.131, 145, 190, 196, 199, 205, 276; IV.1.14, 60; IV.2.98; V.1.171; V.4.60.
- Owner.** *n.* this hand but — of a sword, III.1.33.
- Oxlip.** *n.* —s in their cradles growing, I.1.10.
- Pace.** *n.* I.3.83. See **Place**, III.1.10.
- Pack.** *v. t.* — my clothes up, II.6.32.
- Paedagogus.** *Lat.* III.5.110.
- Pain.** *n.* husband's —s, *Prol.* 8; I've put you to too much — (= *trouble*), III.6.18.
- Paint.** *v. t.* —s the sun, II.2.139; to — your pole withal, III.5.152; hung with the —ed favours of their ladies (= *bright-coloured*), II.2.11.
- Painter.** *n.* I.1.122.
- Pair.** *n.* a — of lions, I.4.18; a — of absolute men, II.1.25; a — of kings, III.1.21.
- Palace.** *n.* IV.1.53.
- Palamon.** *n.* I.2.1; I.4.23; II.1.49; II.2.14, 25, 29, 61, 131, 178, 182, 187, 225; II.3.7, 13; II.4.17; III.1.23, 43, 92; III.2.6; III.3.1; III.4.3; III.6.102, 128, 138; IV.1.2, 18, 49, 67, 81, 82, 116, 142; IV.2.25, 37, 49, 90; IV.3.6, 12, 22, 54, 67, 71, 75, 80; V.2.3, 26, 41, 82, 91, 95; V.3.44, 51, 58; the cry's 'a Palamon,' V.3.67, 80; V.3.74, 76, 79, 89, 101, 104; V.4.42, 88, 115, 128.
- Pale.** *adj.* lookt — at parting, I.3.53.
- Pallas.** *n.* — inspire me (= *Minerva*), III.5.94.
- Parcel.** *n.* though — of myself, V.1.24 (= *part*).
- Pardon.** *n.* both their —s (= *being pardoned*), IV.1.7; got your —, IV.1.19, 21, 76; IV.2.37.
- Pardon.** *v. t.* Oh, — me, I.1.117; II.3.50; III.1.106; V.3.17, 32.
- Parish.** *n.* all the —, V.2.53.
- Parley.** *n.* these vain —s, III.3.10.
- Parlously.** *adv.* edified the duke most — in our behalfs, II.2.53.
- Part.** *n.* a — of him, II.1.50; — of your blood, — of your soul, II.2.186; —s of the world, III.4.13; all —s of the dukedom, IV.1.134; th' offending — burns, and the deceiving — freezes, IV.3.37, 38; some — of a good name, V.3.27; each — of him, V.3.121; his — is played, V.4.102.
- Part.** *v. t.* — us lawfully (= *separate*), II.2.89; betwixt ye I — my wishes (= *divide*), V.1.17.
- Parthian.** *adj.* flies like a — quiver, II.2.50.
- Parting.** *n.* lookt pale at — (= *waning*), I.3.53.
- Party.** *n.* (= *side*), V.1.76.
- Pass.** *v. t.* —t slightly, I.3.28; II.1.12; II.2.104.
- Passa.** let him play *Qui* — on, III.5.86. (*See Notes.*)
- Passage.** *n.* the —s of this project, IV.3.86; in the — (= *contest*) the gods have been most equal, V.4.114.
- Passion.** *n.* (= *rage*), III.1.30, 48; III.6.232.
- Past.** *prep.* lost — all cure (= *beyond*), IV.1.138.
- Pastime.** *n.* —s, II.3.67; country —, III.5.102.

- Pasture.** *n.* I.2.77.
- Patch.** *n.* [*Ingleby's conj. for Qo.* path], where there is a — of ground I'll venture, II.6.33.
- Path.** *n.* this funeral —, I.5.11; she has the — (*of honesty*) before her, V.2.23. *See Patch*, II.6.33.
- Patience.** *n.* II.1.22; to hold here a brave —, II.2.59; II.2.85; V.2.43; V.4.20.
- Patiently.** *adv.* II.2.5; IV.1.55, 114.
- Pattern.** *n.* no toy but was her —, I.3.72.
- Pavement.** *n.* flinty —, V.4.59.
- Pay.** *n.* to give the service — (= *payment*), V.3.32.
- Pay.** *v. t.* are —d, I.2.34; the Athenians — it (*sc.* the rite) to the heart of ceremony, III.1.3; I'll — thee soundly, III.6.52; — the minstrels, IV.1.111.
- Peace.** *n.* flurled by —, I.2.19, 23; I.3.24; — sleep with him, I.5.12; persuade her to a —, III.5.87. (*See Notes.*)
- Pebble.** *n.* like wrinkled —s in a glassy stream, I.1.112.
- Peck.** *n.* —s of crows, I.1.42.
- Peculiar.** *adj.* (= *especially belonging*) their nobleness — to them, V.3.87.
- Pelops.** *n.* —' shoulder, IV.2.21.
- Pelting.** *adj.* such — scurvy news, II.2.268.
- Pen,** *v. t.* (= *write*) —ned by no worse man than Geraldo, IV.3.10.
- Pencil.** *v. t.* which sometimes show well, —led (= *depicted*), V.3.13.
- Penn'worth** (= *penn'orth* = *penny-worth*), a great —on't, IV.3.59.
- Penner.** *n.* (= *case for holding pens*), offer up my —, III.5.124.
- People.** *n.* the —'s praises, II.2.16; the —'s curses, II.2.110; the plurisy of —, V.1.66; V.4.2.
- Perceive.** *v. t.* we — our losses fall so thick, *Prol.* 31; I.2.14, 30; II.1.50; III.1.31; III.6.59; IV.1.5, 57, 60; you shall — her behaviour, IV.3.8; V.2.33.
- Perch.** *v. i.* I.1.22.
- Perfect.** *adj.* II.5.15; now I'm — (= *ready*), III.6.88.
- Perfidious.** *adj.* thou most — that ever gently lookt, III.1.35.
- Perform.** *v. t.* the sports once ended, we'll — (*sc.* our dance), II.3.59.
- Perfume.** *n.* died in —, I.3.71; —s to kill the smell o' the prison, III.1.86; III.3.48.
- Perfume.** *v. t.* will — me finely, V.2.89.
- Peril.** *n.* I.3.37.
- Perish.** *v. i.* II.2.53; let me — if I think, II.2.61; II.2.92; III.6.113; in that faith will —, III.6.163; III.6.229, 241; our livers —ed, cracked to pieces, IV.3.19; V.1.156.
- Permit.** *v. t.* be —ted, IV.3.65.
- Perpetual.** *adj.* — night, III.2.3.
- Person.** *n.* in — there, II.3.67; your — (= *body*), III.1.94; our —s, III.6.33; your — I am friends with, III.6.39; IV.2.151.
- Personal.** *adj.* — hazard, V.1.74.
- Persuade.** *v. t.* II.6.24; I am —d (= *convinced*), III.1.113; fluently — her to a peace, III.5.87; V.2.3.
- Persuasion.** *n.* I.3.91.
- Persuasively.** *adv.* III.5.92.
- Pertain.** *v. i.* III.6.32.
- Perturb.** *v. t.* a —ed mind, which I cannot minister to, IV.3.51.
- Petition.** *n.* Oh, my — was set down in ice, I.1.106; to make — clear, I.1.157; I.1.201; —s are not without gifts understood, I.3.14; — of grace and acceptance, IV.3.77; my — (= *prayer*), seasoned with holy fear, V.1.148.
- Petticoat.** *n.* V.2.84.
- Pheare.** *See Playfeere*, IV.3.79; and Feere, V.1.116.
- Philomel.** *n.* two emulous —s (=



- nightingales*), beat the ear o' the night, V.3.124.
- Phœbus.** *n.* the dread eye of holy —, I.1.46; I.2.85; V.1.90.
- Phoenix-like.** *adj.* where — they died, I.3.71.
- Physic.** *n.* give her —, V.2.29.
- Pick.** *v. t.* — flowers with Proserpine, IV.3.21.
- Picture.** *n.* I wore thy —, V.3.73.
- Pie.** *n.* chatt'ring — (= *magpie*), I.1.21.
- Piece.** *n.* it was my best — (= *performance, quality*), II.5.14; torn to —s, III.2.18; this is that scornful — (= *woman*), III.5.42; is not this — too straight (*of armour*), III.6.86; any — the earth has, III.6.263; broken — of matter (= *subject of thought or conversation*), IV.3.5; a — of silver (= *coin*) on the tip of your tongue, IV.3.17; crackt to —s with love, IV.3.20. *See* Ground-piece, I.1.122; *see* Shoulder-piece, IV.2.127.
- Piece.** *v. t.* (= *eke out*), to — her portion, V.4.31.
- Pig-like.** *adv.* — he whines (*said of a horse*), V.4.69.
- Pigmy.** *n.* the king of —ies, III.4.15.
- Pillar.** *n.* post to —, III.5.115; to touch the — (= *pyramid*), III.6.295.
- Pilot.** *n.* where's the —, IV.1.148.
- Pinch.** *v. t.* do I — you (*sc.* in fastening the armour), III.6.55; their lives but — 'em, V.3.133 (= *pain*).
- Pink.** *n.* maiden —s of odour faint, I.1.4.
- Pirithous.** *n.* I.1.207, 219; I.3.55, 95; II.2.246; II.5.31; IV.1.13.
- Piss.** *v. i.* *See* Nettle, III.5.57.
- Pitch.** *v. t.* — (*sc.* myself) between her arms to anger thee, II.2.19.
- Piteous.** *adj.* a woeful and a — nullity, III.5.55.
- Pity.** *n.* for —s sake, I.1.25; that equally canst poise sternness with —, I.1.86; warm it to some —, I.1.128; I.2.30; 't is —, II.1.20, 21; have — of us both, III.6.172; Alas! the —, III.6.185; III.6.191; by that you would have — (*sc.* for) in another, III.6.197; III.6.215; handsome —, IV.1.9; IV.1.42, 94; IV.2.146; what — enough for such a chance, V.3.59; infinite —, V.3.144; V.4.5.
- Pity.** *v. t.* Oh, —, duke. I.1.47; I.2.31; II.4.11.
- Place.** *n.* this — (= *prison*), II.2.69; II.2.83, 108, 263; II.5.25; hast likewise blest a — [*Qo. pace*], III.1.10; III.1.63; III.3.1; a — prepared, III.6.99; III.6.292; IV.1.82; IV.2.76; IV.3.27, 36, 64; V.1.27; V.3.5; V.4.99; (= *official situation*), II.3.82.
- Place.** *v. t.* how would you — it, II.6.213.
- Plain.** *n.* the —s (= *level ground*), II.3.54.
- Plainly.** *adv.* III.1.105.
- Plane.** *n.* cedar . . . spreads like a — (*sc.* tree; or? plain), II.6.5.
- Plant.** *v. t.* I'll — a pyramid (= *place*), III.6.293.
- Plantain.** *n.* these poor slight sores need not a —, I.2.61.
- Play.** *n.* (= *drama*), *Prol.* 1, 3, 9, 30; *Epil.* 1.
- Play.** *i. v. t.* —ing one business, I.3.31; you — the child extremely, II.2.206; let him — 'Qui passa,' III.5.85; his part is —ed, V.4.104; fortune did — a subtler game, V.4.113.
- ii. v. i.* II.3.28; — o' the virginals, III.3.34; — at tennis, V.2.56; — at stoolball, V.2.74; — at cards, V.2.108; *Epil.* 1.
- Play-feere.** *n.* (= *playmate*) what maids have been her —s, IV.3.79.
- Playfellow.** *n.* I.3.50.
- Plea.** *n.* I'm a suitor that to your sword you will bequeath this — (= *cause*), III.1.115.



- Please.** *i. v. t.* II.2.59, 227; II.4.9, 10; II.5.4; III.1.53, 111; III.5.139, 142, 149; will 't — you arm, III.6.35; III.6.167; all the chaste nights I have ever —d you, III.6.200; V.1.30; I hope she's —d, V.1.172; — her appetite, V.2.36; V.4.11, 57.
- Pleasure.** *n.* quick-eyed —'s foes, I.5.8; II.2.100; a world of —s, II.2.118; II.2.241; V.1.61, 129; V.3.34.
- Pledge.** *v. t.* I'll — you (= *drink to you*), III.3.16; III.3.38.
- Plight.** *n.* freed of this — (= *condition*), I.4.34; I am in — (= *ready*), III.1.88.
- Plight.** *v. t.* be —ed with a love that grows, V.3.110.
- Plough.** *n.* II.3.28.
- Pluck.** *v. t.* a dove's motion when the head's —t off, I.1.98; I should — all ladies' scandal on me, I.1.191; the flower that I would —, I.3.66; vengeance . . . all my sins could never — upon me, II.3.7; (= *pull down*), V.1.53. See **Unplucked**, V.1.168.
- Plum.** *adj.* [*Qo. plumb*] — porridge (*exclam. of contempt*), II.3.73.
- Plum-broth.** *n.* — and marrow, III.5.5.
- Plunge.** *n.* differing —s, V.4.75 (*of a horse*).
- Plurisy.** *n.* (= *plethora*) the — of people, V.1.66.
- Po.** *n.* twist — and silver Trent, *Prol.* 12.
- Poet.** *n.* *Prol.* 11; III.5.49.
- Point.** *n.* I must no more believe thee in this —, I.3.87; the — is this, III.2.37.
- Point.** *v. t.* our —ed javelins (= *sharp*), II.2.49; a promontory, —ed in heaven, IV.2.23; a husband I have —ed (? *read* 'pointed' = *appointed*), V.1.151.
- Pointing.** *n.* go to! leave your —, II.1.51.
- Poise.** *n.* See **Poyse**. his full —, V.4.81.
- Poise.** *v. t.* that equally canst — sternness and pity, I.1.86.
- Poison.** *n.* II.275.
- Poison.** *v. t.* thou might'st now — me, III.3.8.
- Pole.** *n.* something to paint your — withal (= *Maypole*), III.5.153. See **Maypole**, III.5.145.
- Poll.** *v. t.* [*Qo. pould*, which represents the pronunciation] the —ed bachelor (= *bald*), V.1.85.
- Poor.** *adj.* — lady, I.1.101, these — queens, I.1.199; — chin (= *luckless*), I.2.54; — slight sores, I.2.60; I.3.7, 36; II.3.80; III.1.12, 23; III.5.116; IV.2.154; — soul [*Qo. pore*], IV.3.14; — beast, V.2.62; V.2.84; V.2.96; — servant (*in pity*), V.3.72, 104; V.4.14.
- Porridge.** *n.* hang him! plum — (= *fool*), II.3.73.
- Port.** *n.* thine ear, . . into whose — (= *porch, entrance*) ne'er entered wanton sound, V.1.147.
- Port.** *v. t.* (= *bring into harbour*) must these vessels —, V.1.29.
- Portion.** *n.* to piece her — (= *dowry*), V.4.31.
- Pose.** *v. t.* I have —d him (= *puzzled*), III.5.79.
- Position.** *n.* in manners this was false —, III.5.51.
- Possess.** *v. t.* I.3.95; —t with fire, V.4.64.
- Possession.** *n.* took — of, II.2.168.
- Possible.** *adj.* I.4.26; II.2.114.
- Post.** *n.* from — to pillar, III.5.115.
- Post.** *v. i.* we will — to Athens 'fore our army (= *go post haste*), I.4.48.
- Posy.** *n.* the prettiest — (See **Ring**), IV.1.90.
- Poul'd.** See **Poll**, V.1.85.
- Pour.** *v. t.* III.1.102.
- Pouting.** *n.* such —s, III.6.33.
- Power.** *n.* your manhood, whereto he'll infuse —, I.1.73; who now, I know, hast much more — on

- him than e'er he had on thee, I. 1.37; I.2.42, 65; excess and overflow of —, I.3.4; I.3.38; the —s of all women will be with us, III.6.194; the very —s that love 'em, V.1.7; V.1.49, 76, 77; what god-like — (= *personage*) hast thou (*Venus*) not — upon, V.1.89; V.1.109; all you heavenly —s, V.3.139; V.4.67.
- Powerful.** *adj.* — Venus, V.4.105.
- Poyse.** *n.* See **Poise**, V.4.81 (= *weight*).
- Practise.** *v. t.* I never —d upon man's wife (= *plotted against*), V.1.100.
- Praise.** *n.* the people's —s, II.2.16.
- Praise.** *v. t.* II.5.12; — each part of him to the all I have spoke, V.3.120.
- Prank.** *n.* the —s and friskins of her madness, IV.3.70.
- Prate.** *n.* V.1.119.
- Pray.** i. *v. t.* we — our play may be so, *Prolog.* 9; — you kneel not, I.1.54; — stand up, I.1.109; — you, say nothing, — you, I.1.119; — have good comfort, I.1.129; — stand up, I.1.205; — the gods for, I.1.208; I — you, I.1.224; —, forward, II.2.122; II.3.60; II.5.35; III.1.53; III.1.99, 100, 118; III.3.13; III.6.53; IV.1.16, 65; —, did you ever hear, IV.1.115; IV.2.71, 91, 150; V.2.24, 40; I — them he be made your lot, V.3.39; V.4.25; *Epil.* 3.
- ii. *v. i.* — for me your soldier, I.1.76; — for his success, V.1.153. See **Prithee**.
- Prayer.** *n.* make trial of my —s, I.1.193; —s to the gods, II.2.94; hear my —s, III.6.210; holy —s, V.1.2; your —s, V.1.16.
- Precious.** *adj.* my — maid, I.3.8; they are equal —, V.1.155.
- Precipitance.** *n.* cords, knives, drams, — have to themselves been death's most horrid agents, I.1.142. (See *Notes*).
- Preface.** *n.* (= *prologue*), III.5.150.
- Prefer.** *v. t.* happiness (= *good fortune*) — me (= *appoint, promote*) to a place, II.3.82.
- Prefix.** *v. t.* the hour —t, III.6.304.
- Prejudice.** *n.* gives the — of disparity, V.3.88.
- Premeditating.** *n.* your — more than their actions, I.1.136.
- Preordain.** *v. t.* their —ed faculties, IV.3.63.
- Prepare.** *v. t.* a place —d for those that sleep in honour, III.6.99.
- Presence.** *n.* thy sole —, III.1.11.
- Present.** *adj.* that craves a — medicine, I.1.191; put thyself upon thy — (= *immediate*) guard, III.6.122; at this — (*sc.* time), IV.3.60; you must be —, V.3.15; — (= *immediate*) justice, V.3.132.
- Present.** *v. t.* —s itself to the doing, I.1.151; —s me with a brace of horses, III.1.19; here — (= *represent*) this machine, III.5.113.
- Presently.** *adv.* (= *immediately*) — gives it, II.1.41; you must — to the duke, II.2.223; II.6.31; III.5.134; III.6.110; IV.1.96; V.2.6, 11; V.4.80.
- Preserve.** *v. t.* III.6.268; still — her in this way, V.2.106.
- Press.** *v. t.* — you forth our undertaker (= *urge*), I.1.73; so sorrow, wanting form, is —t with deeper matter, I.1.109.
- Presume.** *v. t.* either —ing them to have some force, I.1.194.
- Pretend.** *v. t.* omit not anything in the —ed celebration, I.1.210.
- Pretender.** *n.* he of the two —s that best loves me, and has the truest title in 't, V.1.158.
- Prettily.** *adv.* how — she's amiss, IV.3.24.
- Pretty.** *adj.* I.3.72; II.2.129; a — fellow, II.3.68; III.3.39; — soul, IV.1.69; V.2.69; *superl.* —iest posies, IV.1.90.
- Prevail.** *v. i.* never begged but they —ed, IV.1.27.

- Prevent.** *v. t.* we — the loathsome misery of age (= *avoid*), V.4.6.
- Prewarn.** *v. t.* whose approach . . . comets, V.1.51.
- Prey.** *n.* lions smeared with —, I.4.18; made — of him, III.2.13.
- Price.** *n.* the victor's meed, the — (= *prize*) and garland, V.3.16; weakens his — (= *value*), V.4.52.
- Prick.** *n.* oh for a — now like a nightingale, III.4.25.
- Pride.** *n.* V.4.58.
- Priest.** *n.* V.1.142; V.2.78.
- Prime.** *adj.* our — (= *first*) cousin, I.2.2; *superl.* the —st for this proceeding (= *best*), I.1.161; this beauteous morn, the —st of all the year (May 1), III.1.19; the —st of men, V.3.70.
- Primrose.** *n.* — first-born child of Ver, I.1.7.
- Prince.** *n.* II.1.19; — Palamon (Lord Arcite, 225), II.2.225; — Pirithous, II.2.246; II.4.4; II.5.5, 47; III.6.211, 275, 279, 306; IV.1.13; IV.2.14; blood of —s, IV.2.60; IV.2.77, 91; V.3.57, 141; V.4.96.
- Prison.** *n.* II.1.2, 21, 23; II.2.62, 71, 132; II.4.3; II.6.36; III.1.86; for breaking —, III.6.114, 139; IV.3.72.
- Prisoner.** *n.* I.4.21, 37; II.1.18; II.2.3; those hopes are —s with us, II.2.26; II.6.38; III.1.23; IV.1.21, 28.
- Prisonment.** *n.* these signs of —, III.1.32.
- Prithee.** [*Qo.* pre'thee] — kill me, II.2.265; III.6.65; I — run, V.3.70, 91; V.4.30. *See* **Pray.**
- Privately.** *adv.* II.1.45.
- Prize.** *n.* my —, V.1.42; arm your — (= *give your arm to Emilia*), V.3.135.
- Prize.** *v. t.* if I —d life so much, III.2.23.
- Proceeding.** *n.* I.1.161; I'll maintain my —s, III.1.53; commend we our —, V.1.75.
- Proclaim.** *v. t.* the more —ing our suit shall be neglected, I.1.174; II.6.30; V.1.52; —ed by the wind instruments, V.3.94; —ed your fancy, V.4.118.
- Procure.** *v. t.* pardon is —d, IV.1.21.
- Produce.** *v. t.* III.5.136.
- Profess.** *v. t.* who —es to clear his own way with the mind and sword of a true gentleman, III.1.55.
- Profession.** the god of our —, (*sc.* Mars), V.1.38.
- Profound.** *adj.* thick and — melancholy, IV.3.43.
- Proh.** *Lat.* *See* **Medius**, III.5.11.
- Proin.** *See* **Proyne.**
- Project.** *n.* the passages of this —, IV.3.87.
- Prolong.** *v. t.* to — your old loves to us, *Epil.* 16.
- Promise.** *n.* the — of his wrath, I.2.93; II.1.12; hold your —, III.1.100; III.5.43; fairer —s in such a body, IV.2.118.
- Promise.** *v. t.* II.1.10.
- Promontory.** *n.* — pointed in heaven, IV.2.22.
- Prone.** *adj.* — to labour, IV.2.129.
- Pronounce.** *v. t.* —s ruin to Thebes, I.2.91.
- Proof.** *n.* incite the princes to their —, V.3.57.
- Prop.** *n.* since thy best —s are warped, III.2.32.
- Proper.** *adj.* a — man (= *fine*), II.5.16.
- Prophet.** *n.* our reasons are not —s when oft our fancies are, V.3.102.
- Propound.** *v. t.* who did — to his bold ends honour and golden ingots, I.2.16.
- Prorogue.** *v. t.* — this business, I.1.196.
- Proserpine.** *n.* pick flowers with —, IV.3.21.
- Proud.** *adj.* I.3.52; II.1.23; horses like — seas, II.2.20; II.5.4; III.1.17; — of dangers, IV.2.80; — lady and a — city-wife, IV.3.44.



- Prove.** *v. t.* what —s you? a little of all noble qualities, II.5.9 (*see Notes*); III.1.39; how good they'll — (= *turn out*), IV.1.31.
- Provender.** *n.* hay and —, V.2.59.
- Provide.** *v. t.* II.6.7, 32.
- Provocation.** *n.* love's —s, I.4.41.
- Proyne.** *v. t.* do men — the straight young boughs, III.6.242.
- Public.** *adj.* in — question, III.6.222.
- Puissance.** *n.* we stand before your —, I.1.155.
- Punish.** *v. t.* my hearing will be —ed, V.3.7.
- Punishment.** *n.* a studied —, II.3.4; very grievous —, IV.3.39.
- Pupil.** *n.* — (of Mars), V.1.55.
- Purchase.** *n.* were not spent, rather laid out for — (= *gain*), I.2.111.
- Purchase.** *v. t.* to — name and do my ablest service, II.5.26; I — cheaply, V.3.113.
- Pure.** *adj.* a noble breeder and a —, *Prolog.* 10; II.2.75; — red and white, IV.2.107; — as wind-fann'd snow, V.1.139.
- Purge.** *v. t.* that peace might — for her repletion, I.2.23.
- Purger.** *n.* thou — of the earth, I.1.47.
- Purple.** *adj.* turned green Neptune into —, V.1.50.
- Purpose.** *n.* nothing to our —, V.2.32; for the —, V.2.78; honest —, *Epil.* 14.
- Purpose.** *v. t.* II.6.18.
- Pursue.** *v. t.* as I — this war (= *carry on, prosecute*), I.3.25; II.2.195; if thou —st her (= *seekest*), II.2.200.
- Pursuit.** *n.* (*legal term*—*quibble on meaning*) till the followed make —, I.2.52.
- Push.** *n.* what —es are we wenches driven to (= *devices*), II.4.6.
- Push.** *v. t.* V.1.26.
- Put.** *v. t.* I hope some god . . . hath — his mercy in your manhood, I.1.72; I.2.65; I.3.19, 67; soul — into noble bodies, II.2.65; II.2.214, 217; II.3.33; III.4.26; I have — you to too much pains, III.6.17; — off this great adventure, III.6.118; III.6.121; IV.3.30; let us — it in execution, IV.3.87; V.1.44, 110; V.4.58; — on (= *assume*), V.4.127.
- Pyramid.** *n.* (= *pillar*) I'll plant a — (*line* 295: to touch the pillar), III.6.293; V.3.80.
- Quaint.** *adj.* daisies, smell-less, yet most —, I.1.5.
- Quake.** *v. i.* yet —ing (= *fearing*) and unsettled, V.3.106.
- Quality.** *n.* I.2.79; men of great —, I.4.14; all noble —ies, II.5.10; the file and — (= *duty, function*), V.1.161; alters to the — of his thoughts, V.3.48.
- Quarrel.** *n.* —s consume us, II.2.90; this — sleep, III.6.303; to end the —, IV.2.57.
- Quarter-carrier.** *n.* were he a — of that honour (= *did he carry one fourth of that honour*) his enemy comes in, I.2.108.
- Queen.** *n.* I.1.39; blubbered —s, I.1.180; I.1.199, 210; — Emilia, III.1.4; — of flowers, V.1.45; sovereign — of secrets, V.1.77; sacred shadowy cold and constant — (= *Diana*), V.1.137; most modest —, V.1.157.
- Questant.** *See Question*, V.3.17.
- Question.** *n.* timorous —, I.3.3; II.3.61, 62; —'s with your equal (= *dispute*), III.1.55; this —, sick between us, by bleeding must be cured, III.1.113; bring your honour in public — with their swords, III.6.222; IV.1.15; IV.1.35, 38; IV.3.7; the victory of this —, V.1.127; to crown the —'s title (*Dyce conj.* questant), V.3.17; with you leave dispute that are above our —, V.4.136.
- Qui.** *Spanish*, play — pass, III.5.86.
- Quick.** *adj.* Eye . . . — sweetness, IV.2.13.



- Quick-eyed.** *adj.* — Pleasure's foes, I.5.8.
- Quickly.** *adv.* I.1.135; II.2.211; III.6.35; IV.1.52; IV.2.65; V.4.42.
- Quiet.** *v. t.* that shall — all, III.3.50.
- Quit.** *v. t.* — me of these cold gyves, III.1.72 (= *free*); then I shall — you (= *requite*), III.6.24.
- Quite.** *v. t.* (= *requite*) [*Qo.* quight], more to me deserving than I can — or speak of, V.4.35.
- Quite.** *adv.* IV.3.9.
- Quiver.** *n.* flies like a Parthian —, II.2.50.
- Quod.** *Lat.* See **Et**, III.5.88.
- Quousque.** *Lat.* — tandem, III.5.38.
- Rabble.** *n.* [*Qo.* rable, *rhyming with fable*], III.5.106.
- Race.** *n.* lest his — should show i' the world too godlike (= *family*), V.3.117.
- Rage.** *n.* be leaden-footed, till his great — be off him, I.2.85; flies . . . from our —s, II.2.50; to call the fiercest tyrant from his —, V.1.78.
- Raging.** *n.* waters that drift winds force to — (= *fury*), V.3.100.
- Rain.** *n.* who cannot feel nor see the — being in it, knows neither wet nor dry, I.1.120.
- Rain.** *v. impers.* III.1.66.
- Raise.** *v. t.* the forces you can —, I.1.213; — me a devil now, III.5.85.
- Rank.** *n.* better than your — I'll use you, II.5.43.
- Rank.** *adj.* See **O'er-rank**, V.1.63.
- Rapier.** *n.* — from my hip, I.2.56.
- Rare.** *adj.* — issues by their operance, I.3.63; II.2.154, 155; cries '—!' III.5.16; thy — green eye, V.1.144; *superl.* the —st gambles, III.5.75.
- Rarely.** *adv.* do — (= *beautifully*), II.2.130; he tells fortunes — (= *finely*), III.4.16; danced —, III.5.159.
- Rarely or Rearly** (= *early*), IV.1.110. See **Notes**.
- Rash.** *adj.* — oath, IV.1.11.
- Rashly.** *adv.* what you do quickly is not done —, I.1.135; III.6.227.
- Rate.** *n.* (= *degree*), millions of —s exceed, I.4.29.
- Rate.** *v. t.* as I do — your value (= *estimate*), V.3.114.
- Rather.** *adv.* I.2.111; I.3.77; I.4.8, 32, 33, 36; II.2.199; IV.2.68; IV.3.65; V.3.2; V.4.56, 70.
- Raven.** *n.* the boding —, I.1.20; the beaks of —s, I.1.41; black and shining, like a —'s wings, IV.2.84.
- Ravish.** *v. t.* —ed our sides [*Qo.* Bravishd], II.2.22; seek to — me, II.2.261.
- Raw.** *adj.* rude and — and muddy, III.5.122.
- Raze.** *v. t.* this good deed shall — (= *erase*) you out o' the book of trespasses, I.1.133.
- Reach.** *n.* above the — of report, II.1.27.
- Reach.** i. *v. t.* III.6.80; — thy hand, V.4.91.  
ii. *v. i.* which nature could not — to, I.4.43.
- Read.** i. *v. t.* I.1.111; the libels — of liberal wits, V.1.101.  
ii. *v. i.* never saw nor — of, IV.2.75; V.2.57.
- Ready.** *adj.* I am —, II.2.224; you must be —, II.5.48.
- Really.** *adv.* II.1.6.
- Rearly.** See **Rarely**, IV.1.110.
- Reason.** *n.* I.3.48; wrestling strength in —, I.4.45; what the — of it is, I know not, II.1.46; — or wit or safety, II.6.11; my stomach not reconciled by —, III.1.105; your — will not hold (= *maintain*) it, III.6.228; my — is lost in me, IV.2.34; our —s

- are not prophets when oft our  
fancies are, V.3.102.
- Reasonably.** *adv.* I.2.48.
- Reave.** *See* **Crave**, II.2.91.
- Rebellious.** *adj.* — to oppose, I.2.  
101.
- Rebuke.** *n.* so sweet a —, II.1.41.
- Receive.** *v. t.* II.5.60; V.3.110.
- Reck.** *v. i.* [*Qo.* wreake], I — not,  
III.2.7.
- Reckoning.** *n.* informs the tapster  
to inflame the —, III.5.130.
- Recompense.** *n.* noble —, III.6.24.
- Recompense.** *v. t.* I.1.153.
- Reconcile.** *v. t.* my stomach not  
—d (= *appeased*) by reason, III.  
1.105.
- Record.** *n.* is there — of any two,  
II.2.112.
- Record.** *n.* (*a kind of flute, a  
recorder*), still music of —s, *stage  
dir.*, p. 88.
- Recover.** *v. t.* they might have  
been —ed, I.4.27 (= *restored*).
- Rectifier.** *n.* the — of all, III.5.  
109.
- Red.** *adj.* IV.2.107, III.
- Red-eyed.** *adj.* the — god of war,  
II.2.21.
- Redemption.** *n.* made a brave —  
(= *rescue*), V.3.82.
- Redress.** *n.* II.3.20.
- Reduce.** *v. t.* — what's now out of  
square, IV.3.83.
- Reed.** *n.* —s and sedges, IV.1.54;  
the rushes and the —s, IV.1.61.
- Reel.** *v. i.* ye make my faith —,  
III.6.212; tott'ring Fortune, who  
at her certain'st, —s, V.4.21.
- Refreshing.** *n.* (= *refreshment*)  
with this —, III.6.9.
- Refuse.** *v. t.* III.6.14, 280, 284.
- Regard.** *v. t.* nor gain made him  
—, nor loss consider, I.3.30; as  
the gods — ye (*either 'look on',  
or 'love'*), V.1.15.
- Regiment.** *n.* their former law and  
— (= *course, order*), IV.3.84.
- Rehearsal.** *n.* this —, I.3.78.
- Rehearse.** *v. t.* II.3.56.
- Reign.** *v. i.* —st in mortal bosoms,  
V.1.130.
- Rejoicer.** *n.* a —, V.1.121.
- Relish.** *v. i.* our milk will — (= *taste*)  
of the pasture, I.2.11.
- Remain.** *v. i.* V.3.35.
- Remedy.** *n.* II.2.276; III.1.123.
- Remember.** *v. t.* I.1.133; thou shalt  
— nothing, I.1.185; — me to, I.  
3.11; II.2.36; III.3.30, 37; III.  
5.58; I will — you outdid m.,  
III.6.73; III.6.78; IV.1.3.
- Remove.** *v. t.* [*Qo.* remoove] —  
your lordship, II.2.263.
- Repair.** *v. i.* let them — to her  
(= *go*), IV.3.79.
- Repeat.** *v. t.* I.3.1; IV.1.67.
- Repletion.** *n.* Peace might purge  
for her —, I.2.24.
- Report.** *n.* (= *rumour*), II.1.5;  
above the reach of — (*see* **Fame**),  
II.1.27.
- Report.** *v. t.* heard them —ed to  
be, II.1.28.
- Reputation.** *n.* our ancient —, III.  
3.11.
- Request.** *n.* what's your —, I.1.38.
- Require.** *v. t.* — him he advance  
it o'er our heads, I.1.93; there  
— of him the hearts of lions (= *ask*),  
V.1.39.
- Requiring.** *n.* beyond further —,  
I.3.26.
- Requite.** *See* **Quite**, V.4.35; the  
gods — you all, V.4.36.
- Residing.** *n.* for our — (= *residence*),  
I.2.38.
- Resistance.** *n.* (= *power of defence*),  
III.2.17.
- Resolve.** *v. t.* I am —d, II.2.271;  
II.3.21.
- Respect.** *n.* of no — in Thebes  
(= *consideration*), I.2.36.
- Respect.** *v. t.* hear and — me, I.1.  
26; I.1.28.
- Rest.** *n.* all the —, II.6.5; the —  
of the music, III.5.31.
- Rest.** *v. i.* — at your service, *Epi.*  
18.

- Restore.** *v. t.* III.6.5; she's well —d, V.4.27; V.4.118.
- Restraint.** *n.* II.1.39.
- Resume.** *v. t.* Juno would — her ancient fit of jealousy, I.2.22.
- Retain.** *v. t.* and still —s, *Prol.* 7; — anew her charitable heart (= *gain*), I.2.24.
- Retire.** *v. i.* III.6.109.
- Return.** *n.* for success and —, I.1.209; till your —, I.1.222.
- Return.** *v. t.* we shall be —ing, I.1.223; III.6.307; are —ed, IV.2.66; IV.3.62.
- Reveal.** *v. t.* —ed to mankind, II.2.170; III.6.114; —ed secret, V.1.99.
- Revel.** *n.* abandoner of —s, V.1.138.
- Revenge.** *n.* vengeance and —, I.1.58.
- Reverence.** *n.* do —, II.2.134.
- Reward.** *v. t.* III.5.152.
- Rheum.** *n.* gout and —, V.4.8 (= *catarrh*).
- Ribbon.** *n.* [*Qo.* ribands], III.5.28.
- Rich.** *adj.* our —est balms, I.4.31.
- Richness.** *n.* his — and costliness of spirit, V.3.96.
- Rid.** *v. t.* to be — on 't, IV.3.40.
- Ride.** *v. i.* II.5.46; III.4.22.
- Rider.** *n.* V.4.57; disroot his —, V.4.75; becomes the —'s load, V.4.82.
- Right.** *n.* a — in seeing, III.6.147; the — of the lady (= *title*), V.4.116.
- Right.** *adj.* 't is —, I.4.23; you're a — (= *thorough*) woman, sister, III.6.215; not — (= *insane*), IV.1.45; I'll make her — (= *well*) again, V.2.105; my — side, V.3.73.
- Right.** *adv.* III.5.117; a — good horse, III.6.77; — joyful, V.3.135; a — good creature, V.4.35; a — good man, V.4.97.
- Ring.** *n.* a — she made of rushes . . . and to 'em spoke the prettiest posies, IV.1.88.
- Ring.** *v. t.* be bold to — the bell, III.2.19.
- Rip.** *v. t.* —s my bosom, I.2.61.
- Ripe.** *adj.* (= *ready*) — for your persuasion, I.3.91; as a — grape, ruddy, IV.2.96.
- Rise.** *v. i.* sad lady, —, I.1.35; V.1.135; must — betimes (= *get up early*), V.2.60.
- Rite.** *n.* [*Qo.* rights], their dear —s, I.4.9, III.1.2.
- Roar.** *v. i.* let all the dukes and all the devils —, II.6.1; torrents whose —ing tyranny, I.3.38.
- Roast.** *v. t.* he — eggs, II.3.74.
- Robe.** *n.* V.1.142.
- Robin.** *n.* — Hood, *Prol.* 21. See *Bonny*, IV.1.108.
- Rock.** *n.* wild —s wanton, II.3.17; a — lies watching under water, III.4.6.
- Roll.** [*Qo.* rowling] his —ing eyes, IV.2.1.108.
- Roof.** *n.* for our crowned heads we have no —, I.1.52.
- Root.** *n.* intertangled —s of love, I.3.59; II.6.28. See *Disroot*, V.4.75.
- Rose.** *n.* —s, their sharp spines being gone, I.1.1; of all flowers, methinks a — is best, II.2.136; cheeks of damask —s, IV.1.74; a wreath of —s, V.1.96; one — (= *flower*), V.1.165.
- Rose-tree.** *n.* *stage dir.*, p. 89.
- Rotten.** *adj.* — kings, I.1.180; III.6.244.
- Rough.** *adj.* a — one (= *unruly*; of a horse), II.5.46; (= *rude*), III.1.102; boisterous and — jadry, V.4.72.
- Round.** *adj.* armed long and —, IV.2.85; aged cramp had screwed his square foot —, V.1.111.
- Round.** *v. t.* (= *surround*) her careless tresses a wreath of bulrush —ed, IV.1.84.
- Round-faced.** *adj.* IV.2.135.
- Rout.** *n.* a merry —, III.5.106; all this — (= *assemblage*), III.5.147.



- Rowel**. *n.* whines at the sharp — (*of a spur*), V.4.70.
- Rowling**. See **Roll**, IV.2.108.
- Royal**. *adj.* Roses their sharp spines being gone, not — in their smells alone, but in their hue, I.1.2; most — brother, III.6.195; good friend, be — (= *behave like a king*), IV.2.154; V.1.9. See **All-royal**, I.3.12.
- Rub**. *v. t.* — my kiss off, V.2.88.
- Ruddy**. *adj.* as a ripe grape, —, IV.2.96.
- Rude**. *adj.* — and impatient (*sc.* wind), II.2.141; — wind, II.2.277; — and raw and muddy, III.5.122. *Comp.* —r, III.5.104.
- Rudiment**. *n.* my —s, III.5.3.
- Ruin**. *n.* what strange —s, I.2.13; I.2.27, 93; heap of —s, II.3.19; III.6.189; the — of my name, opinion, III.6.240.
- Rule**. *v. t.* of —ing Athens, II.1.37.
- Rumination**. *n.* thy — (= *meditation*), III.1.11.
- Run**. *v. i.* — to rust, II.2.22; II.3.77; II.5.3; III.2.14; ere another year — out, III.5.146; she would — mad for this man, IV.2.12; — mad for Arcite, IV.2.48; —s through his body, IV.2.101; the glass is —ning now, V.1.18; V.3.70, 72; —, save, hold! *Stage dir.*, p. 102 (V.4.39).
- Running**. *n.* wrestling and —, II.3.68.
- Rush**. *n.* the —es and the reeds, IV.1.61; rings . . . of —es, IV.1.89.
- Rust**. *n.* must run to —, II.2.22.
- Rusty**. *adj.* — (sword), III.1.73.
- Rycas**. (*name of rustic*), II.3.37.
- S'**. *abbrev. for shall*. He s' buy me a white cut, III.4.22.
- Sacred**. *adj.* — ceremony, I.1.131; — vials filled with tears, I.5.5; — fires, V.1.3; oh — shadowy cold and constant queen, V.1.137; — silver mistress, V.1.146; with — act, V.1.165.
- Sacrifice**. *n.* my —s, V.1.34; must be the — to my unhappy beauty, IV.2.63.
- Sad**. *adj.* — lady, rise, I.1.35; all — and solemn shows, I.5.7; II.4.20; a — boy, IV.2.32; V.3.52.
- Saddle**. *n.* freeze in my —, II.5.48.
- Sadness**. *n.* V.3.51, 53.
- Safe**. *adj.* set her — to land, IV.1.96. *Compar.* —r than banishment, III.6.218.
- Safely**. See **Safety**, III.6.110.
- Safety**. *n.* reason or wit or —, II.6.12; for honour's sake and — [*S. conj.*; *O. Edd.* safely], III.6.110.
- Sail**. *n.* like tall ships under —, II.2.12; out with the main —, IV.1.146; hoist we the —s (= *let's begin the enterprise*), V.1.29.
- Sail**. *v. i.* III.4.14.
- Sake**. *n.* for pity's — and true gentility's, I.1.25; for your mother's —, I.1.26; for the — of clear virginity, I.1.30; for our —, I.4.39; for honour's —, III.6.110; for heaven's —, III.6.251; for my —, IV.2.2, 69.
- Salmon**. *n.* II.1.4.
- Salute**. *v. t.* (= *greet*), —s me thus, II.4.23.
- Same**. *adj.* III.3.2; IV.1.93; IV.2.120; IV.3.60; see **Selfsame**, V.1.27; V.4.2.
- Sanctuary**. *n.* holy —, II.2.71; though i' the —, III.1.62.
- Saturn**. *n.* cold as old —, V.4.62.
- Sauce**. *n.* hunger needs no —, III.3.25.
- Save**. *v. t.* something do to — us, *Prolog.* 27; —d (*sc.* hereafter), I.2.48; III.2.28, 37; — their lives, III.6.251; I —d her, IV.1.95; run, —, hold, *Stage dir.*, p. 102 (V.4.40).
- Save** = *prep.* no roof — this, I.1.53; — often drinking, IV.3.4; V.3.113.
- Say**. *v. t.* to — truth, *Prolog.* 22; — no more, I.1.101; I.1.119, 230;



- I.2.104; I.3.49, 58, 83, 92; II.2.35; — (= *suppose*) they could, II.2.67; II.2.111, 179, 199; II.3.51; II.4.30, 31; II.5.6, 14; if he — true, II.5.19; II.5.44; III.1.75, 87; III.3.43; III.4.18; III.5.9; but, I —, where's their women, III.5.25; III.5.49, 68, 69, 70, 105, 134, 141; III.6.40, 49; to — true, III.6.55; III.6.93, 104, 116, 154, 159, 161, 170; to — true, III.6.180; — (= *suppose*) I felt compassion, III.6.212; III.6.224, 272; IV.1.1, 133; his very looks so — (= *bespeak*) him, IV.2.78; IV.3.67, 71; V.1.93; V.2.33; the *said*, V.3.79; V.3.140; V.4.45, 51, 60; *Epil.* 2 (*sc.* their lesson), 10, 16.
- Scandal**. *n.* I should pluck all ladies' — on me, I.1.192 (= *censure*); offence or — to the ladies, III.5.35.
- Scape**. *n.* your name or his — (= *escape*), IV.1.16; see **Escape**, IV.1.50.
- Scar**. *n.* —s and bare weeds, I.2.15.
- Scarcce**. *adv.* IV.1.102.
- Scarcely**. *adv.* II.6.23.
- Scatter**. *v. t.* having bound things —ed, I.4.48; call the —ed to the banquet, III.1.109.
- Scene**. *n.* modest —s blush, *Prol.* 4; hear —s, though below his art, may yet appear worth two hours' travel, *Prol.* 28; the —'s not for our seeing, V.3.134.
- School**. *n.* I.2.14.
- Schoolboy**. *n.* III.6.34; *Epil.* 2.
- School-doing**. *n.* forgets — (= *manage, training*), V.4.68.
- Schoolmaster**. *n.* the dainty domestic, the —, II.3.40; III.5.141, 151; IV.3.11.
- Scissor**. *v. t.* (= *cut*) —ed [*Qo.* cizard], I.2.54.
- Scorch**. *v. t.* we whom flaming war doth —, I.1.91; fires did — his mortal son, V.1.92.
- Scorn**. *n.* upbraidings, —s, III.6.32; till I am nothing but the — of women, III.6.250; to the — of his hoarse throat, V.1.88.
- Scorn**. *v. t.* I.2.20; III.6.115.
- Scornful**. *adj.* III.5.42; V.2.63.
- Scorning**. *n.* for — thy edict, III.6.168.
- Scour**. *v. t.* save when my lids —ed off their brine (= *washed*), III.2.28.
- Screech-owl**. *n.* III.2.35.
- Screw**. *v. t.* the aged cramp had —ed his square foot round, V.1.111.
- Scruple**. *n.* made such —s of the wrong, II.6.25.
- Scurril**. *adj.* never heard — term, V.1.147.
- Scurvy**. *adj.* pelting — news, II.2.268; that — hilding, III.5.42.
- Scythe-tusked**. *adj.* the — boar, I.1.79.
- Sea**. *n.* put to —, I.3.19; our fiery horses, like proud —s under us, II.2.20; —s swallow their youth, II.2.87; III.4.5.
- Seal**. *v. t.* to — the promise of his wrath, I.2.93; let me — my vowed faith, II.5.39; to — his will with, IV.2.87; the belief, both —ed with eye and ear, V.3.15.
- Season**. *n.* at such a — as now it is with me, I.1.60; as sweet flowers as the — is mistress of, IV.3.73.
- Season**. *v. t.* is more maturely —ed, I.3.56; my petition —ed with holy fear, V.1.149.
- Seat**. *n.* towards my —, V.3.62.
- Seat**. *v. t.* — something, V.1.28. See **Disseat**, V.4.72.
- Second**. *adj.* III.6.119.
- Second**. *v. t.* to — them, IV.1.12.
- Secret**. *n.* V.1.76; revealed —, V.1.99.
- Secure**. *adj.* I.1.154.
- Sedge**. *n.* reeds and —s, IV.1.54.
- See**. *i. v. t.* I.1.120, 218; I.3.23, I saw, I.4.17; *seen*, II.1.13; *saw*, II.1.44; II.2.9, 33, 39, 43, 58, 150, 161, 162, 168, 196, 218, 234, 250, 270; II.3.8, 23, 34, 45, 55,

- 57, 66; II.4.8, 28; II.5.1, 18, 42, 44; III.1.60, 63; III.3.25; III.4.3; III.5.33, 152; III.6.34, 74, 82, 113, 154; IV.1.33, 65, 79, 95, 100, 123; IV.2.65, 70, 72, 75, 142, 143; IV.3.12, 84; V.1.163; V.2.25, 45, 47, 100; V.3.2, 12, 137; V.4.25, 117; *Epil.* 5, 9.
- ii. *v. i. i* — through, II.2.102.
- Seed.** *n.* the —s of fear, V.1.36.
- Seeing.** *n.* a right in —, III.6.147; not for our — (= *not fit for us to see*), V.3.134.
- Seek.** *i. v. t.* no surfeits — (? *read sick*) us, II.2.86; and — to ravish me, II.2.261; what made you — this place, II.5.25; will — of me, III.1.79; III.4.23; III.5.127; III.6.157; *sought*, IV.1.95; V.1.103; V.4.71; — Elysium, V.4.95.
- Seem.** *v. i.* every —ing good, I.2.39; II.1.36; III.1.9; a falser never —ed friend, III.6.142; —ing as great as any, IV.2.117; IV.3.65; —ed torture, V.1.115; —s to bury, V.3.46; V.4.79.
- Seeming.** *n.* (= *appearance*) by his — should be a stout man, IV.2.76; by his — as great as any, IV.2.117.
- Seethe.** *v. t.* women that have *sod* their infants, I.3.21.
- Seize.** *v. i.* joy — on you again, I.5.12.
- Seldom.** *adv.* II.1.3.
- Self.** *pron.* it—, I.1.151, 153; death's —, I.3.40; thy false —, II.2.209; my—, III.2.23; your *selves*, III.5.20; your—, V.3.37. *See* **Myself**, V.1.24; **Itself**, V.1.97.
- Selfsame.** *adj.* — place, V.1.27; the — state, V.4.2.
- Sell.** *v. t.* you have sold [*Qo.* *sould*] 'em, V.4.15.
- Sempster.** *n.* Cicely the —'s daughter, III.5.44.
- Send.** *v. t.* I.2.90; II.2.227; II.6.4; V.4.120.
- Sennois.** *rustic's name*, II.3.37.
- Sense.** *n.* blessing their —, I.1.15; they've no more — of their captivity than I of ruling Athens (= *idea*), II.1.36; call fell things to listen, who have in them a — (= *instinct*) to know a man unarmed, III.2.16; let not my — (= *reason*) unsettle, III.2.29; she sung much, but no — (= *meaning*), IV.1.66; the other —s, IV.3.62; odours which are grateful to the —, IV.3.74; the — (*sc.* of hearing) could not be judge between 'em, V.3.127.
- Sensually.** *adv.* being — subdued, I.1.232.
- Sentence.** *v. t.* or —ing for aye their vigour dumb, I.1.195; *see* **Unsentenced**, V.1.157.
- Sequent.** *adj.* draw i' the — trace, I.2.60.
- Serious.** *adj.* my most — decking, I.3.74.
- Seriousness.** *n.* his sports, though craving — and skill (= *attention*), I.3.28.
- Servant.** *n.* who is the — for the tenour of thy speech, I.1.89; II.5.39, 62; (= *lover*. *See* **Notes**) III.6.147; poor — (*Arcite was Emilia's servant*), V.3.72.
- Serve.** *v. t.* II.5.56; I shall make it —, III.6.57; III.6.165; nought —d, V.4.73.
- Service.** *n.* (= *exploit*. *sc.* his wedding), I.1.171; to do these poor queens —, I.1.199; commands men's —, I.2.69; our —s, I.2.99; my ablest —, II.5.26; II.5.34; III.2.11; III.6.162; to give the — pay, V.3.32; rest at your —, *Epil.* 18.
- Servingman.** *n.* III.5.126.
- Set.** *i. v. t.* all you are — down there, I.1.34; oh my petition was — down in ice, I.1.107; — you forward, I.1.217; bath — a mark, I.4.43; — foot upon this kingdom, II.2.248; to — him free, II.4.31; I'll — it down, III.2.17; now I am — abegging, III.6.238; Pirithous . . . — in too (= *joined*)

- in*), IV.1.14; IV.1.54; — her safe to land, IV.1.96; — it (*sc.* compass) to the north, IV.1.141; — Jove afire with, IV.2.16; — him by him, IV.2.17; — upon the altar, *stage dir.*, p. 88; many a murder — off (= *give an equivalent for, cancel*), V.3.28; — both thine ears to the business, V.3.92.
- ii. *v. i.* III.5.99; III.6.184. *See Nimbleset*, IV.2.125.
- Settle.** *v. t.* who wins I'll — here, III.6.307; a — d valour not tainted with extremes (= *resolute*), IV.2.100; IV.3.62.
- Seventy.** *adj.* at — (*sc.* years of age), V.1.87.
- Sever.** *v. t.* [*Qo.* seaver], II.2.95.
- Several.** *adj.* each took a — land, III.1.2; of — colours, IV.1.85.
- Sex.** *n.* wast near to make the male to thy — captive, I.1.81; being a natural sister of our —, I.1.125; — dividual, I.3.82.
- Shackle.** *n.* I feel my —s, II.2.158; knock thy brains out with my —s, II.2.221; prove it in my —s, III.1.39; IV.1.70.
- Shade.** *n.* brave souls in —s (= *Hades*), III.1.78.
- Shadow.** *n.* under the — of his sword may cool us, I.1.92; dust and —, I.1.145; a gaudy —, II.2.103; like a —, II.6.34; a mere dull —, IV.2.26.
- Shadowy.** *adj.* — cold and constant queen, V.1.137.
- Shake.** *i. v. t.* how will it — the bones of that good man, *Prol.* 17; small winds — him (= *trifles excite him*), I.2.88; to — me from the arm, I.3.92; *shook* the aged forest with their echoes, II.2.47; II.2.48, 274; — hands, III.6.302.
- ii. *v. i.* — to lose his honour, *Prol.* 5.
- Shaker.** *n.* — of o'errank states, V.1.63.
- Shall.** *v. aux.* we — tack about, *Prol.* 26; you — hear, *Prol.* 27; I.1.33, 60, 127; I.2.104; they *should* be out, II.1.21; you — both to your country, III.6.290; I *should* and would die too, V.3.144, *et passim*.
- Shame.** *n.* —s, I.2.80; II.2.39; that were a —, II.5.53; — take him, III.6.121.
- Shame.** *v. i.* and here to keep in abstinence we — (= *disgrace ourselves*) as in incontinence, I.2.6.
- Shape.** *n.* another — (= *disguise*), II.3.21.
- Share.** *n.* III.3.37; their single —, V.3.86.
- Share.** *v. t.* I.2.75.
- Sharp.** *adj.* roses their — spines being gone, I.1.1; — to spy advantages (= *quick*), IV.2.132; a — weapon in a soft sheath, V.3.42; — rowel, V.4.70.
- Sharpen.** *v. t.* extremity, that —s sundry wits, makes me a fool, I.1.118.
- Sharpness.** *n.* of all this sprightly —, IV.2.30.
- She.** *pron.* *Prol.* 5; *her* bells dim (*See Hairbells*), I.1.9; to *her*, I.1.37, 64, 66, 175, 178, 183, 201; I.3.64; II.2.39, 44, *etc. etc.*
- Sheath.** *n.* a sharp weapon in a soft —, V.3.43.
- Shed.** *v. t.* that blood we desire to —, III.6.95.
- Shew.** *v. t.* III.1.45; to — in generous terms your grief (= *explain your grievance*), III.1.54; you — (= *appear*) more than a mistress to me, III.6.25; — mercy, III.6.173; which —s him hardy, fearless, IV.2.80; he —s no such soft temper (*sc.* as fear), IV.2.103; — too godlike, V.3.118; the deities have —ed due justice, V.4.109. *See Show* [*the Qo.* uses both spellings of the verb].
- Shield.** *n.* hang your — before your heart, about that neck (= *set war before love*), I.1.196.
- Shine.** *v. i.* II.2.236; a —ing con-



- stellation, IV.2.18; IV.2.83; the only star to —, V.3.20.
- Ship.** *n.* like tall —s under sail, II.2.12; III.4.5; master of a —, IV.1.140.
- Shirt.** *n.* III.3.48.
- Shore.** *n.* the far — (*sc.* of the lake), IV.1.54.
- Short.** *adj.* a great deal — . . . of him (= *inferior to*), IV.2.89; by my — life, V.4.28; V.4.37, 102.
- Shortly.** *adv.* and — you may keep yourself (= *erelong*), II.6.39; V.4.28 (= *soon*).
- Shortness.** *n.* value's [*not values*] —, to any lady breathing, V.3.88.
- Shoulder.** *n.* Pelops' —, IV.2.21; IV.2.84.
- Shoulder-piece.** *n.* to the — gently they swell, IV.2.127.
- Show.** *n.* come all sad and solemn —s, I.5.7; his — has all the ornament of honour in it, IV.2.92.
- Show.** *i. v. t.* —ing the sun his teeth, I.1.100; the circle of his eyes — fire within him, IV.2.81; far worse than now she —s, IV.1.119; they — great and fine art in nature, IV.2.122; which —s an active soul, IV.2.126; he —s a lover, IV.2.136; V.3.21; — his face, *Epil.* 6.
- ii. v. i.** they would — bravely about the titles (= *make a display*), IV.2.144; which strove to — mine enemy (= *appear as*), V.1.20; which sometime — well, pencilled, V.3.13. *See Shew.*
- Shrewd.** *adj.* [*Qo.* shrowd] — measure, IV.3.28.
- Shrill.** *adj.* *See Smallness*, IV.1.56.
- Shrink.** *v. t.* *shrunk* thee into the bound thou wast o'erflowing, I.1.89.
- Shrowd.** *See Shrewd*, IV.3.28.
- Shun.** *v. t.* dread sights [that] it may —, V.3.10.
- Sib.** *adj.* [*Qo.* sibbe] the blood of mine that's — (= *related*) to him, I.2.72.
- Sick.** *adj.* this question — between 's, by bleeding must be cured, III.1.113; V.1.65.
- Sicken.** *v. i.* II.2.91.
- Sickly.** *adj.* a — appetite, I.3.89.
- Sickness.** *n.* — in will, I.4.44.
- Side.** *n.* I.3.47; II.2.22; V.3.73; the sinister — (*of the body*), V.3.76.
- Sigh.** *n.* vapours, —s, darken the day, I.5.2; a divided —, martyred as 't were in the deliverance, II.1.39; II.1.42; that — was breathed for Emily, III.3.44; lover never yet made —, V.1.125.
- Sigh.** *v. i.* she I — [*sc.* for] and spoke of, I.3.60; IV.1.92; V.1.94.
- Sigher.** *n.* a — to be comforted (= *one who sighs*), II.1.42.
- Sight.** *n.* retains more . . . to — than (= *in sight*), *Prol.* 8; out of their —, II.1.52; unworthy of her —, II.2.194, 195; II.3.83; there's a — now (*perhaps* = *there's a number*. *See Notes*), IV.3.19; the noblest — that ever was seen, V.2.99; I will not lose the — [*Qo.* fight], V.2.103; will you lose this —, V.3.1; dread —s, V.3.10; half —s saw that Arcite was no babe, V.3.95 (= *even half-blind persons could see*). *See Half-sight.*
- Sign.** *n.* these —s of prisonment, III.1.30; —s (= *omens*), V.1.67; a — of thy great pleasure, V.1.128; her —s were gracious, V.1.173.
- Silence.** *n.* your — should break out, III.1.61.
- Silent.** *adj.* — hanging (*arras*), II.5.127.
- Silk.** *n.* II.2.127.
- Sillily.** *adv.* IV.1.39.
- Silver.** *n.* embossed with —, IV.2.140; a piece of —, IV.3.17.
- Silver.** *adj.* Po and — Trent, *Prol.* 12; sacred — mistress, V.1.146.



- Simper.** *v. i.* have blushed at —ing sirs, V.1.104.
- Sin.** *n.* II.2.106; II.3.6; IV.2.58, 154.
- Since.** *adv.* one hour —, V.4.129.
- Since.** *prep.* I.2.14; I.3.27, 34; II.5.2; III.2.32.
- Since.** *conj.* I.1.215; I.3.14; I.4.40; III.1.54; V.3.132.
- Sinew.** *n.* swore his —s thawed, I.1.69; a man of tougher —s, IV.2.127.
- Sing.** *i. v. t.* I.3.78; will — my dirge, II.6.15; soldiers — my epitaph, III.6.285; *sung*, IV.1.58; listen to the words she *sang* [*Qo.* = sang], IV.1.63; she *sung* much, IV.1.66, 79, 92, 106, 107; — the wars of Theseus, IV.1.132; —... the loves and fights of gods, IV.2.23; IV.3.71, 75.
- ii. v. i.** — (*of the crow, cuckoo, raven*), I.1.22; II.4.19; IV.3.70; V.2.12.
- Single.** *adj.* their — share, V.3.86.
- Sinister.** *adj.* on the *sinister* side the heart lies, V.3.76 (= *left*).
- Sink.** *v. i.* were almost to —, I.2.8; will never — (= *despair*), II.2.67.
- Sip.** *v. t.* —t some water, III.2.27. See Notes.
- Sir.** *n.* I.1.192, 220; I.3.1, 11; II.1.9, 14 (*to a father*); II.1.49; II.2.1, 117, 131, 205; II.3.64, 69; II.5.8, 25, 30, 37, 38, 42, 51, 53, 64; III.1.62, 94, 108, 110; III.3.6, 16, 31; III.5.37, 53, 97, 98, 149; III.6.18, 20, 35, 45, 69, 111, 195, 202, 210, 238, 286, 301; IV.1.3, 32, 33, 34, 42, 44, 45, 51, 65, 76; IV.2.55, 71, 72, 151; IV.3.50, 56, 66; V.1.7, 33, —s 104; V.2.15, 30, 87, — my good lord, V.3.10; V.3.32; V.4.27, 46.
- Sire.** *n.* a happy —, II.5.9.
- Sirrah.** *n.* [*Qo.* sirha] III.3.52; — tinker, III.5.82.
- Sister.** *n.* I.1.125, 200, — [-in-law], 219; I.3.86, 90; —s' children, nephews to the king, I.4.16; II.5.62; the marshal's —, III.3.36; III.6.145, 185, 188, 193, 215, 233, 301; IV.1.120; IV.2.49, 51, 67, 147; V.3.11, 36, 105, 114.
- Sit.** *v. i.* III.3.9, 13; *sat*, IV.1.83; Love himself —s smiling, IV.2.14; in his rolling eyes —s victory, IV.2.108.
- Six.** *adj.* IV.2.73, 139.
- Skiff.** *v. t.* they have —ed torrents (= *crossed in a skiff*), I.3.37.
- Skill.** *n.* his sports . . . craving seriousness and —, I.3.28; all our best [surgeons] their best — tender, I.4.47; left my angle to his own —, IV.1.60; military —, V.1.58; if I have any —, V.2.53.
- Skin.** See Dogskin, III.5.45.
- Skip.** *v. t.* you — them in me, III.1.52; have —t thy flame (= *avoided; lit. jumped*), V.1.87.
- Skirt.** *n.* II.2.130.
- Skull.** *n.* unearthed —s, V.1.52.
- Slanderous.** *adj.* the — cuckoo, I.1.19.
- Slay.** *v. t.* *slain*, I.1.47; that hast *slain*, I.1.78; our *slain* kings, I.1.140; in me hath grief *slain* fear, III.2.5.
- Sleep.** *n.* to his bones sweet —, *Prol.* 29.
- Sleep.** *v. i.* Peace — with him, I.5.12; a willing man dies —ing, II.2.68; II.2.274; I shall — like a top else, III.4.26; III.6.99, 129, 184; this quarrel — till the hour prefixt, III.6.304; IV.1.35; IV.3.2, 83; we'll — together, V.2.110.
- Slight.** *adj.* these poor — sores, I.2.60.
- Slightly.** *adv.* (= *disregardedly*) past — his careless execution, I.3.28.
- Slip.** *v. i.* to let — now, II.3.44; she —t away, IV.1.97.
- Sloth.** *n.* full of bread and sloth, I.1.159.
- Slumber.** *n.* sing it in her —s, I.3.78.

**Small.** *adj.* — winds shake him (= *trifles excite him*), I.2.88; III.5.111, 121; IV.1.64; V.3.38.

**Smallness.** *n.* (= *shrillness of voice*) by the — of it, a boy or woman, IV.1.58.

**Smear.** *v. t.* like to a pair of lions —'d [*some copies of Qo. succard*] with prey, I.4.18 (*see Notes*).

**Smell.** *n.* I.1.2 (= *perfume*); — o' the prison, III.1.86 (= *stench*).

**Smell.** *v. t.* can — where resistance is (*see Sense*), III.2.17.

**Smell-less.** *adj.* daisies — yet most quaint, I.1.5.

**Smile.** *n.* of all this sprightly sharpness, not a —, IV.2.30.

**Smile.** *v. i.* IV.1.93; here Love himself sits —ing, IV.2.14; IV.2.136; came —ing to me, V.2.4; V.4.128; no man —? *Epil.* 4.

**Smock.** *n.* too coarse —s, V.2.84.

**Smoke.** *n.* IV.3.46.

**Smooth.** *adj. Comp.* —er than Pelops' shoulder, IV.2.21.

**Snail.** *n.* wish we to be —s, V.1.42.

**Snatch.** *v. t.* enforced the god — up the lovely boy, IV.2.17.

**Snow.** *n.* pure as wind-fann'd —, V.1.140.

**So.** *adv.* we pray our play may be —, *Prol.* 9; fall — thick, 32; I.1.104, 108, 126, 187, 204; Mars's — scorned altar (= *so much*), I.2.51; — we must, I.2.103; these — differing twins, I.3.33; I.3.42, 64; I.4.12 (= *therefore*); — soon as, II.1.16; II.1.35, 41, 42, 46; — they grow together (= *if only*), II.2.66; — much, II.2.70; II.2.92, 123, 144, 166, 177, 184, 191, 192, 199, 207, 232, 244, 265, 274; says —, II.3.51; II.4.10, 12, 27; II.5.6, 16, 18, 60; II.6.19, 20, 22, 23; — he use me kindly (= *if only*), II.6.29; II.6.30 (= *in this way*); — he be with me (= *if only*), II.6.34; III.1.24, 26, 90, 92; — he had this file (= *if only*), III.2.7; III.2.19, 30; III.3.4, 21, 22, 31; III.4.23; III.5.4, 149; III.

6.6; —, Love and Fortune for me (*therefore, L. and F. be for me*), III.6.16; III.6.20, 43, 47, 61, 162, 167, 193, 257, 267; pray Heaven it hold —, IV.1.16; IV.1.28, 39, 40, 47, 62, 120, 121, 135; IV.2.35; I had rather both, — (= *if thus*) neither for my sake should fall untimely, IV.2.69; IV.2.78; as a heated lion, — he looks, IV.2.82; IV.2.97 (= *therefore*); IV.2.122, 146, 153; IV.3.58; V.1.14, 28, 34; V.2.10, 13, 40, 92; V.3.47, 50; — mingled, as if, V.3.52; V.3.74, 75; worth — (= *in such a way*) composed a man, V.3.86; V.3.102, 119, 128, 140, 145, 146; V.4.4, 30; I think —, V.4.33; V.4.42, 108.

**Sodain.** *See Sudden*, V.1.168.

**Soever.** *See Whatsoever*, IV.3.6.

**Soft.** *adj.* no such — temper (*sc.* as fear), IV.2.103; — sweet goddess, V.1.126; a sharp weapon in a — sheath, V.3.43.

**Soft-hearted.** *adj.* — sister, IV.2.147.

**Soil.** *v. t.* my unspotted youth must now be —ed with blood of princes, IV.2.59.

**Sojourn.** *v. i.* a note whereon her spirits would —, rather dwell on, I.3.77.

**Soldier.** [*Qo. often souldier*] *n.* pray for me, your —, I.1.76; I.1.211; I.2.23, 27, 31; I.3.18; II.5.15; III.6.4, 13, 48; —s sing my epitaph, III.6.285; —'s friend (*sc.* sword), IV.2.88; IV.2.136; thy vowed —, V.1.95.

**Soldieress.** *n.* (= *Amazon*) — that equally canst poise sternness with pity, I.1.85.

**Sole.** *adj.* III.1.11.

**Solemn.** *adj.* all sad and — shows, I.5.7; III.1.2.

**Solemnity.** *n.* (= *solemnization*) the feast's — shall want till your return, I.1.221; (= *wedding*), II.1.11.

**Solicit.** *v. t.* the great Bellona I'll —, I.3.13.

- Solicitation.** *n.* *fit't*st time for best —, I.1.170.
- Solitary.** *adj.* V.1.139.
- Some.** *adj.* (*occas. pronominally used*) take — note that, I.1.51; — god, I.1.71, 72; I.1.122, 128, 150, 194, 230; I.2.105; I.3.75; I.4.15, 44; II.3.80; II.6.14, 15; III.1.13, 80; III.2.27; III.3.32, 49; III.5.93; his age — five and twenty (= *about*), IV.2.116; his age — six and thirty, 139; her distraction is more at — time of the moon than at other, IV.3.1; IV.3.73; V.1.61, 93; — two hundred bottles, V.2.64; — blind priest, V.2.78; V.3.27, 38, 135; V.4.3, 27, 51, 85, 134.
- Something.** *n.* and — do to save us, *Prol.* 27; II.1.1; III.3.35; III.5.152; V.1.28. See **Thing**.
- Sometime.** *adv.* (= *sometimes*), II.1.39; II.2.144; IV.3.25; which — show well, V.3.13; — 'tis not so, V.3.47.
- Somewhat.** *adv.* — better than your rank I'll use you, II.5.43; IV.2.94.
- Son.** *n.* II.2.183, III.6.94; IV.2.5, 141; V.1.92.
- Song.** *n.* II.2.38; II.4.20; funeral —s, III.6.247; IV.1.105; green —s of love, IV.3.71.
- Soon.** *adv.* — as they move, I.1.138; so — as, II.1.16; II.5.42; to me a thing as — to die as thee to say it (= *easy*), III.6.159. *Comp.* —er than, V.4.12.
- Sore.** *n.* these poor slight —s need not a plantain, I.2.60.
- Sore.** *adj.* a — life (= *sorry*), IV.3.26.
- Sorrow.** *n.* so — wanting form is pressed with deeper matter, I.1.108; your — beats so ardently upon me, I.1.126; II.2.278; right joyful, with some —, V.3.135; gave me some —, V.4.27.
- Sorry.** *adj.* I.1.187; III.5.77; as dearly —, V.4.129, 131; for what we have, are —, V.4.133.
- Sort.** *n.* of his —, II.5.19.
- Sot.** *v. t.* I am —ted, utterly lost (= *besotted*), IV.2.45.
- Soul.** *n.* I.3.63; II.2.64; I love her with my —, II.2.177; II.2.186; as I have a —, II.2.215; II.5.16; brave —s in shades, III.1.78; III.6.99; first bequeathing of the — to, III.6.148; III.6.175, 179, 208, 280; pretty —, IV.1.69; a tough —, IV.2.117; an active —, IV.2.126; IV.2.142; poor —, IV.3.14; pretty —, V.2.69; brave —, V.4.95; blessed —s, V.4.96.
- Sound.** *n.* the first — this child hear be a hiss, *Prol.* 16; wanton —, V.1.148; V.3.90.
- Sound.** *n.* (= *Channel*) till I come to the —-a, III.5.66.
- Sound.** *adj.* — and well, *Prol.* 3; I.4.35; there's a leak sprung, a — one, III.4.8.
- Sound.** *v. i.* —s like a trumpet, IV.2.113; —s more like a bell than blade, V.3.5.
- Soundly.** *adv.* I'll pay thee — (= *severely*), III.6.52.
- South.** *n.* III.5.59.
- Sovereign.** *n.* we are three queens whose —s fell before the wrath of cruel Creon, I.1.39; III.1.16.
- Sovereign.** *adj.* — queen of secrets, V.1.77.
- Sow.** *n.* a — of lead (= *pig*), V.3.120.
- Sow.** *v. t.* all those beauties she —s (= *infuses*) into the births of noble bodies, IV.2.9.
- Space.** *n.* fair good — between these, V.3.129.
- Spacious.** *adj.* a — majesty (*sc.* of brow), IV.2.19.
- Spare.** *v. t.* III.3.19; as I am —d (*sc.* from my work), III.6.39; to make me — thee, III.6.47, 49, 68.
- Spark.** *n.* darted a —, V.4.63.
- Sparkle.** *n.* an eye, of what a fiery —, IV.2.13.
- Speak.** *i. v. t.* (= *describe*) I.1.106;



- I.2.49; III.1.70; III.5.123; if thou beest, as thou art *spoken*, great, III.6.152; pray — . . . what they are, IV.2.71; pray — him, friend, IV.2.91; which — s him prone to labour (= *indicates*), IV.2.129; th' all I have *spoke*, V.3.121.
- ii. *v. i.* I.1.94; I.2.35; I *spake* of Thebes, I.2.36; I.3.60; II.2.117, 193; II.3.14; fairer-*spoken* was never gentleman (= *more courteous in his speech*), II.4.20; III.1.105; III.6.183, 186, 277; IV.1.89; IV.2.94, 112; V.1.30; V.2.34; V.3.115; V.4.35.
- Speaker.** *n.* report is a true —, II.1.6.
- Speech.** *n.* I.1.55; the tenour of thy —, I.1.90; I.2.47; to have some — with you, V.4.85.
- Speed.** *n.* I.3.5, 12; — (*sc.* of tigers), V.1.41. See **High-speeded**, I.3.83.
- Speedily.** *adv.* I.4.37.
- Spend.** *v. t.* which were not *spent*, I.2.110.
- Sphere.** *n.* —s (*sc.* of the eyes), V.1.14.
- Spine.** *n.* (= *thorn*) Roses, their sharp —s being gone, I.1.1.
- Spinster.** *n.* to see of us such —s (= *effeminate creatures*), I.3.23.
- Spirit.** *n.* whereon her —s (= *thoughts*) would sojourn, I.3.77; the poison of pure —s (= *minds*), II.2.75; after death our —s, II.2.116; six braver —s, IV.2.73; blessed —s, IV.3.18; Mars, whose —, V.1.35; bend your —s (= *minds*) towards him (*sc.* Mars), V.1.48; blend your —s with mine, V.1.72; spurs to — (= *incitements to valour*), V.3.56; his richness and costliness of — lookt through him, V.3.97; we are more clear —s (*cf.* **Clear-spirited**), V.4.13; your —, V.4.119. See **Clear-spirited**.
- Spoiling.** *n.* P. may wound A. to the — of his figure, V.3.59. (See Introduction.)
- Spoom.** [*Qo. Vpon*] — her before the wind (*sc.* ship), III.4.9. See Notes.
- Sport.** *n.* (= *amusements*) his —s, I.3.27; II.3.55, 58; III.5.97, 121; our —s (= *hunting*), III.5.153; attending — (= *fishing*), IV.1.55; good — (= *fun*), IV.3.46.
- Spotless.** *adj.* — honour, III.6.196.
- Spouse.** *n.* mine host and his fat —, III.5.128.
- Spread.** *v. i.* not Juno's mantle fairer than your tresses, nor in more bounty — her (*sc.* tresses), I.1.64; how I would — (*sc.* like a tree), II.2.239; cedar . . . —s like a plane, II.6.5.
- Sprightly.** *adj.* of all this — sharpness not a smile, IV.2.30.
- Spring.** *n.* a too-timely —, II.2.28.
- Spring.** *v. t.* there's a leak *sprung*, III.4.8.
- Spring-time.** *n.* merry —'s harbingers, I.1.8.
- Spur.** *n.* (= *incitement*) hark how yon —s to spirit (*sc.* trumpets) do incite, V.3.56.
- Spur.** *v. t.* I — my horse, III.1.106; I — red hard to come up, III.6.76; as brave a knight as e'er did — a noble steed, V.3.116.
- Spurn.** *v. t.* Mars — his drum, I.1.182.
- Spy.** *v. t.* sharp to — advantages, IV.2.133.
- Square.** *n.* out of —, IV.3.83.
- Square.** *adj.* the aged cramp had screwed his — (= *straight*) foot round, V.1.111.
- Stab.** *v. t.* III.2.30.
- Staff.** *n.* a well-steeled axe, the — (= *handle*) of gold, IV.2.115. See **Charging-staff**, IV.2.140.
- Stag.** *n.* the way the — took, III.5.95; III.5.154.
- Stage.** *n.* the — of death (= *scaffold*), V.4.123.
- Stagger.** *v. i.* the duke methought stood —ing whether he should (= *hesitating*), IV.1.10.



**Stain.** *See* Bloodstained.

**Stale.** *adj.* (*Mason conj.* state-) — gravity, V.1.85; crimes many and — (= *long committed*), V.4.11.

**Stammer.** *v. t.* I think Fame but —s them (= *imperfectly describes*), II.1.26.

**Stamp.** *v. t.* I — this kiss upon thy *current* lip, sweet, keep it as my *token* (*metaphor from coining, with play on 'currant'*), I.1.216.

**Stand.** *v. i.* (= *bear the test*), *Prol.* 3. I.1.35, 109, 155, 205; our services — now for Thebes, I.2.99; we must with him — to the mercy of our fate, I.2.102; they — a griese about the reach of report, II.1.27; I — still, II.2.196; how — I then, III.2.20; III.5.12; may the stag thou hunt'st — long (= *endure*), III.5.154; — off, III.6.89; III.6.229; if your vow —, III.6.247; once again it —s (= *is fixed, ordained*), III.6.289; *stood*, IV.1.10; — both together, IV.2.50; IV.2.75; his nose —s high (= *is aquiline*), IV.2.110; IV.3.36; *stood* unfeignedly on the same terms, IV.3.60; — accurst of many, V.3.23; i'the selfsame state —s many a, V.4.3; on end he —s, V.4.77.

**Star.** *n.* to thee no — be dark, I.4.1; all the —s are out too, the little —s and all that look like aiglets, III.4.1, 2; that fortunate bright —, III.6.146; my —s, my fate, IV.3.49; our —s must glisten with new fire (= *fortune*), V.1.69, 70; the only — to shine, V.3.20.

**Start.** *n.* thou hast the —, II.3.8 (= *advantage at the beginning*); by some small — of time, V.3.38.

**Start.** *v. i.* — amongst 'em, II.2.12.

**State.** *n.* (= *government*) the intelligence of — came the instant with the defer, I.2.106; o'er-rank —s, V.1.63.

**State.** *n.* (= *condition*) our *terrene* —, I.3.14; a — of life, I.4.25; I.4.34; oh — of nature fail together in me, III.2.31.

**State.** *n.* (= *Estate*) to give half my —, IV.3.59.

**Stay.** *i. v. t.* In vain I see to — ye, *Epil.* 9.

ii. *v. i.* if you — to see (= *remain*), I.3.23; II.3.8; III.3.18; III.5.95; we'll — it (= *wait for it*), III.5.99; I'll — it, III.6.37; III.6.85, 170; IV.1.101; I cannot —, IV.2.152; her Palamon —s for her, V.2.26; V.2.41; I will — here, V.3.6; — awhile, *Epil.* 3.

**Stead.** *v. t.* (= *assist, bestead*) what woman I may — that is distrest, I.1.36.

**Steal.** *i. v. t.* had mine ear *stolen* some new air, I.3.75; I — it, III.6.55; *stolen* jewel, V.4.119.

ii. *v. i.* seem to — in, IV.3.65.

**Steed.** *n.* (= *horse*) III.1.20; V.3.116; V.4.49.

**Steel.** *v. t.* our well —ed darts (= *pointed*), II.2.51; you've —ed 'em with your beauty (= *made them resolute*), IV.2.149. *See* Well-steeled, IV.2.115.

**Stench.** *n.* infects the winds with — of our slain lords, I.1.47.

**Step.** *n.* each errant —, III.2.34; I'll no — further, V.3.1.

**Stern.** *adj.* IV.2.79.

**Sternness.** *n.* that equally canst poise — with pity, I.1.86.

**Steward.** *n.* *See* Lord —, III.3.29.

**Stick.** *i. v. t.* hair *stuck* with flowers, *Stage dir.*, p. 88; *stuck*, IV.1.84; and in it *stuck* the favour of his lady, IV.2.138; come to her, *stuck* in as sweet flowers, IV.3.72.

ii. *v. i.* put my garland on, where she —s, the queen of flowers, V.1.44; those darker humours, that — misbecomingly on others, V.3.54.

**Still.** *adj.* — music (= *low*), *Stage dir.*, p. 88; a — temper (= *quiet*), IV.2.28; IV.2.130.

**Still.** *adv.* (= *yet, always, ever*) yet — is modesty and — retains,

- ProL*. 7; — make good, I.1.226; II.2.45, III.235; — as she tasted, II.2.242; III.5.7; III.6.84; IV.3.77; V.1.37; V.2.27, 106; V.3.71, 73, 89; V.4.5, 133.  
 ii. (= *quietly*) I stand —, II.2.196.  
**Sting**. *v. t.* —s more than nettles, V.1.97.  
**Stir**. *n.* first night's —, *ProL*. 6.  
**Stir**. *v. i.* when he —s, a tiger, IV.2.131.  
**Stirring**. *n.* no — in him, no alacrity, IV.2.29.  
**Stomach**. *n.* (= *anger*) my — not reconciled by reason, III.1.104; (= *appetite*) so good a —, III.3.21.  
**Stone**. *n.* though it were made of —, I.1.29; the —s of Athens, V.4.55.  
**Stony**. *adj.* the — girths of cities, V.1.56.  
**Stoolball**. *n.* play at —, V.2.74.  
**Stop**. *v. t.* — no more holes, III.5.83; — . . . thy noble ear against us, III.6.173.  
**Store**. *n.* — never hurts good governors (= *plenty*), I.3.6.  
**Story**. *n.* Chaucer . . . the — gives, *ProL*. 13; make and act the —, V.3.14.  
**Stout**. *adj.* (= *valiant*) a — man, IV.2.77.  
**Stout-hearted**. *adj.* Love, what a — child thou art, II.6.9; IV.2.130.  
**Stow**. *v. t.* [*Qo.* stoa] clap her aboard and — her, II.3.32.  
**Straight**. *adj.* is not this piece too —, III.6.86; the — young boughs, III.6.243.  
**Straight**. *adv.* III.5.117; — sought the flood (= *straightway*), IV.1.95; I'll away —, V.2.101.  
**Strain**. *v. t.* this —ed mirth, III.3.43.  
**Strange**. *adj.* — ruins, I.2.13; — howls, III.2.12; — conjurings, III.6.201; — questions, IV.1.35; this is —, IV.1.132; — art, V.4.79; *Epil.* 7.  
**Strangely**. *adv.* II.2.192.  
**Stranger**. *n.* I.2.41; III.6.255.  
**Stray**. *v. i.* this world's a city full of —ing streets, I.5.15.  
**Stream**. *n.* a glassy —, I.1.112; the common — (= *multitude*), I.2.10; III.1.9.  
**Streamer**. *n.* I may advance my — (= *banner*), V.1.59.  
**Street**. *n.* I.2.58; straying —s, I.5.15.  
**Strength**. *n.* I.1.88; wrestling — in reason, I.4.45; feeding me to breed me —, III.1.119; my lost —, III.6.5; III.6.37, 205; fair and knightly —, III.6.295.  
**Strengthen**. *v. t.* a sun that —s, III.1.121.  
**Stretch**. *v. t.* — yourself, III.1.87.  
**Strewing**. *n.* (= *rushes*) these —s are for their chamber, II.1.20.  
**Strife**. *n.* — or war, I.2.26; end their —, IV.2.3.  
**Strike**. *n.* two hundred bottles and twenty — of oats, V.2.65.  
**Strike**. *i. v. t.* II.2.51; to — a battle for her, II.2.254; — up, III.5.89.  
 ii. *v. i.* I'll — home, III.6.67; as ever *struck* [*Qo.* strook] at head, V.3.109.  
**Strive**. *v. i.* youths — for the games, II.2.10; which *strove* to show mine enemy, V.1.20.  
**Striving**. *n.* (= *swimming*) to frustrate —, I.2.9.  
**Stroke**. *n.* the fall o' the —, I.2.113; each — laments the place whereon it falls, V.3.4.  
**Strong**. *adj.* thy arm as — as it is white, I.1.79; I.3.57; II.2.2; — note of me, III.1.17; III.1.100; III.5.155; III.6.176; IV.2.84; — and clean (*sc.* lineaments), IV.2.114; — sinews, IV.2.127.  
**Strong-hearted**. *adj.* — enemies, V.1.8.  
**Strongly**. *adv.* III.6.30.  
**Strook**. *See* Strike, V.3.109.

- Stubborn.** *adj.* your — bodies, V. 1.13.
- Study.** *n.* of no small —, III.5.121.
- Study.** *v. t.* a *studied* punishment, II.3.4.
- Stuff.** *n.* any gross —, III.1.46; what —'s here, IV.3.14; what — she utters, V.2.68.
- Style.** *v. t.* born to uphold creation in that honour first nature —d it in, I.1.83; by thee be —d the lord of the day, V.1.60.
- Subdue.** *v. t.* at once —ing thy force and thy affection, I.1.84; as aspraves do the fish, — before they touch, I.1.139; being sensually —d we lose our humane title, I.1.232; the —d, V.3.131.
- Subject.** *n.* his —'s vassal, V.1.84.
- Subtle.** *adj. Comp.* a —r game, V.4.113.
- Succard.** *See* Smear.
- Success.** *n.* pray the gods for — and return, I.1.209; whose —es make Heaven unfeared, I.2.63; I.3.2; hasten the — (= *result*), which, doubt not, will bring forth comfort, IV.3.88; pray for his —, V.1.153; all grace and —, V.3.69.
- Such.** *adj. (sometimes used pronominally or adverbially).* — a writer, *Prol.* 19; — lamenting as wakes my vengeance, I.1.57; I.1.60, 94, 123, 162; as much sorry I should be — a suitor, I.1.188; — a mastery, I.1.231; I.2.21, 33, 42, 55; — spinsters, I.3.23; — another, I.3.69; the very lees of — (*sc.* men), I.4.29; — a constant nobility, II.1.32; II.2.127, 259, 268; II.3.5, 65, 66; II.5.27; II.6.25, 38; III.1.14, 20, 44; — a place which, III.1.63; III.6.33, 41, 74, 103, 105, 155, 228; — handsome pity, IV.1.9; — . . . that, IV.1.98; IV.2.3, 15, 25, 103, 119; — a manly colour (*emphatic* 'such'), IV.2.124; IV.3.27, 39, 71; — a one I am, V.1.124; — a chance, V.3.60; V.3.66, 145; V.4.12, 83; *Epil.* 12.
- Suck.** *v. t.* blood . . . be —ed from me with leeches, I.2.72.
- Sudden.** *adj.* [*Qo.* sodaine] — twang, *Stage dir.*, p. 90.
- Sue.** *v. t.* th' other curses a —ing fellow (= *suitor, lover*), IV.3.48.
- Suffer.** *i. v. t.* he will not — us to burn their bones (= *permit*), I.1.43; —ed your knees to wrong themselves, I.1.55; II.2.65; those affections, those joys, griefs, angers, fears, my friend shall — (= *feel*), II.2.189.
- ii. v. i.* dream how I —, II.2.279.
- Sufferer.** *n.* doers . . . —s, II.1.30.
- Sufficient.** *adj.* (= *able*), II.2.202.
- Suggest.** *v. t.* appear with tokens, as if they —ed (*sc.* love) for him, IV.3.81.
- Suit.** *n.* (= *petition*), I.1.175; my modest —, III.6.235; their —s fairly granted, IV.1.27.
- Suitor.** *n.* I.1.188; I am — [*Qo.* suitour] that to your sword you will bequeathe this plea, III.1.114.
- Sully.** *v. t.* — our gloss of youth, I.2.5.
- Sulphur.** *n.* fierce — (= *hellish fire*), V.4.64.
- Sum.** *n.* a — of money, IV.1.23.
- Summer.** *n.* II.2.44.
- Sun.** *n.* showing the — his teeth, grinning at the moon, I.1.100; the visitating —, I.1.146; the horses of the —, I.2.87; II.2.139, 144; virtue like a hidden — breaks through, II.5.23; by the — (= *by sunrise*), II.5.50; a — that strengthens what it looks on, III.1.120; III.4.3; III.6.184.
- Sunder.** *v. t.* I —ed you, V.4.100.
- Sundry.** *adj.* — wits, I.1.118.
- Superstition.** *n.* which — here finds allowance, V.4.53.
- Suppliant.** *n.* your —'s war, I.1.133.
- Supply.** *v. t.* I.4.9.
- Sure.** *adj. Prol.* 9; I.3.85; one — end, I.5.14; II.2.100, 152, 245;



- II.3.29; II.5.9; III.5.35; III.6.231.
- Sure.** *adv.* I.3.90; II.2.113; he's well got, —, II.5.24; II.6.18; III.1.60; is — the end of the combat, V.3.78; V.4.11.
- Surely.** *adv.* V.2.85; V.3.116.
- Surfeit.** *n.* did I not by th' abstaining of my joy, which breeds a deeper longing, cure their —, that craves a present medicine, I.1.190; no —s seek us (*see Seek*), II.2.86; intemperate — of her eye, IV.3.61. *See Plurisy.*
- Surge.** *n.* such a vessel 'tis that floats, but for the — that next approaches, V.4.84.
- Surgeon.** *n.* —s, I.4.30.
- Suspect.** *v. t.* —ed, IV.1.47.
- Swallow.** *v. t.* the sea — their youth, II.2.88.
- Swarth.** *adj.* he's — (= *dark*) and meagre, IV.2.27. *See Gipsy.*
- Swear.** *v. t.* and *swore* his sinews thawed, I.1.69; she *swore* by wine and bread, III.5.47; III.6.157, 206; — 'em never more to make me their contention, III.6.252; V.1.117.
- Sweat.** *n.* I.1.154.
- Sweat.** *v. i.* —ing in an honourable toil, I.2.33.
- Sweet.** *adj.* to his bones — sleep, *Prol.* 29; sweet thyme true, I.1.5; all dear nature's children —, I.1.13; —, keep it as my token, I.1.217; II.1.41; II.2.30; — companions, II.3.56; —, you must be ready, II.5.48; III.1.92; yours (*sc. sauce*) is too tart, — cousin (*ironical, in antithesis to 'tart'*), III.3.26; III.5.100; III.6.69, 203; — compassion, IV.1.11; oh fair, oh —, IV.1.113; — face, IV.2.7; — sister, IV.2.51; are they not — ones (*sc. the knights*), IV.2.121; IV.3.72, 76; soft — goddess, V.1.126; —, solitary, V.1.139; V.2.88; come, —, we'll go to dinner, V.2.107; I will not, —, V.2.112; — and bitter, V.4.47. *Comp.*
- er, III.1.5; far —er, IV.2.20; IV.2.95.
- Sweetheart.** *n.* III.5.148; V.2.90.
- Sweetly.** *adv.* II.3.57; III.5.21, 22, 29.
- Sweetness.** *n.* I.1.178; II.3.11; quick — (*sc. of eye*), IV.2.13; two fair gauds of equal —, IV.2.53.
- Swell.** *v. i.* if he i' the blood-stained field lay *swollen*, I.1.99; beginning to — about the blossom, I.3.68; gently they [arms] —, like women new-conceived, IV.2.128; —ing incense [*Theob. conj. smelling*] (= *in volumes of smoke*), V.1.4.
- Swift.** *adj.* III.5.155; — to make 'em his, IV.2.134. *Comp.* —er, II.3.78.
- Swiftness.** *n.* IV.1.98.
- Swim.** *v. i.* almost breathless —, *Prol.* 24; to — i' the aid o' the current, I.2.7; — with your bodies (*see Notes*), III.5.28.
- Swine.** *n.* (*singular*) the angry — flies, II.2.49; I lay fattening like a —, III.6.12.
- Sword.** *n.* thy feared —, I.1.48; under the shadow of his —, I.1.92; II.2.20; our good —s, II.2.211; II.2.267; III.1.33, 42; — of a true gentleman, III.1.56, 60, 72; a good — in thy hand, III.1.75; III.1.89; my —'s edge, III.1.96; III.1.115; III.3.50; III.6.3, 14, 87, 89, 96, 222, 260; IV.2.85.
- Synod.** *n.* able to lock Jove from a —, I.1.176 (*see Notes*).
- Tabourer.** *n.* where's the —, III.5.23.
- Tack.** *v. i.* [*Qo. take*] we shall — about, *Prol.* 26; up with a course or two, and — about, boys, III.4.10; — about, IV.1.150.
- Tackle.** *n.* every man to his — (= *prepared part*), II.3.55.
- Tackling.** *n.* for the — let me alone, IV.1.143.



**Take.** *See* Tack.

**Take.** *v. t.* I.1.44; — some note, I.1.51; my lord is —n heart-deep with your distress, I.1.104; — form, I.1.152; you may — him (= *capture*), I.1.157; — hands, I.1.165; — hostage of thee, I.1.184; to — a husband, I.1.205; *took* leave o' the moon, I.3.52; had they been —n, I.4.25; II.1.4; II.2.85; Time . . . —s with him (= *carries off*), II.2.104; — heed to your kindness, II.2.125; to — example by her, II.2.147; II.2.152; *took* possession of, II.2.168; — thy life, II.2.205; —n notice, II.2.229; — manhood to her (= *assume*), II.2.260; II.2.264; devils — 'em, II.2.265; — a new lesson out, II.3.35; II.3.70; II.5.54; II.6.17, 28; III.1.1; she —s strong note of me, III.1.17; — comfort, III.1.100; III.2.26; III.3.5; a fire ill — (= *infect*) her, III.5.52; III.5.86; this way the stag *took*, III.5.95; III.5.148; III.6.52, 65, 89, 121; — my life, III.6.156; — this oath, III.6.257; — our lives, III.6.261; III.6.264; to — my life so basely (= *save*), III.6.267; to — the other to your husband, III.6.274; — heed, III.6.303; IV.1.70; — it patiently, IV.1.114; —s none (= *submits to*), IV.2.135; — heed, IV.3.28; — upon you . . . the name of Palamon, IV.3.66; V.1.66; — to thy grace me, V.1.94; — off my wheaten garland, V.1.159; my fit would — me (= *attack*), V.2.10; — her offer, V.2.110; horse . . . *took* toy at this, V.4.66; V.4.90, 95, 121. *See* Leave-taking, V.4.38.

**Tail.** *n.* jades' —s, II.3.29; carry your — without offence, III.5.34; an eel and woman . . . unless by the — and with thy teeth thou hold, III.5.49; with long —, III.5.132; cut and long —, V.2.49.

**Tailor.** *n.* I.2.51; are not you a —, IV.1.108.

**Taint.** *v. t.* a settled valour, not —ed with extremes, IV.2.101; not — mine eye, V.3.9.

**Tale.** *n.* else there be —s (= *lies*) abroad, III.3.38; thereby hangs a —, III.3.41; the — we've told, *Epil.* 12.

**Talk.** *v. i.* I.3.55; — more of this, II.1.11; III.1.116, 119; — further with you, III.3.7; make — (= *gossip*) for fools and cowards III.3.12; III.6.28; she —ed, IV.1.76.

**Tall.** *adj.* — ships under sail, II.2.12; the — ones, III.5.112; Palamon was a — young man, IV.1.82.

**Tallent.** *See* Talon, I.1.41.

**Talon.** *n.* [*Qo.* tallents] —s of the kites, I.1.41.

**Tame.** *v. t.* a tongue will — tempests, II.3.16.

**Tandem.** *Lat.* Quousque —, III.5.38.

**Tangle.** *See* Intertangled, I.3.59.

**Tanner.** *n.* the —'s daughter, II.3.44.

**Tapster.** *n.* a beckoning, informs the — to inflame the reckoning, III.5.130. (? = *barmaid*.)

**Tart.** *adj.* yours (*sc.* sauce) is too —, sweet cousin, III.3.26. *See* Sweet.

**Task.** *n.* a mistress' —, I.4.41.

**Taste.** *v. i.* still as she —d, II.2.242; how —s your victuals, III.3.24; he that led you to this banquet, shall — to you all (= *die first*), V.4.23.

**Tasteful.** *adj.* thy — lips (= *pleasing to the taste*), I.1.179.

**Teach.** *v. t.* like young eagles — 'em, II.2.34; II.2.211.

**Team.** *n.* the forehorse in the —, I.2.59.

**Tear.** *n.* through my —s, like wrinkled pebbles in a glassy stream, I.1.111; vials filled with —s, I.5.5; conceives a —, V.3.137; V.4.98.

**Tear.** *v. t.* he is *torn* to pieces, III. 2.18.

**Tediosity.** *n.* III.5.2.

**Teem.** *v. i.* the —ing Ceres' foison, V.1.53.

**Tell.** *v. t.* I.1.99; I.2.114; I.3.20; I.4.15, 21; II.1.18; clock that —s our woes (= *numbers*), II.2.42; to — the world, II.2.103; I cannot — what, II.2.157; II.2.186; — to memory, II.6.16; III.1.15; III.3.18; III.4.12; he —s fortunes rarely, III.4.16; III.5.46; I can — your fortune, III.5.78; — ten (= *count*), III.5.79; III.6.53, 108, 179; IV.1.48, 52, 103, 121; that I *told* you of, IV.3.16; IV.3.25; V.1.108, 122; V.2.1, 6, 8, 25; V.3.71; V.4.30; which the calkins did rather — (= *count*) than trample, V.4.56; I've *told* my last hour (*perhaps should be tolled, which see*), V.4.92; tale we've *told*, Epil. 12.

**Temper.** *n.* valiant —, III.1.66; a still —, IV.2.28; soft — (*sc.* as fear), IV.2.103.

**Tempered.** *See* Best-tempered, I.3.10.

**Tempest.** *n.* tongue will tame —s, II.3.17.

**Temple.** *n.* I.1.130; —s of the gods, II.2.23; V.1.2.

**Tempting.** *n.* (= *temptations*) the —s in it, I.2.4.

**Ten.** *adj.* II.4.26; III.3.36; tell —, III.5.79 (*see* Notes); III.6.181; IV.1.30.

**Tender.** *v. t.* all our best their best skill — (= *afford, offer*), I.4.47; I — my consent (= *give*), II.1.13; before the gods — their holy prayers, V.1.2; how I should — you (= *regard, treat*), V.1.25; — her this (= *give*), V.4.32.

**Tenderly.** *adv.* look — (= *carefully*) to the two prisoners, II.1.18.

**Tennis.** *n.* to play at —, V.2.56.

**Tenor.** *n.* the — of thy speech, I.1.

90; III.5.123 [*Qo. tenner*]; the — of my laws, III.6.133.

**Tent.** *n.* I.3.17.

**Term.** *n.* in generous —s, III.1.54; these fair —s (= *courteous words*), III.6.25; stood unfeignedly on the same —s [*Qo. tearmes*], IV.3.60; never heard scurril —, V.1.147.

**Terrene.** *adj.* — state, I.3.14.

**Terror.** *n.* a jot of —, I.2.95.

**Than.** *conj.* [*Qo. generally then*], *Prol.* 8, 21; I.1.63, 67, 88, 98, 132, 136, 137, 172, 173, 185; I.2.1, 26; I.3.82, 89, 95; I.4.8, 32, 33, 37; I.5.3; II.1.5, 9; II.2.113, 213; II.3.78; II.5.43; II.6.5, 10; III.1.5, 6, 96; III.6.26, 125, 157, 182, 183, 225, 266; IV.1.119; IV.2.21, 74, 79, 94; IV.3.2, 10, 65; V.1.14, 91, 97, 126, 141; V.3.3, 6, 65, 99, 142; V.4.12, 35, 56, 71, 78.

**Thank.** *n.* —s, sir, I.3.11; —s, Theseus, II.5.32; I give thee —s, V.1.132; your —s, V.4.101.

**Thank.** *v. t.* II.2.96; II.3.2; II.6.21; III.5.151; III.6.7, 23, 65, 90; — ye, doctor, V.2.23; V.2.43.

**Thankful.** *adj.* V.4.36, 134.

**That.** *dem. pron.* I.1.103; I.2.98; II.1.6, 12, 16, 47, 49; II.2.74, 124, 153, 161, 162, 178, 231; II.3.24, 31, 61; II.5.41, 53, 58, 64; II.6.23; III.2.6, 19, 24, 38; III.3.4, 5; III.6.49, 52, 70, 126, 204, 242; V.1.144, 156; V.2.16, 20, 29, 32, 50, 52, 57, 70, 81, 85; V.4.11, 135; *etc.* *Plur. those*, I.1.142; I.4.10, 23; III.5.103; V.1.119, 120, 121; V.3.35, *etc.*

**That.** *rel. pron.* like her — after, *Prol.* 6; *Prol.* 20; what woman ... — is distressed, I.1.36; sword — does good turns, I.1.49; Amazonian — hast slain, I.1.78, 79; I.1.86, 114, 115, 118, 141, 142, 159, 173, 191; I.2.30, 33, 56, 60, 71, 72; I.3.9, 21, 62, 66; any —s called man, I.3.85; I.3.90; I.4.2; I.5.8; II.1.32; II.2.23, 42, 47, 57, 70, 101, 104, 112, 117, 168, 183, 201, 235, 251; II.3.12, 63;

- II.4.13; II.5.4, 13, 63; III.1.9, 22, 36, 37, 38, 49, 79, 121; III.3.24; that — (= *which*) shall quiet all, III.3.50; III.4.2, 23; III.5.27, 43, 45, 104, 108, 109, 110, 127, 128, 133; III.6.27, 99, 121, 133, 139, 166, 241, 243, 245, 246, 280, 294; IV.1.3; they—never begged, IV.1.26; IV.1.44, 53, 58, 72, 87, 89; IV.2.1, 31, 39, 53, 72, 75, 90, 120, 151; IV.3.16, 19, 32, 35, 69; V.1.7, 9, 10, 18, 29, 46, 49, 55, 64, 79, 81, 83, 100, 122, 130, 158; V.2.38, 60, 78, 100; V.3.3, 35, 53, 100, 122, 131, 141; V.4.1, 8, 22, 44, 47, 49, 73, 83, 84, 89, 136; *Epil.* 5.
- That.** *adj.* *Prolog.* 17; I.1.62, 82, 150, 186, 197, 201, 207; I.2.61, 74, 98, 108, 114; I.4.21; II.2.5, 195, 199, 201; II.3.3; II.5.21; II.6.17; III.2.11; III.3.44; III.5.42; III.6.14, 18, 60, 71, 72, 95, 140, 146, 163, 168, 186, 196, 197, 198, 227, 261, 282; IV.1.13; IV.3.61; V.1.10; V.2.15, 59; V.3.21, 62, *etc.* *Plural those*, I.3.9; II.2.6, 100, 169, 188; II.5.7; III.6.64; V.3.53, *etc.*
- That.** *adv.* the day — (= *when*) he should wed you, I.1.60; the cause — (= *for which, wherefore*) we came hither, III.5.120.
- That.** *conj.* I.1.50, 52, 81, 91, 121, 127, 133, 215; I.2.23, 43, 75, 94, 97; I.3.81, 84, 95; II.1.41; II.2.63, 187, 208, 259; II.3.6; III.1.12, 24, 28, 40, 54; — thou durst (= *would that*), III.1.57; III.1.76, 81, 115; III.3.50; III.6.12, 22, 44, 179, 191, 234; IV.1.9, 77; IV.2.35, 59; IV.3.6, 47, 59; V.1.20, 58, 114, 125; V.2.3; V.3.26, 79, 80, 96, 101, 119, 127, 145, 146; V.4.75, 78, 101, 110, 111, *etc.* *Ellipsis of* —, V.3.39, *etc.*
- Thaw.** i. *v. t.* do not you feel it (*sc.* wine) — you (= *warm*), III.3.18.
- ii. *v. i.* swore his sinews —ed (= *became relaxed*), I.1.69.
- The.** *adj.* *Prolog.* 8, 13, 15, 16, 17, 19, 21; I.1.16, 19, 20, 29, 30, 31, 33, 40, 41, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 49, 53, 56, 59, 75, 79; *et passim.* Of the often slurred, and written in *Qo.* o' th'.
- Theban.** *adj.* our — hounds, II.2.46.
- Thebes.** *n.* [*Qo.* Thebs] the foul fields of —, I.1.42; I.2.4, 15, 28, 36, 79, 92; I.4.15, 33; II.2.7, 250; III.1.26.
- Theme.** *n.* since that our — is haste, I.1.215 (= *object*).
- Then.** *adv.* I.1.65, 67, 153; I.2.19; I.3.22, 25, 53, 65, 67; I.4.28; II.2.12, 141, 153; 159, 191, 245, 255, 271, 272; II.3.27, 55; II.4.14, 23, 31; II.5.9, 47; II.6.14, 36; III.1.68, 74, 78, 118; III.2.9, 19, 20; III.3.7, 13, 46; III.4.13; III.5.10, 16, 17, 30, 32, 127, 131; III.6.24, 29, 31, 50, 52, 89, 115, 127, 156, 201, 222, 257, 264, 281, 285, 302; IV.1.59, 63, 71, 76, 79, 92, 118; IV.2.100; IV.3.13, 18, 21, 23, 47, 53; V.1.24, 45, 72, 126; V.2.8, 13, 22, 86, 108, 110; V.3.34, 68, 126; V.4.48, 118; *Epil.* 5, 6, 10. *See* Than.
- There.** *adv.* Chaucer the story gives . . . — constant (= *in his poems*), *Prolog.* 14; I.1.34, 111; I.2.46, 55, 65; I.3.8, 48; II.2.112, 113, 121, 276; II.3.20, 24, 25, 37, 48, 49, 65; 67, 80; II.4.17; II.6.6, 33; III.1.88, 110, 121; III.3.34, 38, 39, 46 [*Qo.* ther], 48; III.4.5, 6, 8; III.5.9, 12, 17, 61, 67, 72; III.6.93, 98, 147; IV.1.29, 127, 128; IV.2.43, 116, 154; IV.3.19, 20, 30, 32, 37, 44; V.1.20, 38; V.2.8, 18, 70, 74, 76, 77, 101; V.3.8, 18, 65, 85; V.4.1.
- Thereby.** *adv.* — hangs a tale, III.3.41.
- Therefore.** *adv.* I.1.192; I.2.101; III.1.91; III.6.13; V.1.157.
- Therein.** *adv.* III.1.27; V.4.68.
- Thereto.** *adv.* IV.3.73.
- Theseus.** *n.* I.2.90; I.3.44, 56, 93; II.5.25, 32; III.3.3; III.6.136, 154, 158, 172, 207, 244, 305; IV.1.132.



**They.** *pron.*, their (*adj.*), theirs (*pron.*), them (*pron.*). *Prol.* 3; I.1.1, 2, 3, 10, 15, 23, 43, 44, 50, 75, 137, 138, 139, 145, 178; cure *their* surfeit that craves (= *of those joys*), I.1.190; I.1.194, 230; I.2.32, 34, 70, 82; I.3.7, 8, 10, 19, 21, 35, 41, 56, 57, 59; I.4.5, 6, 9, 15, 16, 20, 24, 31, 34, 47; II.1.20, 24; II.2.38, 47; IV.2.153; reduce what's now out of square in her into *their* former law, IV.3.84; V.3.86, 87. Them, *contracted to* 'em, I.1.58, 113; I.2.34; I.3.22, etc. See 'Em. *Themselves*: suffered your knees to wrong —, I.1.56; I.1.143, 230; if one . . . —, IV.3.29, etc.

**Thick.** *adj.* — and profound melancholy, IV.3.43.

**Thick.** *adv.* our losses fall so —, *Prol.* 32; IV.1.54.

**Thick-twined.** *adj.* [hair] — like ivy-tods, IV.2.104.

**Thicket.** *n.* III.5.13.

**Thief.** *n.* a very — in love, III.1.41.

**Thigh.** *n.* on his — a sword, IV.2.85.

**Thing.** *n.* an endless —, *Prol.* 22; any —, I.1.204; I.1.209; I.2.42; were —s innocent (= *creatures*), I.3.60; I.4.11; —s scattered, I.4.48; II.1.1, 38; men are mad —s, II.2.126; do —s of such a virtuous greatness, II.2.258; our — of learning (= *learned man*), II.3.51; think'st thyself the happier —, III.1.25; III.1.99; III.2.5; call fell —s to listen (= *animals*), III.2.15; III.3.48; III.5.14; a — as soon to die as thee to say it, III.6.159; III.6.234, 241; to brave —s, IV.2.102; IV.3.76; never yet beheld — maculate, V.1.145; the latest —, V.4.30; how do —s fare, V.4.45; —s desire, V.4.110; what —s you make of us, V.4.132. See **Anything**, V.2.17; **Something**, V.1.28; **Everything**; **Nothing**.

**Think.** *i. v. t.* —, dear duke, what

beds our slain kings have, I.1.139; I.1.188; I.2.80; I.3.44; II.1.22, 26, 62; II.2.71, 114, 124, 193; II.3.41; II.4.8; I would be *thought* a soldier, II.5.15; thou —'st thyself, III.1.25; III.6.5, 11, 23, 47, 140, 149, 237, 267, 298; IV.1.36, 106; IV.2.73, 147; IV.3.50, 51; V.1.19, 171; V.2.30, 55, 56, 92, 93, 100, 101; V.4.33. *ii. v. t.* I.1.179; II.2.154, 175; IV.3.39, 58.

**Think.** *v. t.* (= *seem*). See **Me-thinks**, II.2.99, 136; **Me-thought**, IV.1.86; IV.2.22, 121.

**Third.** *adj.* III.5.70.

**Third.** *v. t.* what man is there [but] —s his own worth (= *reduces to a third*), I.2.96.

**Thirty.** *adj.* IV.2.139.

**This.** *adj.* (often used *pronominally*) *Prol.* 15, 16, 21, 25, 30; I.1.32, 53, 81, 102, 131, 143, 160, 161, 164, 171, 196, 216, 224; I.2.34, 35, 104; I.3.25, 78, 80, 83, 87; I.4.34; I.5.11, 13, 15; II.1.11; II.2.40, 62, 69, 71, 83, 85, 108, 118, 119, 129, 154, 204, 208, 209, 214, 234, 249, 259, 260, 262, 263, 266; II.3.50, 71, 75; II.4.1, 32; II.5.5, 25, 32, 34, 35, 46; II.6.27, 35; III.1.2, 18, 32, 48, 70, 80, 92, 97, 103, 113, 115, 116; III.2.8, 12, 37; III.3.15, 27, 43; III.5.42, 51, 95, 101, 113, 118, 123, 147; III.6.1, 9, 13, 31, 52, 54, 70, 86, 94, 102, 108, 119, 123, 129, 140, 142, 144, 150, 157, 160, 203, 208, 262, 278; IV.1.34, 49, 51, 67, 91, 105, 128, 132; IV.2.12, 30, 42, 43, 44; IV.3.16, 36, 46, 57, 64, 68, 74, 82, 87; V.1.9, 21, 24, 32, 57, 108, 115, 127, 135, 149, 166; V.2.1, 4, 22, 42, 55, 84, 86, 90; V.3.3, 19, 30, 77, 138, 141, 142; V.4.14, 32, 53, 54, 64, 99, 109, etc. *Plural: these*, I.1.199; I.2.60; I.3.33, 39; II.1.20; II.2.24, 128, 149; II.4.11; II.5.4; III.1.30, 39, 43, 72, 84; III.2.26; III.3.10; III.6.25, 105, 188, 201, 211, 218, 264, 265; IV.1.35, 129; IV.2.31, 38, 74, 112; V.1.167, etc.



**Thither.** *adv.* IV.3.29.

**Thorn.** See **Hawthorn**, III.1.82.

**Thou.** *pron.* (*to Theseus*) — purger of the earth, I.1.47; I.1.179, 181, 182, 185, 229; II.2.123, 127, 147, 170, 172, 213, (*angrily*) 216, (*to servant*) 268, 269; II.3.8, 10; (*angrily*) III.1.35; (*angrily*) III.3.47; (*contemptuously*) IV.2.47; (*in adoration*) V.1.63, 87, 90, 130, 170; poor servant, — hast lost, V.3.72; —'st (= *thou hast*), IV.2.89.

(*adj.*) **Thy:** (*respectfully*) I.1.48, 51, 79, 81, 85, [*Qo. the*] 90, 179; I.4.3; (*angrily*) II.2.221; IV.2.154; (*in adoration*) V.1.49, 61, 67, 95, 109, 129, 132, 140, 142; (*in endearment*) V.4.88.

(*pron.*) **Thyself:** I.3.88; III.1.251.

(*pron.*) **Thine:** (*angrily*) III.1.38; (*in adoration*) V.1.92; (*to servant*) both — ears, V.3.92.

(*pron.*) **Thee:** I.1.83, 88, 177, 184; I.3.87; I.4.2; II.2.183, 219.

**Though.** *adv.* II.2.125; II.3.72; III.6.64.

**Though.** *conj. Prol.* 28; I.1.129, 186; I.2.18; I.3.6, 27, 73, 88; II.1.2; III.1.62, 73; III.5.122; III.6.41, 267; V.1.24; V.4.102.

**Thought.** *n.* your first — is more than others' laboured meditative, I.1.135; some cold —, III.1.13; the quality of his —s, V.3.48.

**Thousand.** *n.* a — differing ways, I.5.14; armed with — cupids, II.2.31; a — chances, II.2.94; — ways, II.2.257; — blossoms, III.6.243; — fresh-water flowers, IV.1.85. (*Note omission of article in 4 instances, 'thousand' being adjectively used.*)

**Thousand-fold.** *adv.* forty —, I.4.36.

**Threat.** *i. v. t.* every blow that falls —s a brave life, V.3.4.

ii. *v. i.* who where he —s, appals, I.2.90.

**Threaten.** *v. t.* III.6.124; command and — love, IV.2.40.

**Three.** *adj.* — queens, I.1.39, 95;

II.3.38; III.3.36; by — a, III.5.62, 67, 71, 292; IV.1.99; V.2.104.

**Thresh.** *v. t.* [*Qo. thresh'd*] your wheaten wreath was then nor —ed nor blasted, I.1.65.

**Thrice.** *adv.* III.1.13.

**Thrive.** *v. i.* as you wish your womb may — with fair ones, I.1.27; IV.1.113.

**Throat.** *n.* I.2.82; V.1.88; contentious —s, V.3.125.

**Throne.** *n.* the high — in his heart, I.3.96.

**Through.** *adv.* I.2.11; II.3.31; III.6.62.

**Through.** *prep.* I.1.111; I.5.6; II.2.102; II.5.24; [*Qo. throw*] III.4.23; IV.1.64; IV.2.101; V.1.86; V.3.97.

**Throw.** *v. t.* I'll — my body out, II.2.217; V.1.93.

**Thrust.** *v. t.* — the buckle, III.6.61.

**Thunder.** *n.* clap of —, III.6.83; not to undo with —, IV.2.105; *Stage dir.*, p. 86, V.1.61.

**Thus.** *adv.* I.1.226, 232; II.2.78, 184; II.4.23, 31; II.5.39; III.1.49; III.3.6; III.5.9; III.6.134, 161, 288; IV.1.90; IV.2.141; IV.3.15; V.1.19; V.3.122; V.4.58.

**Thyme.** *n.* [*Qo. time*] sweet — true, I.1.6.

**Thyself.** See *above: Thou.*

**Tickle.** *v. t.* I'll — 't out of the jades' tails to-morrow, II.3.28; he'll — 't up in two hours, IV.1.136.

**Tide.** *n.* fury, like meeting of two —s, III.6.30.

**Tidings.** *n.* give the — ear, V.4.46.

**Tie.** *n.* the —s between us, II.2.174; our — of marriage, III.6.195.

**Tie.** *v. t.* —d, weaved, entangled, I.3.42; like compelled bears, would fly, were they not —d, III.1.69; I — ye to your word now,

- III.6.236; thus our true love's —d, IV.1.90.
- Tiger.** *n.* still, but when he stirs, a —, IV.2.131; the breath of —s, V.1.40.
- Tile.** *n.* we have . . . washed a —, III.5.40.
- Till.** *prep.* I.1.222; I.2.85; I.3.69; II.2.39, 115, 132, 203; II.6.7; III.1.122; III.5.66; III.6.250, 300, 304; IV.2.148, 153; V.2.29; V.3.129.
- Tilter.** *n.* See **Titler**, V.3.83.
- Time.** *n.* dull —, *Prol.* 31; you were that — fair, I.1.62; oh grief and —, fearful consumers, you will all devour, I.1.69; I.1.97, 169; I was acquainted once with a —, when, I.3.50; in their — chastise, I.4.6; i' the mean —, II.1.18; II.2.17; old —, as he passes by, II.2.104; II.3.70; these —s, II.5.4, 55; III.3.16, 39; III.6.1; ten —s more offended, III.6.181; at better —, IV.1.30; — o' the moon, IV.3.1; IV.3.85; enormous —s, V.1.62; — comes on, V.1.135; twenty —s, V.2.7; a hundred —s, V.2.109; by some small start of —, V.3.38; long —, V.3.48; that very —, V.3.64; bear us like the —, V.4.137.
- Timely.** *adj.* a too — spring (= *early*), II.2.28.
- Timorous.** *adj.* I.3.3.
- Timothy.** *n.* III.5.24.
- Tinker.** *n.* y'are a —, sirrah . . . sirrah —, III.5.82, 84.
- Tip.** *n.* the — of your tongue, IV.3.17.
- Tiptoe.** *n.* to go — before the street be foul, I.2.57.
- Title.** *n.* thy — to her, II.2.173; have as just a — to her beauty, II.2.181; in a field that their crowns' —s tried, III.1.22; I've a good —, I am persuaded, III.1.112; III.5.110; the —s of two kingdoms, IV.2.145; dusty and old —s, V.1.64; has the truest — in 't, V.1.158; to crown the question's —, V.3.17; the — of a kingdom may be tried, V.3.33; fortune, whose — is as momentary, V.4.17.
- Titler.** *n.* [*Qo.* F. Tytlers: *ed.* 1711 *changed* to Tilters quite unnecessarily. The above instances of 'title'; the fact that Tytler is a frequent proper name; and is the reading of the *Qo.*, suffice to justify its retention. As the Editors from 1711 to 1876 have not quoted the reading Titler or Tytler, it is to be supposed that they were ignorant of its existence. Mr. Rolfe, *ed.* 2. N. K., 1883, Boston, prefers Tilters]. The two bold —s at this instant are hand to hand at it (*refers to P. and A. themselves, as they alone had a 'title to her'*), V.3.83.
- To.** *prep.* retains more of the maid — (= *in*) sight, *Prol.* 8; constant — eternity (= *for, during*), *Prol.* 14; *Prol.* 22, 23, 27, 29, 30; I.1.35, 37, 49, 54, 81, 123, 128, 130, 143, 149 (see Note), 151; fit — (= *for*), I.1.160, 166, 167, 186; I.2.10, 14, 17, 20, 62, 68, 72; but whispered — (= *in comparison with*), I.2.87; I.3.2, 15, 19, 33, 45, 70; I.4.3, 16, 18, 37, 38, 43, 49; I.5.11, 13, 14; II.1.2, 5, 18, 22, 40, 46, 79, 94, 101, 117, 123; take heed — your kindness, II.2.125, 143, 170, 173, 181, 188, 215, 223, 250; take manhood — her (= *on, assume*), II.2.260; envious — me, II.2.265; twenty — one, II.3.14, 54, 55; — me (= *for*) . . . the games, II.3.63, 82; II.4.6, 14; II.5.7, 12, 27, 30, 34, 51; II.6.3, 16, 26, 31, 39; III.1.3, 47, 49, 67, 70, 71, 82, 109, 115; III.2.18, 33; III.3.12, 22; III.4.15, 17; III.5.35, 66, 87, 115, 128; III.6.6, 18, 26, 69, 119, 131, 148, 156, 158, 192, 213, 236, 239, 256, 266; take the other — (= *for, as*) your husband, III.6.274, 290; IV.1.23; her love — Palamon, IV.1.49, 68; — him a mere dull shadow (= *in*

- comparison with*), IV.2.26; a changeling — him, 43; alters — the quality of his thoughts (= *according to*), V.3.47; may P. wound A. — the spoiling of his figure, V.3.58; Alcides was — him a sow of lead (= *in compar. with*), V.3.120; more deserving — me (= *from*), V.4.34; — this end, V.4.64; meant — that honest purpose, *Epil.* 14; *et passim*.
- To.** *adv.* go —, II.1.51; II.3.42.
- Today.** *adv.* II.3.28, 65; V.1.70.
- Together.** *adv.* fought out —, I.3.40; II.2.60; twinn'd —, II.2.64; II.2.66, 78; III.2.18; oh state of nature, fail — in me (= *altogether*), III.2.31; III.5.119; let's die —, at one instant, III.6.177; stand both —, IV.2.50; IV.3.45; V.2.110.
- Toil.** *n.* bootless —, I.1.153; I.2.33.
- Token.** *n.* I stamp this kiss upon thy current lip, sweet, keep it as my — (*play on 'token' = coin*), I.1.217; the void't of honour that e'er bore gentle —, III.1.37; appear with —s, as if they suggested for him, IV.3.81; V.1.61; this fair — (= *omen*), V.1.133.
- Toll.** *v. t.* I've told my last hour [*Qo.*], (*perhaps for 'toll'd', but see Tell, and cf. 'the clock that tells my woes'*), V.4.92. *See* Addenda and Corrigenda.
- Tomorrow.** *adv.* I.1.152; II.3.29, 32; II.4.33; II.5.50; III.4.18; IV.1.69, 77, 109; V.2.80. [*Qo. generally to morrow.*]
- Tongue.** *n.* the — o' the world, I.1.227; a — will tame tempests, and make the wild rocks wanton, II.3.16; III.5.104; his — sounds like a trumpet, IV.2.112.
- Tonight.** *adv.* V.2.9.
- Too.** *adv.* — ambitious, *Prol.* 23; his strength and his love — (= *also*), I.1.89; I.1.115; I.2.48, 54; I.3.52; II.2.28, 46, 162, 226, 262, 264; II.3.43, 45; II.4.16; II.5.41, 64; II.6.18; III.1.8; III.3.26, 37, 51; III.4.1; III.5.142; III.6.56, 86, 112, 118, 201, 279, 286; IV.1.46; IV.2.91, 112; IV.3.11, 58; V.1.40, 72; V.2.57, 95, 101; V.3.118, 144; sold 'em too cheap, V.4.15; V.4.102.
- Too-timely.** *adj.* a — spring, II.2.28.
- Tool.** *n.* the Bavian with long tail and eke long —, III.5.132.
- Tooth.** *n.* showing the sun his teeth, grinning at the moon, I.1.100; III.5.50; your teeth will bleed extremely, III.5.81.
- Top.** *n.* sleep like a —, III.4.26; turns ye like a —, V.2.50.
- Top.** *n.* up to the —, boy (= *topmast*), IV.1.48.
- Top.** *v. t.* — the bowling, IV.1.146 (= *raise up*).
- Top.** *See* Ivy-tod, IV.2.104.
- Torment.** *n.* III.2.34.
- Torrent.** *n.* they have skift —s, I.3.38.
- Torture.** *n.* life in him seemed —, V.1.115.
- Torture.** *v. t.* —ing convulsions, V.1.113.
- Totter.** *v. i.* with our patience anger —ing Fortune, V.4.20.
- Touch.** *n.* keep —, II.3.41; if he keep — he dies for it, III.3.53. *See* Notes.
- Touch.** *v. t.* — the ground for us no longer time than, I.1.97; I.1.139; III.6.295.
- Tough.** *adj.* of a — soul, IV.2.117; IV.2.125. *Compar.* —er: —sinews, II.5.2.
- Towards.** *prep.* I.1.234; V.1.48; V.3.62; V.4.9.
- Town.** *n.* for our —, II.3.48; III.5.56; our —, IV.1.125.
- Toy.** *n.* on my head no — (= *trifle*), I.3.71; affliction, a — to jest at, II.1.33.
- Trace.** *n.* either I am the forehorse in the team, or I am none that draw i' the sequent —, I.2.60.



- Trace.** i. *v. t.* I had as lief — this good action with you (= *carry out*), I.1.102.  
 ii. *v. i.* sweetly, by a figure, — and turn, boys, III.5.21. *See* Notes.
- Train.** *n.* holding up her — (*of the dress*), *Stage dir.*, p. 88.
- Train.** *v. t.* being therein —ed (*of a horse*), V.4.68.
- Traitor.** *n.* II.2.172; a confest —, III.1.35; III.3.47; mad malicious —s, III.6.132; both —s, III.6.137; a bolder —, III.6.141; III.6.160, 167, 170.
- Traitor.** *adj.* — kinsman, III.1.30.
- Trample.** *v. t.* which the calkins did rather tell than —, V.4.56.
- Transport.** *v. t.* I was —ed with your speech (= *rapt, amazed*), I.1.55; thou should'st be so —ed (= *enraptured*), I.1.187.
- Travail.** *n.* [*Dyce, for Qo. travell*] two hours' —, *ProL*. 29.
- Travel.** *n.* [*Qo. travell, Dyce travail*] two hours' —, *ProL*. 29; indebted to your —, II.5.30.
- Travel.** *v. i.* III.6.255.
- Traveller.** *n.* the galled —, III.5.129.
- Treacherous.** *adj.* II.2.231; false, but never — (*query the difference!*), V.4.93.
- Treachery.** *n.* III.1.67; III.6.150.
- Tread.** i. *v. t.* never *trod* thy ground, III.6.141.  
 ii. *v. i.* to — upon thy dukedom, III.6.254.
- Treason.** *n.* III.6.161.
- Treasure.** *n.* I.1.114; of this war you are the —, V.3.31.
- Treble.** *adj.* — ceremony, I.4.8.
- Tree.** *n.* II.2.238; green —, II.3.39; III.5.144; the — descends, V.1.69.
- Tremble.** *v. i.* you would have —d to deny a blushing maid, III.6.204.
- Trent.** *n.* twixt Po and silver —, *ProL*. 12.
- Trespass.** *n.* the book of —es, I.1.33; the — thou hast done, III.1.77.
- Tress.** *n.* not Juno's mantle fairer than your —es, I.1.63; her careless —es, IV.1.83.
- Trial.** *n.* make — of, I.1.193; die in these just —s, III.6.105; a second —, III.6.119; this —, V.3.19.
- Tribute.** *n.* (= *contribution*), I.3.8.
- Trice.** *n.* is trussed up in a —, III.4.17.
- Trick.** *n.* a vengeance — o' the hip (*in wrestling*), II.3.71; a — that I know, IV.1.122; he has the — on't (= *method*), IV.1.130.
- Trifle.** *n.* such a —, IV.3.39.
- Trifle.** *v. i.* III.6.260.
- Trim.** *adj.* larksheels —, I.1.12.
- Trinket.** *n.* get off your —s (= *fetters*), III.3.52.
- Trip.** *v. t.* let's — it (= *let us go*), III.5.89.
- Triumph.** *v. i.* the conquered —s, the victor has the loss, V.4.113.
- Troop.** *n.* make lanes in —s aghast, I.4.19; III.6.84.
- Trot.** *v. i.* Arcite —ting the stones of Athens, V.4.55.
- Troth.** *n.* by my —, II.1.26; in —, IV.3.38.
- Trouble.** *v. t.* —d I am, I.1.77.
- True.** *adj.* sweet thyme —, I.1.6; for the sake of — gentility, I.1.25; I.1.147; I.3.42, 81; II.1.6; II.2.46, 64; if he say —, II.5.19; III.1.57; III.5.19; to say —, III.6.55; III.6.153, 180; IV.1.46, 90, 114; IV.3.49; V.1.35; — love's merit, V.1.128; innocent — heart, V.1.134; V.2.76. *Comp.* —r: I.2.79; V.1.126 (*query adj. to 'sigh' or to 'lover'*). *Superl.* —st: as I have served her —, worthiest, III.6.165; V.1.158.
- Truly.** *adv.* I.2.49; II.2.193; I deal but — (= *fairly*), II.2.205; III.6.32; IV.1.13, 107; IV.2.73.
- Trumpet.** *n.* his tongue sounds



- like a —, IV.2.113; *Stage dir.*, p. 97. *See* Cornet; *see* Wind-instrument, V.3.55.
- Truss.** *v. t.* my father, twenty to one, is —ed up in a trice, III.4.17.
- Trust.** *v. t.* 1.3.89; maids will not so easily — men again, II.6.21.
- Trusty.** *adj.* III.6.150.
- Truth.** *n.* for to say —, *Prol.* 22.
- Try.** *v. t.* a field that their crowns' titles —ed, III.1.22; — death by dozens, III.2.25; the title of a kingdom may be —ed out of itself, V.3.33.
- T. Tucke.** *actor named in stage dir.*, p. 95. T. Tucke; Curtis.
- Tumble.** *v. i.* [Hercules] —d down upon his Nemean hide, I.1.68; a ship; how't —s, III.4.5; you — with audacity and manhood (= *perform feats of tumbling*), III.5.36.
- Tune.** *n.* the — of Light-o'-love, V.2.54.
- Turkey.** *n.* jealous as a —, II.3.30.
- Turn.** *n.* sword that does good —s to the world, I.1.49; the cranks and —s of Thebes, I.2.28.
- Turn.** *i. v. t.* —ed green Neptune into purple, V.1.49; V.1.81.
- ii. *v. i.* now — we towards your comforts, I.1.234; an eddy where we should — or drown, I.2.11; sweetly by a figure trace and —, boys, III.5.21; V.1.31; he —s ye like a top, V.2.50.
- Turret.** *n.* the masoned —s, V.1.55.
- Tusk.** *n.* *See* Scythe-tusked.
- Tutor.** *v. t.* apes can — us, I.2.43.
- Twain.** *adj.* cleaving his conscience into —, I.3.46; Arcite is the lower of the —, II.1.50; give us but a tree or —, III.5.144.
- Twang.** *n.* a sudden — of instruments, *Stage dir.*, p. 90.
- \*Tween.** *prep.* true love — maid and maid, I.3.81; — her mind and eye, IV.3.69; V.4.76.
- Twelve.** *adj.* III.6.176.
- Twenty.** *adj.* — to one, II.3.14; III.4.17; III.5.148; IV.1.106, 136; IV.2.116; V.2.7, 51, 65, 109.
- Twice.** *adv.* kissed her —, V.2.6.
- Twin.** *n.* his mind, nurse equal to these so-differing —s, I.3.33; [*Qo.* twyns] like —s of honour, II.2.18.
- Twin.** *v. t.* her —ning [*Qo.* twyn-ing] cherries (*lips*), I.1.178; our fortunes were —ned [*Qo.* twyn'd] together, II.2.64.
- Twine.** *See* Thick-twined, IV.2.104.
- Twinkle.** *v. i.* thy —ing eyes, III.5.117.
- \*Twixt.** *prep.* — Po and silver Trent, *Prol.* 12.
- Two.** *adj.* — hours' travel, *Prol.* 29; I.3.35; II.1.18; II.2.18, 53, 58, 64, 65, 112; III.1.20; III.2.26; III.3.19, 36, 49; III.4.10; III.5.62; III.6.3, 30, 218, 248; IV.1.12, 127, 137; IV.2.3, 53, 62, 66, 145; V.1.152, 158; V.2.64; [*Qo.* too], V.2.84; V.3.39, 83, 124, 146; V.4.124.
- Tyranny.** *n.* torrents whose roaring — and power, I.3.38.
- Tyrannous.** *adj.* love should be so —, IV.2.146.
- Tyrant.** *n.* unbounded —, I.2.63; fiercest —, V.1.78.
- Umpire.** *n.* Theseus cannot be — to himself, I.3.45.
- Unarmed.** *adj.* they have a sense to tell a man —, III.2.16. *See* Sense.
- Unberried.** *adj.* III.6.171.
- Unblest.** *adj.* (= *despised*), I.2.53.
- Unborn.** *adj.* [*Qo.* unborn] lovers yet —, III.6.283.
- Unbounded.** *adj.* a most — tyrant, I.2.63.
- Unbroken.** *adj.* V.4.87.
- Uncandy.** *v. t.* oh my petition was set down in ice, which by hot

- grief —ed, melts into drops; so sorrow, wanting form, is pressed with deeper matter, I.1.107. *See* Notes.
- Unclasp.** *v. t.* — thy mystery, V. 1.172.
- Uncle.** *n.* I.2.62.
- Unconsidered.** *adj.* th' — soldier, I.2.31.
- Under.** *adj.* the — world, IV.2.24.
- Under.** *prep.* cry from — ground, *Prol.* 18; — the shadow of his sword, I.1.92; I.1.231; ships — sail, II.2.12; II.2.20; II.3.39; III.4.6; III.6.76; IV.2.130; V. 4.10.
- Understand.** *v. t.* I.3.15; III.5.10; IV.3.54.
- Understanding.** *n.* marrow of my —, III.5.6; want the — where to use it, III.6.216.
- Undertake.** *v. t.* all the fair hopes of what he —s, IV.2.99.
- Undertaker.** *n.* press you forth our —, I.1.74. *See* Notes.
- Undo.** *v. t.* —ne, I.3.44; our folly has —ne us, III.6.107; she's done, and —ne in an hour. IV.1.124; not to — with thunder, IV. 2.105.
- Unearthed.** *adj.* (= *unburied*; or perhaps '*dug up*'), V.1.52.
- Unfeared.** *adj.* make Heaven —, I.2.64.
- Unfeignedly.** *adv.* stood — on the same terms (= *really*), IV.3.60.
- Unfriended.** *adj.* to comfort this —, this miserable prince (= *deprived of his friend*), V.3.141.
- Ungrateful.** *adj.* held — to her goodness, IV.1.22.
- Unhappy.** *adj.* my — beauty, IV. 2.64.
- Unhardened.** *adj.* yet — in the crimes of nature, I.2.2.
- Unjust.** *adj.* II.2.194.
- Unjustly.** *adv.* III.1.112.
- Unkind.** *adj.* our kind air, to them — (= *unnatural*), I.4.38.
- Unless.** *adv.* I.2.43, 79; III.5.49.
- Unlike.** *adj.* though much —, I.1. 186; II.2.192.
- Unmanly.** *adj.* II.6.19.
- Unmarried.** *adj.* II.2.29.
- Unpanged.** *adj.* — judgment (= *calm, dispassionate*), I.1.169.
- Unplucked.** *adj.* a virgin flower must grow alone, —, V.1.168.
- Unreasoned.** *adj.* leave that — (= *unconsidered*), I.2.98.
- Unseasonably.** *adv.* we come —, I.1.168.
- Unsentenced.** *adj.* go to it —, V. 1.157.
- Unsettle.** *v. i.* let not my sense — (= *become deranged*), III.2.29; yet quaking and —, V.3.106.
- Unspotted.** *adj.* my — youth, IV. 2.59.
- Until.** *adv.* I.2.51.
- Untimely.** *adv.* neither for my sake should fall —, IV.2.69.
- Unto.** *prep.* I.1.75; III.5.4, 14; III.6.173; V.1.76, 79, 133; V. 4.125.
- Unwappered.** *adj.* young and —, not halting under crimes, V.4.10. *See* Notes.
- Unwept.** *adj.* ill old men, —, II.2. 109.
- Unworthy.** *adj.* II.2.194; II.5.40.
- Up.** *adv.* stand —, I.1.35, 109, 205; your advice is cried — with example, I.2.13; laid —, II.2.6; II.3.33; pack —, II.6.32; III.1. 71; III.4.10, 17; III.5.17, 23, 124; III.6.76; 'tis — (= *the anchor is weighed*), IV.1.145; IV.1.148; IV.2.1, 17; — to the navel, IV.3.36, 37; V.2.98.
- Upbraiding.** *n.* [*Qo.* obbraidings] —s, III.6.32.
- Uphold.** *v. t.* born to — Creation in that honour, I.1.82.
- Upon.** *prep.* I.1.68, 126, 179, 216; to be fond — another's way of speech, I.2.46; — thy head, I.4. 3; assure — my daughter, II.1. 7; — the old business, II.1.16; II.2.57, 130; if thou once think

- her, II.2.175; — his oath and life, II.2.248; — this kingdom, II.2.249; II.3.7, 11, 78; out — it, II.4.5; — my soul, II.5.16; II.5.52; dream'st — my fortune, III.1.24; III.1.117, 120; III.3.42; III.5.6, 97, 111, 118; III.6.29, 75, 122, 214, 254, 308; IV.1.8; IV.3.12, 66, 69; V.1.90, 101; done any good — her (= *to*), V.2.1; V.3.49, 73; V.4.49. See *Spoorn*, III.4.9.
- Urge.** *v. t.* — it home, III.6.233.
- Urn.** *n.* —s and odours (= *funeral urns*), I.5.1.
- Urn.** *v. t.* to — their ashes (= *urn*), I.1.44.
- Usage.** *n.* — like to princes, III.6.306.
- Use.** *n.* all valiant —s, II.2.51; worthy —s of this place, II.2.69; to those gentle —s (= *accomplishments*), II.5.7.
- Use.** *v. t.* unto the helmeted Bel-lona — them, I.1.75; like men — 'em, I.4.28; — thy freedom, II.2.200; better than your rank I'll — you, II.5.43; II.6.29, 30; III.1.60; III.6.59, 64; love has —d you kindly, III.6.67; want the understanding when to — it, III.6.216; IV.2.151.
- Usurer.** *n.* a caldron of lead and —'s grease, IV.3.31.
- Utter.** *v. t.* III.5.14; as learned authors —, III.5.40; what stuff she —s, V.2.68.
- Utterly.** *adv.* IV.2.46.
- Vagary.** *n.* in a most extravagant —, IV.3.64.
- Vain.** *n.* 't is in —, *Epil.* 9.
- Vain.** *adj.* these — parleys, III.3.10.
- Vainly.** *adv.* III.5.41; III.6.79.
- Valerius.** *pr. n.* I.2.83.
- Valiant.** *adj.* — uses, II.2.51; III.1.66; III.6.175; — and strong-hearted enemies, V.1.8.
- Valour.** *n.* III.6.74; the lightning of your —, III.6.85; III.6.199; a settled —, IV.2.100; kindle their — at your eyes, V.3.30.
- Value.** *n.* —'s shortness, V.3.88 (*see Notes and Addenda*); as I do rate your —, V.3.114.
- Vanish.** *v. i.* *Stage dir.*, pp. 89, 90.
- Vanity.** *n.* II.2.101.
- Vantage.** *n.* there you have a — o'er me, III.1.122.
- Vapour.** *n.* —s, sighs, darken the day (*perhaps in its medical sense of melancholy depression*), I.5.2.
- Vassal.** *n.* force the king to be his —'s —, V.1.84.
- Vast.** *adj.* whose havoc in — field, V.1.51.
- Vault.** *n.* for our crowned heads we have no roof save this, which is the lion's, and the bear's, and — to everything, I.1.54.
- Vengeance.** *n.* my — and revenge, I.1.58; II.3.5.
- Vengeance.** *adj.* (?) this fellow has a — trick o' the hip (*vulg. = is a clever wrestler*), II.3.71.
- Venison.** *n.* —. 'Tis a lusty meat, III.3.27.
- Venture.** *i. v. t.* the blood we —, I.2.109.  
ii. *v. i.* II.3.73, 79; II.4.30; II.6.2, 33; V.2.78.
- Venus.** *n.* V.1.74; V.4.45, 105.
- Ver.** *n.* Primrose, first-born child of — (= *Spring*), I.1.7.
- Verily.** *adv.* V.4.33.
- Verity.** *n.* III.5.105.
- Very.** *adj.* I.4.29; the — emblem of a maid, II.2.137; III.1.41; IV.1.37; IV.2.78; V.1.7; that — time, V.3.64.
- Very.** *adv.* III.4.1, 11; III.5.5; III.6.67, 70, 72; IV.1.36, 41, 110; IV.3.38; V.2.2, 13, 36, 46, 48; a — fair hand, V.2.58; V.2.61; even — here, V.4.99.
- Vessel.** *n.* must these —s port, V.1.29.
- Vestal.** *adj.* my last of — office, V.1.150.



- Vial**. *n.* sacred —s filled with tears, I.5.5.
- Viaud**. *n.* wholesome —s, III.1.84.
- Victor**. *n.* II.1.31; the —'s meed, V.3.16; V.4.16; his —'s wreath, V.4.79; the conquered triumphs, the — has the loss, V.4.114.
- Victory**. *n.* drunk with his —, I.1.158; and in his rolling eyes sits —, IV.2.108; gives —, V.1.72; the — of this question, V.1.177.
- Victual**. *n.* [*Qo.* vittails] how tastes your —s, III.3.24.
- Videlicet**. *Lat.* V.2.35.
- View**. *n.* a mark worth a god's — (= *observation*), I.4.21.
- View**. *v. t.* I.4.5.
- Vigour**. *n.* sentencing for aye their — dumb, I.1.195.
- Vile**. *adj.* I.2.78.
- Villager**. *n.* III.5.104.
- Villain**. *n.* a branded —, II.2.202; nor worth the name of —, III.1.42; a — fit to lie unburied, III.6.171; III.6.264.
- Villainy**. *n.* I.2.64.
- Vine**. *n.* II.2.43.
- Virgin**. *n.* this blushing —, II.2.260; this bright young —, II.5.35; my —'s faith is fled me, IV.2.46; look on thy —, V.1.145.
- Virgin**. *adj.* a — flower, V.1.167.
- Virginal**. *n.* what did she there? Play o' the —s, III.3.34.
- Virginity**. *n.* clear —, I.1.31.
- Virtue**. *n.* I.2.35; II.2.107; his —, like a hidden sun, breaks through his baser garments, II.5.23; II.5.36; III.6.81; —s infinite, III.6.199; having these —s (= *accomplishments*), V.2.55.
- Virtuous**. *adj.* a — greatness, II.2.259; III.6.152; a deed so —, III.6.193.
- Visage**. *n.* mercy and manly courage are bedfellows in 's —, V.3.44; —s of bridegrooms, V.4.127.
- Visaged**. *adj.* Arcite is gently —, V.3.41.
- Visit**. *v. t.* III.3.2; I'll go —'em, IV.2.152; V.2.42.
- Visitate**. *v. t.* the —ing sun (*see* Notes), I.1.146.
- Voice**. *n.* I have no —, V.2.15. *See* **Smallness**, IV.1.56.
- Void**. *adj.* these hands, — of appointment, III.1.40; *Superl.* the —est of honour [*Qo.* voydes], III.1.36.
- Voluble**. *adj.* — chance, I.2.67.
- Vouch**. *v. t.* Mars hath —ed his oracle, V.4.107.
- Vouchsafe**. *v. t.* V.1.143.
- Vow**. *n.* III.6.228, 247.
- Vow**. *v. t.* —ed her maidenhead, II.4.13; seal my —ed faith, II.5.39; thy —ed soldier, V.1.95; V.1.125.
- Voydes**. *See* **Void**, III.1.36.
- Wagging**. *n.* the — of a wanton leg, II.2.15 (= *moving*).
- Wait**. *v. i.* II.5.51 (= *attend*).
- Wake**. *v. t.* what hath —d us from our dream, V.4.48.
- Walk**. *v. i.* what strange ruins may we perceive —ing (= *extant*) in Thebes, I.2.15; II.1.149.
- Wander**. *v. i.* II.2.76.
- Want**. *n.* peril and — contending (*sc.* against), I.3.37; my —s, III.6.7.
- Want**. *i. v. t.* so sorrow, —ing form, is pressed with deeper matter, I.1.108; II.5.55; III.3.52; see what 's —ing, III.5.33; here's a woman —ing (= *missing*), III.5.38; which cannot — due mercy (= *lack*), III.6.209, 216; let no due be —ing, V.1.5.
- ii. v. i.** the feast's solemnity shall — till your return [*Seward* wait] (= *be wanting, not take place*), I.1.222; there shall — no bravery, IV.2.154.
- Wanton**. *adj.* wagging of a — leg (= *idle*), II.2.15; you've made me . . . almost — with my captivity (*perh. a verb?*), II.2.96;



- thou art —, II.2.147; II.2.239; make the wild rocks — (*perh. a verb*), II.3.17; — Ganymede, IV.2.15; white, not — (*sc. hair = effeminate*), IV.2.124; — boys (*= playful*), V.1.86; — (*= lascivious*) sound, V.1.148.
- Wanton.** *v. i.* perhaps occurs, II.2.96; II.3.17. *See* Wanton, *adj.*
- Wapper.** *See* Unwappered, V.4.10.
- War.** *n.* flaming — doth scorch, I.1.91; I.1.133, (*var. was*) 172; strife or —, I.2.26; is't said this —s afoot, I.2.104; I.3.25; you were at —s, I.3.51; (*= battle*), I.4.17; the chance of —, II.2.3; red-eyed god of —, II.2.21; hand of —, II.2.87; brave gallants of —, III.5.61; III.6.203; sing the —s of Theseus, IV.1.132; (*= trial of arms, tourney*), V.3.30.
- Ward.** *n.* omit a — or forfeit an offence (*fencing term = guard*), V.3.63.
- Warlike.** *adj.* the livery of the — maid, IV.2.106 (*sc. Diana*).
- Warm.** *v. t.* — it to some pity, I.1.128.
- Warp.** *v. t.* thy best props are —ed, III.2.32.
- Warrant.** *v. t.* —ing moonlight (*= sanctioning*), I.1.177; I — her, III.5.75; I — you, III.6.62; I'll — thee, III.6.67; i'll — ye, IV.1.135; I'll — you, V.2.104.
- Wash.** *v. t.* —ed a tile, III.5.40. *See* Notes.
- Waste.** *v. t.* our richest balms, rather than niggard, —, I.4.32.
- Watch.** *v. i.* —ing, III.4.6; she'd — with me tonight, V.2.9.
- Water.** *n.* swim in this deep —, *Prol.* 25; II.4.22; III.2.27; III.4.6; feeds the lake with —s, IV.1.87; banks can go to law with —s that drift winds force to raging, V.3.99. *See* Freshwater, IV.1.85.
- Water.** *v. t.* to — their intertangled roots of love, I.3.58.
- Way.** *n.* ne'er yet went I so willing, —, I.1.104; — of speech (*= manner*), I.2.47; (*= road*) I.5.13; a thousand differing —s to one sure end, I.5.14; the —s of honour, II.2.73; thousand —s, II.2.257; II.3.22; II.5.21; lead the —, II.5.59; that — he takes, II.6.17, 18; to clear his own —, III.1.56; III.2.32, 33; go thy —s, III.5.58, 95; invent a — safer than banishment (*= method*), III.6.217; V.1.123; V.2.14, 15; in the — of cure, but first . . . i' the — of honesty, V.2.19, 22; that — I spoke of, viz. the — of flesh, V.2.34; the — of honesty, V.2.70; preserve her in this — (*= state*), V.2.106; any —, *Epil.* 14.
- We.** *pron.* Our (*adj.*), Ours (*pron.*), Us (*pron.*), *Prol.* 9, 12, 15, 26, 27, 31, 32; I.1.22, 32, 39, 43, 47, 49, 50, 52, 66, 74, 91, *et passim*. Under the shadow of his sword may cool us (*= ourselves*), I.1.92; we have been soldiers (? *regal we = I*), I.3.18; we 'lieve [*Qo.* leave. *See* Notes], I.4.22; yes, marry, will we, V.2.111.
- Weak.** *adj.* — as we are, *Prol.* 24; I.3.86; III.6.6, 125. *Comp.* —er: Hercules our kinsman, then —er than your eyes, I.1.67.
- Weaken.** *v. t.* which some well say, —s his price (*= lowers*), V.4.52.
- Weakness.** *n.* I.2.12.
- Wealthy.** *adj.* — ears (*sc. of corn*), II.3.78.
- Weapon.** *n.* III.2.13; a sharp — in a soft sheath, V.3.42.
- Wear.** *n.* her careless — [*Qo.* were], I.3.73.
- Wear.** *v. t.* wore [*Qo.* were], II.2.21; I have worn a lighter, III.6.56; that thou wor'st that day, III.6.71; —s a well-steeled axe, IV.2.115; —s the winner's oak, IV.2.137; I wore thy picture, V.3.73; — the garland, V.3.130. *See* Outwear, I.3.44.
- Weary.** *adj.* — of this world's light, I.1.143; III.6.99.

- Weave.** *v. t.* tied, —d, entangled, I.3.42.
- Weaver.** *n.* the —s, II.3.49. (*See Note.*)
- Wed.** *v. t.* the day that he should — you, I.1.60; my grave shall — me, III.6.284.
- Wedding.** *n.* keep our — there, V.2.76; perfume me finely gainst the —, V.2.89.
- Wedding.** *adj.* my — gown, IV.1.109.
- Wedlock.** *n.* this daring deed of fate in —, I.1.165.
- Weed.** *n.* scars and bare —s (= *ragged clothes*), I.2.15.
- Week.** *n.* the whole — 's not fair, if any day it rain, III.1.65; III.6.5.
- Weep.** *i. v. t.* the brine they *wept*, I.3.22; — our banishments, II.2.37; — not, till they — blood, IV.2.148.
- ii. *v. i.* I.1.95; I.3.18; III.6.308; IV.1.92; their —ing mothers, IV.2.4; IV.2.154; to call the fiercest tyrant from his rage, and — unto a girl [*Seward* to weep: *perhaps rightly*], V.1.79.
- Weigh.** *v. t.* come, — (*sc.* anchor), my hearts, cheerily, IV.1.144. *See O'erweigh*, V.4.19.
- Weight.** *n.* of mickle — (= *importance*), III.5.118; fainting under the — [*Qo.* waight] of arms, IV.2.130.
- Welcome.** *adj.* IV.1.18.
- Welcome.** *v. t.* that —s to their cost the galled traveller, III.5.128.
- Well.** *adj.* not — (= *unwell*), IV.1.45; they're — (= *good*), IV.2.121.
- Well.** *adv.* sound and —, *Prol.* 3; I.3.79; II.1.11, 37; II.2.153, 156; II.3.69, 76; II.5.11, 24, 42, 51; II.6.23; III.1.20, 58, 69; III.3.16, 31; III.6.24, 45, 49, 73, 86, 128, 131, 140; IV.1.15, 34, 36, 44, 57; IV.2.89; IV.5.63, 98; V.1.30, 166; V.2.7, 9, 36, 61; V.3.13, 34; V.4.26, 27, 102, 105. Fare —, II.2.178; II.6.37; III.1.98, 123. *See Farewell*; and the words following.
- Well-disposed.** *adj.* being so few and — (= *choice*; *having good dispositions*), IV.2.122.
- Well-found.** *adj.* such a — wonder as thy worth, II.5.27.
- Well-nigh.** *adv.* now — morning, III.2.2.
- Well-steeled.** *adj.* our — darts, II.2.51; a — axe, IV.2.115 (*both by Fletcher*).
- Wellwiller.** *n.* thy poor — (= *wellwisher*), III.5.116.
- Wench.** *n.* a good —, II.2.124, 127, 130; II.3.35, 39; II.4.6, 12; II.6.15; III.3.28; a pretty brown —, III.3.39; III.5.159; IV.1.116; IV.2.148, 154; V.2.73, 74; a young handsome —, *Epil.* 6.
- Were.** *See Wear*, I.3.73; IV.2.10.
- West.** *adj.* — wind, II.2.138.
- Wet.** *n.* knows neither — nor dry, I.1.121.
- What.** *interr. pron. or adj.* —'s your request? I.1.38; I.1.179; — care for what thou feel'st not, I.1.180; I.2.13, 44, 55, 89, 95, 112; — are those? I.4.13; I.4.21; II.2.76, 105, 119, 133, 154; II.3.37, 61, 67; II.4.29, 31; II.5.5, 9, 25; III.2.8, 9; III.3.27, 34; III.5.2, 52, 96; III.6.132, 157, 233, 252, 271, 288; — of her, IV.1.42; IV.1.71, 149; IV.2.40, 58, 147; IV.3.50, 53; V.2.55, 64, 75, 99; V.3.66; V.4.15, 47; *Epil.* 10. *Used as an exclamation independently or adjectively*; — happiness, II.3.13; II.4.6, 18, 19; II.6.9; III.1.30; IV.1.94; IV.2.7, 12, 13, 18, 19; — a bold gravity, IV.2.41; IV.2.52; IV.3.14; V.1.89; V.2.68; V.3.59; V.4.132.
- What.** *rel. pron. or adj.* — woman I may stead that is distrest doth bind me to her, I.1.36; I.1.100, 134; think — beds our slain kings have. — griefs our beds, I.1.

- 140; what care for — thou feel'st not, I.1.180; I.1.181, 185; I.2.70; I'll offer to her — I shall be advised she likes, I.3.16; know not — nor why, I.3.62; I.3.64, 65; I.4.39; be it — it will, II.1.7; II.1.10, 46; II.2.36, 39, 97, 157, 212, 278; II.3.17; ye know — wenches, II.3.39; II.3.58; II.5.54; II.6.22, 29; III.1.121; III.2.37; III.5.33, 83; and — to come shall threaten me, III.6.124; III.6.127, 140, 144; IV.1.48; IV.2.72, 73, 97, 99; and — broken piece of matter soe'er she's about, IV.3.5; learn — maids have, IV.3.78; IV.3.83; V.1.114, 163; V.2.5; she knew — hour my fit would take me, V.2.10; V.3.8, 112, 113; V.4.61, 64, 66, 132, 133.
- Whatever.** *indef. pron. or adj.* II.5.3, 33; V.2.33.
- Wheaten.** *adj.* your — wreath was then nor thrashed nor blasted (= *marriage wreath*), I.1.64; my — garland, V.1.159; — wreath, *Stage dir.*, p. 88.
- When.** *conj. (sometimes adv.)* I.1.98, 147, 168, 175, 177; I.2.21, 47, 85, 97, 115; I.3.19, 50, 51, 53; I.4.22, 26; II.1.11, 12, 41; II.2.138, 140, 218, 227, 251; II.4.7, 21; II.5.39; II.6.27; III.1.67, 87, 106; III.2.21, 28; III.3.40; III.5.37, 56; III.6.4, 11, 28, 74, 82, 307; IV.1.33, 35, 57, 96, 150; IV.2.86, 100, 112, 131, 132, 135, 136; V.1.65; V.2.5, 11, 87; V.3.103; V.4.44, 73, 74.
- Whence.** *conj.* IV.2.71; V.4.75.
- Where.** *adv. (sometimes conj.)* I.1.213; I.2.11, 32, 38, 39, 40, 46, 90; I.3.29, 40, 71; I.4.48; I.5.16; II.2.7, 8, 92, 98, 106, 246; II.3.52, 64, 83; II.6.4, 33; III.2.17; III.4.4; III.5.7, 23, 25, 28, 31, 33; III.6.54, 160; IV.1.32, 83, 101, 109, 141, 142, 147, 148; IV.2.61, 133; IV.3.8, 18, 65; V.1.29, 44; V.3.105, 139.
- Wherever.** *adv.* III.6.255.
- Wherefore.** *adv.* III.5.7.
- Whereon.** *adv.* I.3.77; V.3.5. *See On.*
- Whereto.** *adv.* — he'll infuse power, I.1.73; that — I am going, I.1.103; I.1.171; — she's guilty, V.3.28.
- Whether.** *distrib. pron. and —*, before us that are here (= *whichever of the two*), III.6.293; if my brother now had asked me — I loved, I had run mad for Arcite, IV.2.48.
- Whether.** *conj.* who knows — my brows may not be girt with garlands, II.3.81; IV.1.10.
- Which.** *rel. pron.* I.1.53, 57, 107, 149, 190, 198, 202, 207, 224; I.2.18, 45, 61, 108, 110; I.3.25, 47, 53, 79; I.4.10, 43; II.2.29, 54; the —, III.1.49; (*after such*) III.1.63; III.1.71, 79; III.5.119; III.6.149, 206, 209; IV.1.20, 29; IV.2.80, 126, 129, 132; IV.3.51, 74, 82, 88; V.1.20, 37, 71, 127, 133, 142, 144, 147, 156; V.3.8, 13, 21, 22, 64, 138; V.4.51, 53, 55, 110, 135.
- Which.** *interr. pron.* III.2.32.
- While.** *adv.* I [saw 'em] a —, IV.2.70; V.4.97.
- While.** *conj.* II.1.1; II.5.54.
- Whilst.** *conj.* I.1.163; II.2.14, 49, 61.
- Whine.** *v. i.* piglike he —s, V.4.69.
- Whipstock.** *n.* Phœbus, when he broke his —, I.2.86.
- Whisper.** *n.* turn th' alarm to —s, V.1.81.
- Whisper.** *v. i.* Phœbus, when he broke his whipstock, but —ed to the loudness of his fury, I.2.87.
- Whistle.** *n.* where's your —, master, IV.1.147.
- Whistle.** *v. i.* we may go —, III.5.39.
- White.** *adj.* thy arm as strong as it is —, I.1.80; III.4.22; III.5.26; — bread, III.5.80; IV.2.107; — as chaste, V.1.139; not a hair-worth of —, V.4.51. *See Wanton-white*, IV.2.124.



**White-haired.** *adj.* IV.2.123.

**Whither.** *adv.* II.3.60; III.5.64.

**Who.** *rel. pron.* **Whose, Whom,** *Prol.* 4; I.1.29, 39, 40, *who* [*Qo. whom*] now I know hast, I.1.87; I.1.88, 89, 91, 120; I.2.16, 19, 43, 67, 90, 92; our fate, *who* hath bounded our last minute, I.2.103; I.2.107; I.3.2, 12, 38, 52, 93; I.4.4, 5; III.1.55; III.2.15; III.5.114, 124; III.6.31, 147, 176; *who* (= *whosoever*) wins, I'll settle here, — loses, III.6.307, 308; IV.1.20, 21, 61; V.1.35, 50, 51, 52, 53, 73; *who* hast power, V.1.77; V.1.86, 108, 118, 131, 140, 147; *who* . . . which (*both with same anteced.* darkness), V.3.23; V.3.38; V.4.14, 21, 124; in *whose* end (*anteced.* a day or two), V.4.126; V.4.128. *Ellipsis of relative is frequent.*

**Who.** *interr. pron.* I.2.19; II.2.159, 167; II.3.80; IV.2.33, 70; V.4.21.

**Whole.** *adj.* to blast — armies, II.2.25; III.1.65; a — million of cutpurses, IV.3.31.

**Wholesome.** *adj.* — viands, III.1.84.

**Whoobub.** *n.* [*Qo.*] the — will be all o'er the prison, II.6.35.

**Whoop.** *v. i.* if I —ed, III.2.9 (= *should*).

**Whore.** *n.* to be his — is witless (*see Hopeless*), II.4.5.

**Whosoever.** *indef. rel. pron.* IV.2.154.

**Why.** *adv. i. interrog.* I.2.49; II.2.125, 136, 184, 191, 227, 231, 267; II.3.61; II.4.1; III.2.12; III.5.78; III.6.108, 169; IV.1.32, 51; V.2.30, 88.

ii. *conjunctive*: I.2.53; know not what nor —, I.3.62; — so, I know not; V.3.74; V.3.102.

iii. *argumentative*: I.1.170; II.3.27; IV.1.26; V.3.29.

iv. *exclamatory*: I.3.76; II.2.2; II.2.131; —, what's the matter, II.2.133; III.5.12; —, Timothy,

III.5.24; V.1.33; V.2.74; V.3.85.

**Wicked.** *adj.* II.3.6.

**Wide.** *adj.* you are — (*sc.* of the mark = *mistaken*), III.3.45; III.4.23.

**Widow.** *n.* I.1.74; let us be —s to our woes, I.1.166; —s' cries, I.2.81.

**Wife.** *n.* II.2.80, 89, 232; II.3.30; V.1.101. *See Citywife*, IV.3.44.

**Wild.** *adj.* the — air, I.5.6; — rocks, II.3.17; — woods . . . — consciences, III.3.23, 24.

**Wildfire.** *n.* (*Dyce and Skeat conj. for fire*), III.5.52.

**Will.** *n.* sickness in —, I.4.44; woo the —s of men, II.2.101; express — (= *definitive resolve*), III.6.229; to seal his — with (= *determination*), IV.2.87; thine own —, V.1.171; but that your —s have said it, it must be so, V.3.140; his power could give his —, V.4.67.

**Will.** i. *v. t.* I *would* 'em dead, I.4.35; I *would* I were, II.1.6; II.2.236; II.4.27; III.4.12; III.6.20; IV.1.140; IV.2.57.

ii. *v. i.* a —ing man dies sleeping, II.2.68; II.6.29; to those that *would* and cannot, a rejoicer, V.1.121; even when you — (= *wish*), V.2.87.

**Will.** *v. aux.* how — it shake, *Prol.* 17; I.1.43; you — all devour, I.1.70; he 'll infuse, I.1.73; I.1.101; I'll [*Qo. lle*] speak anon, I.1.106; I.1.114, 115, 122, 132; II.2.123; II.5.14; III.2.3; — 't [*Qo. wilt*], III.6.35; Coz, I *would* (*sc.* destroy), V.1.23; I'd (*contraction for I would*), V.2.5; if she — be honest (*emphatic*), V.2.22; by this fair hand — I, V.2.86; your sister — (*sc.* go) no further, V.3.11; I should and *would* die too, V.3.144, &c.

**Willer.** *See Wellwiller*, III.5.116.

**Willing.** *adv.* never yet went I so — way (= *willingly*), I.1.104.



**Willow.** *interj.* (*refrain of song*), IV.1.80.

**Win.** *v. t.* I.2.18, 70; II.2.16, 256; you've *won* it, II.5.59; you have *won*, II.5.61; III.6.99; who —s, III.6. 307; IV.2.154; V.3.57; he has *won*, V.3.68, 131.

**Wind.** *n.* but infects the —s with stench of our slain lords, I.1.46; small —s shake him (= *trifles excite him*), I.2.88; east —, II.2.13; west —, II.2.138; rude — never hurt thee, II.2.277; blow — in the breech on us (= *pant behind us in the race*), II.3.47, 78; before the —, III.4.9; the — is fair, IV.1.145; waters that drift —s force to raging, V.3.100.

**Wind.** *adj.* — instruments, V.3.95.

**Wind-fanned.** *adj.* — snow, V.1.140.

**Window.** *n.* II.2.214, 240; the —s are too open, II.2.264, 276; II.3.9.

**Wine.** *n.* the very lees of such . . . exceed the — of others, I.4.30; III.3.28; she swore by — and bread (*the sacramental elements*), III.5.47.

**Wing.** *n.* the left — of the enemy, III.6.75; clap their —s, IV.2.23; black and shining, like ravens' —s, IV.2.84.

**Wink.** *v. t.* if I were there I'd — (= *shut my eyes*), V.3.18.

**Winner.** *n.* the —'s oak (= *garland*), IV.2.137.

**Winning.** *n.* is this —, V.3.138.

**Winter.** *n.* dead cold —, II.2.45; a man of eighty —s, V.1.108.

**Wisdom.** *n.* III.6.242.

**Wise.** *adj.* II.5.64; III.6.222; a — course, IV.1.126; a — man, IV.1.138; — nature, IV.2.7.

**Wish.** *n.* repeat my —es, I.3.1; my —es, II.2.171; II.5.31; III.6.80; I grant your —, III.6.180; V.1.17; have their good —es, V.4.6.

**Wish.** *v. t.* as you — your womb may thrive with fair ones, I.1.27;

— great Juno would resume, I.2.21; I.3.3; that may be —ed upon thy head, I.4.3; could — myself a sigh, II.1.42; II.2.17; II.3.76; III.1.95; III.6.20, 40, 99; IV.2.114, 143; — we to be snails (= *very slow*), V.1.42; could — their office to any, V.3.35.

**Wit.** *n.* extremity, that sharpens sundry —s, makes me a fool, I.1.118; reason or — or safety, II.6.12; the libels read of liberal —s, V.1.102.

**Witch.** *n.* marry a leprous —, IV.3.40.

**With.** *prep.* I.1.9, 23, 27, 47; transported — (= *by*) your speech, I.1.55; I.1.61, 79, 86, 102, 105, 109, 142, 150, 154, 158, 183, 202, 212, 228; I.2.13, 34, 53, 73, 74, 97, 107; I.3.34, 42, 43; once — a time, I.3.50; lookt pale — parting, I.3.53; I.3.57, 94; I.4.8, 18; I.5.5, 12; II.1.32; II.2.26, 31, 44, 47, 51, 61, 85, 97, 104, 140, 152, 169, 177, 185, 221; II.3.27, 81; II.5.36; II.6.29, 34; III.1.11, 19, 39, 52, 55, 56, 83, 101, 102; III.3.7, 11, 33, 43; III.4.10; III.5.4, 28, 37, 50, 61, 112, 117, 129, 132, 139; III.6.2, 7, 9, 15, 37, 39, 51, 103, 194, 214, 222, 243, 280, 282, 292; IV.1.54, 73, 74, 127, 146, 150; IV.2.8, 16, 87; IV.5.35; V.1.15; V.4.135, etc.

**Withal.** *prep.* something to paint your pole —, III.5.153; farces every business —, IV.3.7.

**Wither.** *v. i.* the graces of our youths must —, II.2.27.

**Within.** *prep.* II.6.28, 35; III.6.291; IV.2.81; V.2.4, 104; V.3.80.

**Without.** *prep.* I.3.15; I.4.44; II.2.93; III.1.95; III.5.34, 156; III.6.32, 135; IV.2.97; IV.3.4; V.2.93; V.4.5.

**Witless.** *adj.* fan from me the — chaff of, *Prol.* 19. See **Hopeless**, II.4.5.

**Woe.** *n.* I.1.110; —s, I.1.166; II.

- 2.42; cry — worth me, III.6.249.
- Woful.** *adj.* a — and a piteous nullity, III.5.55.
- Wolf.** *n.* III.2.4; I reck not if the — ves would jaw me, III.2.7, 10.
- Woman.** *n.* I.1.36; speak't in a —'s key, I.1.94; *women* that have sod their infants, I.3.20; II.2.75, 165; II.4.9; a wondrous handsome —, II.5.20; II.5.63; III.3.15; III.5.25, 38; an eel and —, III.5.48; a dainty mad —, III.5.72; III.5.76, 77; I will be — and have pity, III.6.191; III.6.194, 206; you're a right —, sister, III.6.215; III.6.250; IV.1.59; a mortal —, IV.2.10; —'s fancy, IV.2.33; IV.2.36, 128; V.1.106, 107; there were no — worth so composed a man, V.3.85; V.3.142.
- Womb.** *n.* as you wish your — may thrive with fair ones, I.1.27.
- Wonder.** *n.* such a well-found —, II.5.27.
- Wonder.** *v. i.* II.2.133.
- Wondrous.** *adj.* — fair, II.2.148; II.2.151; a — handsome woman, II.5.20.
- Woo.** *v. t.* II.2.76; — the wills of men, II.2.101; III.6.156.
- Wood.** *n.* —s, II.3.50, 53; Dian's —, II.5.51; II.6.3; III.1.10; the wild —s, III.3.23; III.3.40; IV.1.63; direct your course to the —, IV.1.142; a fair — (*see* Notes), IV.1.149.
- Word.** *n.* II.5.29; III.1.104, 116; never a —, III.4.18; hold thy —, Theseus, III.6.136 (= *promise*), III.6.236; the —s she sung, IV.1.63; thy last —s, V.4.88.
- Work.** *n.* my famed —s, *Prol.* 20; I.1.150; to get the soldier —, I.2.23; a noble — in hand, V.1.6.
- Work.** *v. t.* — such flowers in silk, II.2.127.
- World.** *n.* sword that does good turns to the —, I.1.49; the ear o' the —, I.1.134; this —'s light, I.1.143; the tongue o' the —, I.1.227; this —'s a city full of straying streets, I.5.15; all the — in their chamber, II.1.23; II.2.40, 103; this garden has a — of pleasures in 't, II.2.118; II.5.28; III.1.10; darkness lord o' the —, III.2.4; III.4.13, 23; III.6.11, 115, 229; the under — (= *earth*), IV.2.24; another — and a better, IV.3.5; the next —, IV.3.12; V.1.65; whose chase is this —, V.1.131; end o' the —, V.2.72; V.3.118; the —'s joy, V.4.91.
- Worse.** *adj.* — men, II.2.72; 'tis — to me than begging, IV.1.119; IV.3.10.
- Worst.** *adj.* the — is death, II.3.18; have at the —, *Epil.* 10.
- Worship.** *v. t.* II.2.163.
- Worshipper.** *n.* true —s, V.1.35.
- Worth.** *n.* what man [*but*] thirds his own —, I.2.96; such a well-found worth as thy —, II.5.27. *See* **Hairworth**, V.4.51.
- Worth.** *adj.* appear — two hours' travel, *Prol.* 29; a mark — a god's view, I.4.21; more than Thebes is —, I.4.33; not — the name of villain, III.1.42; — so composed a man, V.3.86.
- Worth.** *v. t.* cry woe — me (= *be-fall*), III.6.249.
- Worthy.** *adj.* — uses of this place, II.2.69; II.2.76, 180, 203, 253; not — life, II.2.269; II.5.29; V.3.142; V.4.87. *Superl.* —iest, I.1.163; truest, —, III.6.165; the —, V.1.17.
- Worthily.** *adv.* II.5.1.
- Wot.** *v. t.* every innocent —s well, I.3.79.
- Wound.** *n.* IV.2.1.
- Wound.** *v. t.* V.3.58.
- Wrath.** *n.* the — of cruel Creon, I.1.40; the promise of his —, I.2.93.
- Wreath.** *n.* your wheaten — (=

- marriage garland*), I.1.64; [*Qo. wreake*] a — of bulrush, IV.1.84, — of roses, V.1.96; victor's —, V.4.79; wheaten —, *Stage dir.*, p. 88.
- Wren.** see a — hawk at a fly, V. 3.2.
- Wrinch.** *v. t.* —ing our holy begging in our eyes (= *rinsing*), I.1.156.
- Wrestle.** *v. i.* —ing strength in reason, I.4.45 [*Qo. wrastle*]; II. 3.74; II.3.76; II.5.3.
- Wrestling.** *n.* [*Qo. wrastling*], II. 3.68.
- Wretched.** *adj.* III.1.27; if we be found we're —, III.6.109.
- Wrinkled.** *adj.* through my tears, like — pebbles in a glassy stream, I.1.112.
- Write.** *i. v. t.* your grief is *written* in your cheek, I.1.109.  
*ii. v. i.* V.2.57.
- Writer.** *n.* the witless chaff of such a — (= *author*), *Prol.* 19.
- Wrong.** *n.* II.2.39; II.6.25; he does no —s, IV.2.134; you're in the — still, V.2.27.
- Wrong.** *adj.* II.5.61.
- Wrong.** *v. t.* suffered your knees to — themselves, I.1.56; V.1.107.
- Ye.** *pron.* (*properly nom., but often accus.*) will — go forward, Cousin, II.2.126; II.2.190, 274, 275; have with —, boys, II.3.27; pleased — [*Qo. thee. Seward conj. ye*], III.5.139; I could wish —, III.6.20; III.6.23; I thank —, III.6.90; y' had [= *ye*] best look to her, IV.1.122; I'll warrant —, IV.1.135; between —, V.1.10; betwixt —, V.1.16; if — make a noise, V.2.16; he turns — (= *for ye*) like a top, V. 2.50; how do —, V.2.70; to stay —, *Epil.* 9; any way content —, *Epil.* 13; meant — (= *for ye*), *Epil.* 14, 15. See **You**.
- Yea.** *adv.* III.1.7, 77; V.1.34, 40, 41, 122; V.4.2.
- Year.** *n.* III.1.19; III.5.146; IV. 1.130.
- Yellow.** *adj.* — locks, III.4.20; his head's —, IV.2.103.
- Yes.** *adv.* I.2.31; I.3.54; II.2.122, 128, 155, 162, 175, 184, 188, 198; II.3.62, 65; III.3.20, 23, 38; III.5.37; III.6.78, 299, 301; IV. 1.107, 109, 116, 119, 120, 126, 141; IV.2.57, 121, 151; V.2.19 [*Qo. yet*], 36, 45, 83, 86, 90, 93, III.
- Yet.** *adv.* (= *still*), *Prol.* 7, 12, 28; I.1.5, 103, 188; I.2.2, 84, 95, 100; I.3.3, 7, 41, 63, 97; I.4.27; II.1.3, 39; II.2.3, 55, 73, 143, 224, 254 (= *hereafter*); II.3.69; II.4.11, 16, 20; II.5.13; II.6.7, 21, 26; III.1.106; III.6.8, 36, 80, 191, 207, 268, 277, 283, 284, 308; IV.1.5, 60, 128; IV.2.1, 11, 30, 41, 62, 79, 89, 107, 119; V.1.196, 125, 144; V.3.41, 47, 58, 101, 106, 113, 123; V.4.44, 82, 87, 89, 114; *Epil.* 3, 11. See **Yes**, V.2.36.
- Yield.** *v. t.* I.3.8; III.6.207; —s compassion, IV.2.132.
- Yoke.** *n.* bear thy —, V.1.95.
- Yonder.** *adv.* II.1.47; III.4.5.
- You.** *pron.* **Your** (*adj.*), **Yours** (*pron.*), *Prol.* 25, 26, 27, 30; I.1. 26, 27, 30, 33, 34, 38, 54, 55, 57, 59, 60, 61, 62, 63, 64, 65, 67, 70, 72, 76, 95, 100, 102, 105, 109, 110, 111, 113, *et passim*.
- Young.** *adj.* II.2.34, 73 [*Qo. yong*]; II.2.251; — wench, II.4.12; — handsome man, II.4.14; II.5.18; bright — virgin, II.5.35; III.3. 40; the straight — boughs, III. 6.243; a tall — man, IV.1.82; — Palamon, IV.1.116, 117; all the — maids, IV.1.124; — handsome man, IV.2.3; — maids, IV.2.11; — prince, IV.2.14; — maid, IV.2.40; — sir her friend, IV.3.66; —'st, V.1.57; — lays of love (= *pertaining to youth*), V.1.89; — fair feere, V.1.116; V.4.10; a — handsome wench, *Epil.* 6.
- Youth.** *n.* sully our gloss of —, I.2.



5; the hardy — strive for the games, II.2.10; the graces of our —s (*abstract*) must wither, II.2.27; — and nature, II.2.40; the seas swallow their —, II.2.88; II.

2.241; unspotted —, IV.2.59; V.1.86.

**Zeal.** *n.* Love's provocations, —, a mistress' task, I.4.41.

## ABBREVIATIONS.

### *Editions collated marked \*.*

- \* Q. or Qo. Quarto, 1634. } Denoted by O. Edd. when  
 \* F. or F2. B. and F. 2nd Fol. 1679. } they agree.  
 \* T. or Ed. 1711. Tonson's ed. 7 vols. }  
 \* S. or Ed. 1750. (Se. =) Seward, (Sy. =) Sympson, (Th. =) Theobald's ed. 1750.  
 Heath. Heath's MS. notes, quoted by Dyce.  
 \* C. or Edd. 1778. Colman, or the Editors, (or ed., the edition) of 1778.  
 Mason. Comments by Monck Mason, 1798.  
 \* C. 1811. Reprint of C. 1778, 4 vols.  
 \* W. Weber's ed. 1812.  
 \* K. ('41). Knight's first ed. of the "Pictorial Shakspeare," 1838—41.  
 \* D. ('46). Dyce's first ed. of B. and F. 1843—6.  
 \* Ty. Tyrrell's Shakspeare. "Doubtful Plays," 1 vol. *s. a.*  
 Sid. Walker. Critical Examination of the Text of Shakspeare, 1860.  
 \* K. ('67). Knight's "Pictorial," second ed. 1867.  
 \* D. ('67). Dyce's Sh., second ed. 1867.  
 \* Sk. Skeat's ed. 1875.  
 \* D. ('76). Dyce's Sh., third ed. (vol. viii.), 1876.  
 D. (67, '76) shews that both have the same reading.  
 K. shews that Knight's readings are the same in both his edd.  
 D. shews that Dyce's readings are the same in all his edd.

☞ Since the publication of my text and notes, editions of the play by the Rev. H. N. Hudson and Mr. W. J. Rolfe have appeared in U.S. America. *My* finally-revised text (modern spelling) is in the "Leopold" Shakspeare. Where similar readings differ only in *immaterial* points of spelling or type, I have given this revised text spelling as in the oldest of the several editions; but in the Concordance I have modernised *all* spelling for simplicity of reference. The numbers of the lines in both Quarto Reprint and Revised Text are given when necessary. Thus, V. iii. 83/95 may be read: Act V., scene iii. line 83 in Revised text (metrical) line 95 in Reprint (literal).



## ADDENDA AND CORRIGENDA.

## PART I.: REVISED TEXT AND NOTES.

- Page 2, line 6. *For nights read night's*
- p. 4, l. 28. *For Now, for read Now for*
- p. 5, l. 56. The numbering of the lines of this scene from l. 54 is wrong.  
L. 56 should be 55, and so on to end. The numbering of references  
at foot and at the end should be corrected to correspond. See below  
73/104.
- p. 6, l. 70. *For devoure read devoure !*
- p. 7, l. 105. *For Heart deepe read Heart-deepe*
- p. 13, l. 33. *For toyle read toyle,*
- p. 13, l. 39. *For good read good,*
- p. 14, l. 62. *For Creon. read Creon ?*
- p. 14, l. 69. *men service. Perhaps we should read men' service*
- p. 15, l. 89. *For shake him ! read shake him.*
- p. 15, l. 104. *For warres read warre's*
- p. 15, l. 108. *For quarter carrier read quarter-carrier*
- p. 16, ll. 12, 16. The type of these marginal numbers defective.
- p. 17, l. 43. *For cunning read cunning,*
- p. 18, l. 54. *For Yes read Yes.*
- p. 19, l. 80. *For importments read importment's*
- p. 20, l. 13. *For heavens read Heaven's*
- p. 21, l. 41. *For Loves' read Love's*
- p. 21, l. 41. *Footnote. For Love's read Love's*
- p. 22, l. 9. *Act II. For Sir I read Sir, I*
- p. 27, l. 104. *For time read Time*
- p. 33, l. 262. *For life. read life ?*
- p. 35, l. 32. *For to morrow-night read tomorrow night*
- p. 37, l. 4. *Scene 4. Insert marginal number of line 4.*
- p. 39, l. 7. *gave me life. Perhaps we should read my, as Seaward conjectured.*
- p. 40, l. 35. *observe. Possibly deserve (as Footnote).*
- p. 41, l. 5. *For plane read plain ; note Qo. plane at foot. Compare H. 8,  
V.5.54.*

- p. 45, l. 63. *Read* a place, which well
- p. 45, l. 69. *For* tyde *read* tyde.
- p. 55, l. 77. *For* else *read* else.
- p. 56, l. 95. *Read* Stay, and edifie !
- p. 57, l. 131. *Footnote.* *beast-eating*] O. Edd.
- p. 57, l. 137. *For* forth ; and *read* forth, and
- p. 58, l. 13. *For* Therefore, *read* therefore,
- p. 58, l. 16. *For* So, love *read* So love
- p. 61, l. 87. *For* sword *read* sword :
- p. 72, l. 85. *For* fresh water-flowers *we might read* fresh-water flowers,  
*but the former seems better.*
- p. 73, l. 104. May you never more enjoy the light *should be numbered*  
104. *The numbering is therefore wrong from this to end of scene.*  
*So in notes at foot and at end. In the Concordance and Introduction*  
*the references are to the corrected numbering.*
- p. 79, l. 104. *For* Hard hayr'd, *read* Hard-hayr'd, and *for* thicke twind  
*read* thicke-twin'd.
- p. 81, l. 28. *For* shrowd *read* shrewd, and *note* *Qo.* shrowd *at foot.*
- p. 82, l. 48. *For* garden house. *read* garden-house.
- p. 82, l. 59. *For* state *perhaps read* 'state cf. II. i. 10 (*as footnote*).
- p. 86, l. 79. *Footnote.* *After* S. etc. To weep. *insert* (probably right).
- p. 91, l. 24. Pray bring her in *should be numbered line* 24, And let's . . .  
tell her line 25, and so on to end of scene. *Correct notes at foot and*  
*at end to correspond. See above 73/104.*
- p. 93, l. 84. *For* too corse *read* two coarse, and *note spelling* corse *at foot*  
*as Qo.* corse.
- p. 94, l. 110. *For* will we *read* will we.
- p. 97, l. 62. *For* migh *read* might
- p. 98, l. 88. *For* values shortness *I am now inclined to prefer the read-*  
*ing of Edd. 1778, value's shortness, as being simpler. Add this*  
*remark to note, p. 165, and make the change in the text and footnote,*  
*p. 98, retaining the comma after disparity*
- p. 104, l. 92. I've told my last hour. *Perhaps this is right, cf. II. ii. 42 ;*  
*perhaps we should read* toll'd, *from toll. As the Qo. told makes*  
*good sense I retain it. (Add this to Notes at end.)*
- p. 107, l. 29. *Add* Shirley, prol. *The Brothers* (two hours).
- p. 119, l. 139/149. *Add :* cf. Peele's *Battle of Alcazar*, quoted in Singer's  
Sh., vii. 422.
- p. 126, l. 88/98. *Omit the reference to* Cymbeline, and *insert :*—Professor  
E. Dowden has kindly pointed out to me the true meaning of this  
sentence : *small winds*, i. e. trifling causes, *shake* or excite, *him.*
- p. 127, l. 67/77. *At end of note insert :* Perhaps *oh* is only meant for the  
actor to *sigh*, and hence may have no metrical value. Cf. l. 56 :  
'she I sigh and spoke of.'
- p. 135, l. 179. *Read :* I love her ; *for* love her ;

- p. 139, l. 13. *chop on*] seems to mean happen on, rather than "exchange, make an exchange" [Skeat].
- p. 141, l. 29. *For Cf. I. i. 155 read Cf. I. i. 139/155.*
- p. 147, l. 58. *Cancel ?mettle. and insert:* See Halliwell, *Arch. Dict.* s.v. 'nettle.' (q. in Concordance).
- p. 148, l. 125. *Cancel note and read:* Gerrold offers up his 'penner' or "case for holding pens" (Weber), as a symbol of his literary efforts, dedicated to Theseus.
- p. 164, l. 66. *After attention to business add:* see Concordance s. v. Miller's Mare.

☞ The errors in the text (corrected above) are chiefly due to my having had to print it from the Quarto types, which needed about 8 alterations in each line to form the revised text. The Quarto reprint and F2 collation are, so far as I can test them, perfectly accurate.

H. L.

Baroda, India.  
Sept. 1883.











PR  
2888  
L6  
ser.2  
no. 15

New Shakspeare Society,  
London  
[Publications]

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

---

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

---



